2009

Cultic Allusions In The Suffering Servant Poem (Isaiah 52:13-53:12)

KyeSang Ha
Andrews University, plksha@syu.ac.kr

This research is a product of the graduate program in Religion, Old Testament Studies PhD at Andrews University. Find out more about the program.

Follow this and additional works at: http://digitalcommons.andrews.edu/dissertations

Part of the Biblical Studies Commons

Recommended Citation
http://digitalcommons.andrews.edu/dissertations/1637

This Dissertation is brought to you for free and open access by the Graduate Research at Digital Commons @ Andrews University. It has been accepted for inclusion in Dissertations by an authorized administrator of Digital Commons @ Andrews University. For more information, please contact repository@andrews.edu.
ABSTRACT

CULTIC ALLUSIONS IN THE SUFFERING SERVANT POEM

(ISAIAH 52:13-53:12)

by

KyeSang Ha

Adviser: Jacques B. Doukhan
ABSTRACT OF GRADUATE STUDENT RESEARCH

Dissertation

Andrews University
Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary

Title: CULTIC ALLUSIONS IN THE SUFFERING SERVANT POEM
(ISAIAH 52:13-53:12)

Name of researcher: KyeSang Ha

Name and degree of faculty adviser: Jacques B. Doukhan, D.H.L., Ph.D.

Date completed: August 2009

This study investigates the Hebrew cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant Poem (Isa 52:13-53:12) in order to discover the nature or meaning of the suffering of Yahweh's Servant. The survey of literature reveals that the background of the Suffering Servant Poem is to be found in the Hebrew cultus. Thus the nature or meaning of the Servant's suffering is determined by a penetrating as well as comprehensive study of the text, specifically from the Hebrew cultic perspective. However, there has never been any careful, comprehensive study of the cultic allusions in the Poem in connection with the Suffering Servant.

This lexical study on the cultic allusions uses lexicographical, text-critical, and contextual investigation, specifically for nine terms and two clauses. The nine terms are מִשְׁחַת, יַזֶּה, שֶׂה, אָשָׁם, יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ, and the three major sin terms חֵטְא, עָוֹן, and פֶּשַׁע, and the two clauses סָבַל עָוֹן and נָשָׂא חֵטְא. This study shows that they can be divided into two categories, cultic technical terms and terms that, although not technical cultic terms, can
be similarly used in cultic contexts. To the former belong מִשְׁחַת, יַזֶּה, שֶׂה, אָשָׁם, two major sin terms חֵטְא and עָוֹן, and the two clauses סָבַל עָוֹן and נָשָׂא חֵטְא, to the latter יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ, and a major sin term פֶּשַׁע.

Not all of the terms and clauses in the lexical study will prove to be equally convincing with respect to the main point at issue here. Their cumulative weight, however, must be impressive, especially when all these terms and clauses appear in a single pericope of the Suffering Servant Poem.

Although the sanctuary itself is not explicitly mentioned in the Poem, the Servant of Yahweh is portrayed as a cultic sacrificial animal (שֶׂה), a cultic expiatory offering (אָשָׁם), and a cultic priest performing significant cultic activities (יַזֶּה, יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ), to all of which the sin-bearing clauses (סָבַל עָוֹן/נָשָׂא חֵטְא) are closely related.

This lexical study clearly shows: (1) the Hebrew sacrificial cult is the background of the Suffering Servant Poem; (2) the death of the Servant is clearly mentioned, and that as a violent death; and (3) his suffering and death is vicarious and expiatory.

Cultic allusions occur only in the fourth Servant Poem, that is, the Suffering Servant Poem, but not in the other Servant Poems. Although the motif of suffering also appears in the second and third Servant Poems, the suffering there may be considered as part of the mission of the Servant not only as "the covenant of the people" but also as "the light to the nations." The Suffering Servant Poem clarifies that the suffering is the very means of the mission of the Servant in world history, which is vividly and intensely portrayed by the cultic allusions, and which is subtly but profoundly described by the term מִשְׁפָּט ("justice") that ironically keeps running throughout the Servant Poems.

This cultic interpretation of the Suffering Servant Poem is supported by the literary analysis of Isaiah 40-55 and especially by the Poem itself, which has a cultic-oriented chiastic structure. It is thus reasonable to conclude that the author of the Suffering Servant Poem clearly had Hebrew cultic intentions in mind from which he derived the meanings and significance of the Servant's suffering and death and intended that his readers or hearers employ the vicarious expiatory system of the Hebrew cult as
their primary frame of reference. However, we have to recognize that those cultic allusions only provide the means to facilitate a new idea that far transcends all that are cultically alluded to in the great Poem of Yahweh's Suffering Servant. In the Suffering Servant, all the Hebrew cultic images reach their complete transformation and fulfillment in the idea of vicarious expiatory suffering and death.
CULTIC ALLUSIONS IN THE SUFFERING SERVANT POEM

(ISAIAH 52:13-53:12)

A Dissertation
Presented in Partial Fulfillment
of the Requirements for the Degree
Doctor of Philosophy

by
KyeSang Ha
August 2009
© Copyright by KyeSang Ha 2009
All Rights Reserved
CULTIC ALLUSIONS IN THE SUFFERING SERVANT POEM

(ISAIAH 52:13-53:12)

A dissertation
presented in partial fulfillment
of the requirements for the degree
Doctor of Philosophy

by

KyeSang Ha

APPROVAL BY THE COMMITTEE:

Faculty Adviser
Jacques B. Doukhan
Professor of Hebrew and Old Testament Exegesis
Richard M. Davidson
J. N. Andrews Professor of Old Testament Interpretation
Roy E. Gane
Professor of Hebrew Bible and Ancient Near Eastern Languages
Richard Choi
Associate Professor of New Testament

Walter C. Kaiser
Colman M. Mockler Emeritus Distinguished Professor of Old Testament President Emeritus
Gordon-Conwell Theological Seminary

Director, Ph.D./Th.D. Programs
Rudolf Maier

Dean, SDA Theological Seminary
Denis Fortin

18 Nov. 2009
Date approved
In memoriam

my parents, Mr. Ha, Jung Won

and Mrs. Moon, Jeom Soon,

and my parents-in-law, Mr. Ahn, Il Hoon

and Mrs. Kim, Ock Hee
TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS ................................................. vi

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS ................................................... xiii

Chapter

I. INTRODUCTION .................................................. 1
   Background to the Problem ........................................ 1
   Problem and Justification for the Study ......................... 3
   Definitions ................................................................ 3
   Purpose of the Research ........................................... 4
   Delimitations of the Study ......................................... 5
   Methodology ......................................................... 5

II. SURVEY OF LITERATURE ........................................ 7
   Introduction ......................................................... 7
   The Cultic Background of the Suffering Servant Poem .......... 10
      Tammuz and the Suffering Servant ............................. 10
      Baal and the Suffering Servant ................................. 15
      Marduk and the Suffering Servant ............................... 19
      Royal Substitute and the Suffering Servant .................. 26
   The Meaning of the Sufferings of the Servant .................. 29
      The Degree of the Servant's Sufferings: Death? ............. 29
      The Nature of the Servant's Sufferings: Vicariousness? .... 32
   Summary .......................................................... 40

III. LEXICAL ANALYSIS ............................................ 44
   Introduction ......................................................... 44
   Cultic Terminology .................................................. 45
      מִשְׁחַת ......................................................... 45
      יַזֶּה .......................................................... 59
      שֶׂה ........................................................... 87
      אָשָׁם ......................................................... 93
      יַצְדִּיק ......................................................... 119
      יַפְגִּיע ......................................................... 142
   Sin Terms .......................................................... 152
      חֵטְא ......................................................... 154
      עָוֹן ......................................................... 165
      פֶּשַׁע ......................................................... 170
# LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AA</td>
<td>Alttestamentliche Abhandlungen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AB</td>
<td>Anchor Bible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ABD</td>
<td>Anchor Bible Dictionary. Edited by D. N. Freedman et al. 6 vols. New York, 1992</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AfO</td>
<td>Archiv für Orientforschung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AIPHOS</td>
<td>Annuaire de l'institut de philologie et l'histoire orientales et slaves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AnBib</td>
<td>Analecta Biblica</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ANETS</td>
<td>Ancient Near Eastern Texts and Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AnOr</td>
<td>Analecta Orientalia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AOAT</td>
<td>Alter Orient und Altes Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AOS</td>
<td>American Oriental Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ASV</td>
<td>American Standard Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ASTI</td>
<td>Annual of the Swedish Theological Institute</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AUMSR</td>
<td>Andrews University Monographs: Studies in Religion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AUSDDS</td>
<td>Andrews University Seminary Doctoral Dissertation Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AUSS</td>
<td>Andrews University Seminary Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BASOR</td>
<td>Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BETL</td>
<td>Bibliotheca Ephemeridum Theologicarum Lovaniensium</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Title</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BETS</td>
<td>Bulletin of the Evangelical Theological Society</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BHS</td>
<td>Biblia hebraica stuttgartensia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bib</td>
<td>Biblica</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BIS</td>
<td>Biblical Interpretation Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BJRL</td>
<td>Bulletin of the John Rylands Library</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BJS</td>
<td>Brown Judaic Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BO</td>
<td>Bibliotheca orientalis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BR</td>
<td>Biblical Research</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BSC</td>
<td>Bible Student's Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BSNELC</td>
<td>Bar-Ilan Studies in Near Eastern Languages and Culture</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BST</td>
<td>The Bible Speaks Today Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BWANT</td>
<td>Beiträge zur Wissenschaft vom Alten und Neuen Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BZ</td>
<td>Biblische Zeitschrift</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BZAW</td>
<td>Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAD</td>
<td>The Assyrian Dictionary of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago. Edited by Ignace I. Gelb et al. Chicago, 1964-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBOTS</td>
<td>Coniectanea Biblica Old Testament Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBQ</td>
<td>Catholic Biblical Quarterly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CC</td>
<td>Continental Commentaries</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CDA</td>
<td>A Concise Dictionary of Akkadian. Edited by J. Black et al.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHALOT</td>
<td>W. L. Holladay. A Concise Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CV</td>
<td>Communio Viatorum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DARCOM</td>
<td>Daniel and Revelation Committee Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DCH</td>
<td>The Dictionary of Classical Hebrew. Edited by D.J.A. Clines. Sheffield, 1993-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DSB</td>
<td>Daily Study Bible Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DunRev</td>
<td>Dunwoodie Review</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Full Title</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EKL</td>
<td>Evangelisches Kirchenlexikon: Kirchlich-theologisches Handwörterbuch. Edited by H. Brunotte and O. Weber</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EncJud</td>
<td>Encyclopaedia Judaica</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EncRel</td>
<td>Encyclopedia of Religion. Edited by M. Eliade</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ErFor</td>
<td>Erträge der Forschung</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EvQ</td>
<td>Evangelical Quarterly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ETL</td>
<td>Ephemerides Theologicae Lovanienses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EvT</td>
<td>Evangelische Theologie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ExpTim</td>
<td>Expository Times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FRLANT</td>
<td>Forschungen zur Religion und Literatur des Alten und Neuen Testaments</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAR</td>
<td>Hebrew Annual Review</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAT</td>
<td>Handkommentar zum Alten Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HBM</td>
<td>Hebrew Bible Monographs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HBT</td>
<td>Horizons in Biblical Theology: An International Dialogue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCHC</td>
<td>Hermeneia: A Critical Historical Commentary on the Bible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCOT</td>
<td>Historical Commentary on the Old Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HibJ</td>
<td>Hibbert Journal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HR</td>
<td>History of Religions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HRI</td>
<td>History of the Religion of Israel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSAT</td>
<td>Die heilige Schrift des Alten Testaments</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HTR</td>
<td>Harvard Theological Review</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HUCA</td>
<td>Hebrew Union College Annual</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Full Title</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IBC</td>
<td>Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Teaching and Preaching</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IBS</td>
<td>Irish Biblical Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ICC</td>
<td>International Critical Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IDB</td>
<td>Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible. Edited by G. A. Buttrick</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IDBSup</td>
<td>Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible: Supplementary Volume. Edited by K. Crim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IJT</td>
<td>Indian Journal of Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Int</td>
<td>Interpretation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IRT</td>
<td>Issues in Religion and Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ISBE</td>
<td>International Standard Bible Encyclopedia. Edited by G. Bromiley</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ISBL</td>
<td>Indiana Studies in Biblical Literature</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ITC</td>
<td>International Theological Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAOS</td>
<td>Journal of the American Oriental Society</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JATS</td>
<td>Journal of the Adventist Theological Society</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JBL</td>
<td>Journal of Biblical Literature</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JETS</td>
<td>Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JJS</td>
<td>Journal of Jewish Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JNES</td>
<td>Journal of Near Eastern Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JNWSL</td>
<td>Journal of Northwest Semitic Languages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JPS</td>
<td>Jewish Publication Society OT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JPSTC</td>
<td>Jewish Publication Society Torah Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JQR</td>
<td>Jewish Quarterly Review</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JSOT</td>
<td>Journal for the Study of the Old Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JSOTSup</td>
<td>Journal for the Study of the Old Testament: Supplement Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JSQ</td>
<td>Jewish Studies Quarterly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JSS</td>
<td>Journal of Semitic Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JTS</td>
<td>Journal of Theological Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KJV</td>
<td>King James Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LBS</td>
<td>Library of Biblical Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSS</td>
<td>Leipziger semitistische Studien</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXX</td>
<td>Septuagint</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MIO</td>
<td>Mitteilungen des Instituts für Orientforschung der deutschen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MT</td>
<td>Masoretic Text</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NASB</td>
<td>New American Standard Bible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NCBC</td>
<td>New Century Bible Commentaries</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NIB</td>
<td>New Interpreter's Bible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NICOT</td>
<td>New International Commentary of the Old Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NIDOTTE</td>
<td>New International Dictionary of Old Testament Theology and Exegesis. Edited by W. A. VanGemeren</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NIV</td>
<td>New International Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NIVAC</td>
<td>NIV Application Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NJB</td>
<td>New Jerusalem Bible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NKJV</td>
<td>New King James Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NRSV</td>
<td>New Revised Standard Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OBO</td>
<td>Orbis Biblicus et Orientalis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OBS</td>
<td>Oxford Bible Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OBT</td>
<td>Overtures to Biblical Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Or</td>
<td>Orientalia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OT</td>
<td>Old Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OTL</td>
<td>Old Testament Library</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OTS</td>
<td>Old Testament Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OTM</td>
<td>Oxford Theological Monographs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OTS</td>
<td>Oudtestamentische Studiën</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PTMS</td>
<td>Pittsburgh Theological Monograph Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RA</td>
<td>Revue d'assyriologie et d'archéologie orientale</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RB</td>
<td>Revue biblique</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RevExp</td>
<td>Review and Expositor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RGG</td>
<td>Die Religion in Geschichte und Gegenwart. Edited by K. Galling. 7 vols. 3d ed. Tübingen, 1957-1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RSR</td>
<td>Recherches de science religieuse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RSV</td>
<td>Revised Standard Version</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RTP</td>
<td>Revue de théologie et de philosophie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RTR</td>
<td>Reformed Theological Review</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBL</td>
<td>Studies in Biblical Literature</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBLDS</td>
<td>Society of Biblical Literature Dissertation Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBLSCSS</td>
<td>Society of Biblical Literature Septuagint and Cognate Studies Series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBLSS</td>
<td>Society of Biblical Literature Semeia Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SB-T</td>
<td>Studien zu den Boğazköy-Texten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBT</td>
<td>Studes in Biblical Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBT</td>
<td>Studia Biblica et Theologica</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SEÅ</td>
<td>Svensk Exegetisk Årsbok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SHR</td>
<td>Studies in the History of Religions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SJLA</td>
<td>Studies in Judaism in Late Antiquity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SJOT</td>
<td>Scandinavian Journal of the Old Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SOTBT</td>
<td>Studies in Old Testament Biblical Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SWJT</td>
<td>Southwestern Journal of Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SJT</td>
<td>Scottish Journal of Theology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SM</td>
<td>Scripta Minora</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SS</td>
<td>Slovak Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SSN</td>
<td>Studia Semitica Neerlandica</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TB</td>
<td>Theologische Bücherei</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TB</td>
<td>Tyndale Bulletin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TDNT</td>
<td><em>Theological Dictionary of the New Testament</em>. Edited by G. Kittel and G. Friedrich</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TGUOS</td>
<td>Transactions, Glasgow University Oriental Society</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TJ</td>
<td>Trinity Journal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TLOT</td>
<td><em>Theological Lexicon of the Old Testament</em>. Edited by E. Jenni and C. Westermann</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TTL</td>
<td>Theological Translation Library</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TTZ</td>
<td><em>Trierer theologische Zeitschrift</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TWOT</td>
<td><em>Theological Wordbook of the Old Testament</em>. Edited by R. L. Harris, G. L. Archer, and Bruce K. Waltke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TZ</td>
<td><em>Theolgische Zeitschrift</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UBL</td>
<td>Ugaritisch-Biblische Literatur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UCPNES</td>
<td>University of California Publications: Near Eastern Studies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UF</td>
<td><em>Ugarit-Forschungen</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VOT</td>
<td>F. I. Andersen and A. D. Forbes. <em>The Vocabulary of the Old Testament</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VT</td>
<td><em>Vetus Testamentum</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VTSup</td>
<td>Supplements to <em>Vetus Testamentum</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WBC</td>
<td>Word Biblical Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WTJ</td>
<td><em>Westminster Theological Journal</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WZKM</td>
<td><em>Wiener Zeitschrift für die Kunde des Morgenlandes</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YLT</td>
<td>Young's Literal Translation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZA</td>
<td><em>Zeitschrift für Assyriologie</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZAW</td>
<td><em>Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZB</td>
<td>Zürcher Bibelkommentare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZDMG</td>
<td><em>Zeitschrift der deutschen morgenländischen Gesellschaft</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZRGG</td>
<td><em>Zeitschrift für Religions- und Geistesgeschichte</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

As I recall the past, the first person to whom I cannot but extend my sincere thanks from deep in my heart is my elementary school teacher, the late Mr. Shin, Dong Sik. As my 5th- and 6th-grade teacher in Hangdo Elementary School in Busan, Korea, he saw great potential in me, a poor and hopeless boy at that time, and introduced me to the joy of learning, transformed me into a good pupil in a very short time, and thus gave me the future and vision of my career as a teacher.

The next people to whom I am deeply thankful are Mrs. Cho, Hyun Ho, who as a deaconess in Seoul Hoegi-dong Seventh-day Adventist Church introduced Jesus to me and has been praying for me and my family; the late Mr. Sohn, Young Woon, who as a church friend has shown me the ideal portrait of a kneeling Christian and whose untimely death is a great loss to me and this world; Elder Jang, Doh Kyoung, who first gave my wife a position in his dental lab, who stood by me and my wife during the most enlightening but the most difficult time in Berrien Springs, Michigan, and who remains my faithful friend; and Mr. Yoon, Bu Chul, who kindly helped my family to change their status and to settle in the United States.

The administrators to whom I wish to express my thanks are Elder Han, Sang Woo, the 18th president of the Korean Union Conference, and the late Dr. Shin, Kei Hoon, the 9th president of Sahmyook University and the 19th president of the Korean Union Conference, who called me to teach at Sahmyook University; Dr. Nam, Daeguk, a mentor of mine as well as the 10th president of Sahmyook University, and Dr. Park, Dong Seung, the last president of Sahmyook College, who granted me a sabbatical leave for study; Dr. Suh, Kwang Soo, the 11th president of Sahmyook University, Elder Hong, Myung Kwan,
the 20th president of the Korean Union Conference, and its executive committee members, who gave me permission to extend my leave for two more years.

My special thanks go to my respected teacher Dr. Jacques B. Doukhan who supervised my dissertation. He taught me beginner's and intermediate Biblical Hebrew in a unique and interesting way in his classes. As a Hebrew scholar he has a special eye for the Hebrew text of the Old Testament, and thus through his advanced Old Testament exegesis class he opened my eyes to it, especially on its literary aspect. Moreover, he has never compromised in the matter of high-quality scholarship, especially in regard to my dissertation. I would also like to express my sincere thanks to the other two members of my dissertation committee, Dr. Roy E. Gane and Dr. Richard M. Davidson. As a specialist in biblical and ancient Near Eastern ritual, Dr. Gane has upgraded my dissertation. He made many significant comments on several occasions and contributed much to the methodology and content of my dissertation. As a Christian teacher and scholar, Dr. Davidson taught me a lot in his classes of the methodology of Biblical theology, the doctrine of the sanctuary, and Hebrew hymnic and wisdom literature and helped me through his constructive advice to study more without feeling much pressure.

I wish to extend my thanks to my friend and teacher, Dr. P. Richard Choi, for teaching me how to do theology through his famous classes on the theology of the Pauline Epistles and New Testament theology and ethics and then providing valuable critiques to my dissertation as the fourth reader. I would like to thank Dr. Walter C. Kaiser, Jr., for being the external examiner of my dissertation and for his memorable critiques and compliments to it. It was a great privilege and honor for me to have the distinguished scholar and prolific writer, Dr. Kaiser, as the external examiner. About a month ago from my defense date, I learned that 15 books of his more than 30 books on the Old Testament have been translated into the Korean language. So on behalf of my Korean people, I would like to say "Thank you so very much!" for this contribution to the Korean
theological and believing communities.

I would also like to take this opportunity to express my deep appreciation for the other professors and lecturers at Andrews University's Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary. The late Dr. Gerhard F. Hasel taught me meticulous scholarship through his classes of principles of hermeneutics, Old Testament theology, and Old Testament prophets, and his untimely, tragic death is a tremendous loss to me and this world. Dr. Randall W. Younker taught me the archaeology of Palestine and Near Eastern archaeology; Dr. David Merling, Ancient Near Eastern history; and Dr. J. Bjørnar Storfjell, Old Testament history. Dr. Jon Paulien taught me New Testament eschatology, especially Pauline eschatology. Dr. Johann Erbes taught me Biblical Aramaic, Septuagint Greek, Sahidic Coptic, and classical Ethiopian, and then introduced me to the discipline of textual criticism of the Hebrew Bible, which I found to be of great utility throughout my dissertation. Dr. Leona G. Running as a Semitic linguist taught me advanced Biblical Hebrew, Syriac, and Egyptian, and impressed me with her humble attitude shown on the occasion of her recognizing my contribution to her language class discussions and recording it in her lecture notes, as well as giving me a copy of her Akkadian grammar lecture notes. Dr. Gordon E. Christo, Spicer Memorial College professor in India, and Dr. Gudmundur Olafsson, Newbold College professor in England, taught me Psalms and wisdom literature and the theology of the Pentateuch, respectively. Dr. Wolfgang Kunze, professor of the modern languages department at Andrew University, taught me theological German.

My very warm and cordial thanks are due to the PhD/ThD program secretary, Mrs. Mabel Bowen, and the Old Testament department secretary, Mrs. Dorothy Show, and the dissertation secretary, Mrs. Bonnie Proctor, for their unfailing kindness and timely help.

I owe my sincere thanks to the staff of the James White Library at Andrews University for the wonderful study environment and their quick supply of many books and
journal articles essential to my research.

To my colleagues of Sahmyook University, the pastors and members of the Andrews Korean Church and Sahmyook University Church, and the members of the Central Illinois Korean Church, I am greatly indebted for their sincere prayers and special support, especially during physical challenges as well as spiritual crises.

I am immensely grateful to my family, my wife Kisun, my son Euntaik, and my daughter Jihye, for their standing by me, supporting me, and suffering with me for a very long time—almost two decades of my scholarly journey in the States.

There are still many others to whom I am much indebted, but because of time and space limitations, I cannot mention them by name. I pray that God may bless and reward each of them as well as each of those mentioned above by name in a very special way.

Above all, I give thanks, praise, and all the honor and glory to God who has been with me, supporting, comforting, inspiring, healing me, and thus ultimately confirming His wonderful promise in Rom 8:28:

"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose" (KJV) = “우리가 알거니와 하나님을 사랑하는 자 곧 그 뜻대로 부르심을 입은 자들에게는 모든 것이 합력하여 선을 이루느냐” (개역한글판 [Korean Revised Version]).
CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

Background to the Problem

In the first edition of his epoch-making commentary on the book of Isaiah, Bernhard Duhm isolated four passages, namely, (1) 42:1-4, (2) 49:1-6, (3) 50:4-9, and (4) 52:13-53:12, from their literary context. He designated them as the "Songs of the Servant of the LORD" (Ebed-Jahwe-Lieder) and brought them together as a series of connected songs. Since that time, it has been almost an axiom to consider these passages as independent songs, even though there has been some disagreement as to the precise delimitation of the four songs, and even as to their number.


2However, the designation 'song(s)' "is not necessarily appropriate," as is mentioned by R. N. Whybray, Thanksgiving for a Liberated Prophet: An Interpretation of Isaiah Chapter 53, ed. David J. A. Clines, Philip R. Davies, and David M. Gunn, JSOTSup 4 (Sheffield: University of Sheffield, 1978), 143, n. 6. Thus, the term "poem(s)" will be primarily used in this research. See John L. McKenzie, Second Isaiah: Introduction, Translation, and Notes, AB 20 (Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Co., 1968), 36, 103, 115, 129. James M. Ward argued: "These four poems are not really songs; they are better referred to as the servant poems" ("The Servant Songs in Isaiah," RevExp 65 [1968]: 435). Geoffrey W. Grogan mentioned: "In fact . . . the very designation of these passages as a series of 'songs' (which they almost certainly were not) is particularly unhelpful at this point" ("Isaiah," The Expositor's Bible Commentary [Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1986], 6:299).

As John L. McKenzie regarded Isa 52:13-53:12, the so-called Suffering Servant Song, as "the major crux interpretum of the Old Testament," it presents many problems: textual, linguistic, and interpretational. Earlier generations of scholars have proposed many solutions to these problems, but little consensus has been attained.

The question of the identity of the Suffering Servant is clearly the most important issue of all. This query is at least as old as the first century, when the Ethiopian eunuch asked the evangelist Philip, "Of whom does the prophet say this? Of himself, or of someone else?" (Acts 8:34). Many theories have been advanced so that one would hardly expect new hypotheses. In his comprehensive survey of the problems of the Servant Songs, Christopher R. North has classified into four categories the theories about the identity of the Suffering Servant: (1) the historical-individual

---

McKenzie, A Theology of the Old Testament (Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Co., 1974), 297; cf. idem, Second Isaiah, xxxviii. Antti Laato remarked: "This servant passage in Isa 40-55 is probably the most hermeneutically problematic passage in the Old Testament and there is no consensus among scholars as to how its content should be interpreted" (The Servant of YHWH and Cyrus: A Reinterpretation of the Exilic Messianic Programme in Isaiah 40-55, ed. Tryggve N. D. Mettinger and Stig I. L. Norin, CBOTS 44 [Stockholm: Almqvist & Wiksell International, 1992], 138). Even very recently Brevard S. Childs also mentioned: "This passage is probably the most contested chapter in the Old Testament. The problems of interpretation are many and complex. Even to engage the textual problems is a formidable challenge in itself. The decisions in establishing a critically responsible reading of the Hebrew text can greatly influence the interpretation" (Isaiah, OTL [Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 2001], 410).

---

theories, (2) the mythological theory, (3) the collective theory, and (4) the messianic theory.\(^6\)

Furthermore, questions as to the suffering itself of the Servant, i.e., its kind, degree, and nature or meaning, are still being raised.

**Problem and Justification for the Study**

Cultic allusions, which clearly reflect the Hebrew sacrificial system, are beyond question a salient feature in the linguistic and phraseological data in the Suffering Servant Poem. There has never been, however, any careful comprehensive study of them in connection with the Suffering Servant. A study of the cultic allusions might well provide a key to help us clarify his suffering itself.

**Definitions**

In this study the term "cult" is used broadly, referring to practices related to the ritual system by which people, individually and collectively, interacted with their God or gods.\(^7\) When it comes to the Hebrew sacrificial system, these practices appear especially in the sanctuary, sacrifices, and other priestly activities. Thus, "cultic sins" can be defined as sins of violating regulations of the Hebrew cult, and a

\(^6\)North, 192-219. Among the historical-individual theories are the historico-messianic theory, the autobiographical theory, and the theory that the Servant is a known historical individual.

\(^7\)Cf. Ángel Manuel Rodríguez, "Substitution in the Hebrew Cultus and in Cultic-related Texts" (Th.D. dissertation, Andrews University, Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1979), 4-5; Baruch A. Levine, "Cult," *EncJud* (2007), 5:1155. For R.W.L. Moberly's definitions, see his work *At the Mountain of God: Story and Theology in Exodus 32-34*, ed. David J. A. Clines, Philip R. Davies, and David M. Gunn, JSOTSup 22 (Sheffield: JSOT, 1983), 124. Moberly's definitions, however, seem to be somewhat vague and too broad.

There are many similarities between Hebrew and ancient Near Eastern cults. However, one of the profound differences is that the former is not magical but essentially prophetic, whereas the latter is not prophetic but essentially magical. For the prophetic character of the Hebrew cult, especially see Walter C. Kaiser, Jr., *The Messiah in the Old Testament*, SOTBT (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1995), 34.
"cultic context" as "a context involving cultic performance or regulations." As for "cultic technical terms," it is to be noted that "technical terms have more specific meanings within certain contexts than use of the same words would have in non-technical usages of the same words in other contexts."

Purpose of the Research

The purpose of this research is to investigate cultic allusions in Isa 52:13-53:12 in order to discover the nature or meaning of the suffering of Yahweh's Servant. Thus the following questions will be considered:

1. What are cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant Poem? In what way are they cultic?

2. In light of the cultic allusions of the Poem, what can be said about the suffering of the Servant?

3. What are the place and function of the cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant Poem vis-à-vis the other Servant Poems?

4. What is the role and significance of the Suffering Servant in the light of the cultic allusions of the Poem, in the theological perspective of the book of Isaiah in particular and of the OT in general?

---

8 Roy E. Gane, personal communication, November 5, 2007, Berrien Springs, MI. Gane added: "The word 'involving' broadens it to include various kind of connections and the inclusion of 'regulations' broadens to include rules of the cult that are not necessarily rules of actually performing rituals" (ibid.).

9 Ibid. For example, while the term שָׁחַט refers to "slaughter" in general, in the cultic setting it likely refers more particularly to "slit the throat," which is just one way to kill an animal, but which was the way required for the cult in the context of sacrifice. See Norman H. Snaith, "The Verbs zābaḥ and šāḥat," VT 25 (1975): 242-46, esp. 244; Jacob Milgrom, "Profane Slaughter and a Formulaic Key to the Composition of Deuteronomy," HUCA 47 (1976): 14-15, 17; idem, Leviticus 1-16: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary, AB, vol. 3 (New York: Doubleday, 1991), 154-55.
Delimitations of the Study

The Masoretic Text was accepted in its present form without attempting to identify its sources or to trace its development. This research was done, therefore, on the basis of the final form of the MT, even though I include here some discussions on relevant textual-critical issues. Furthermore, exegesis, if needed, was carried out with a view to investigating the cultic allusions of the Suffering Servant pericope, to the extent that it clarifies them.

Methodology

This study involves exegetical methodologies for the purpose of investigating the cultic allusions of the Suffering Servant text.

First, I carry out the lexical analysis of the text. Cultic allusions are selected from the text and analyzed, specifically against the background of the Hebrew sacrificial system. The cultic allusions of the text are found in the technical words and expressions which are either terminologically or ideologically connected with the Hebrew cultic institution, especially in the book of Leviticus. The criteria employed in the selection of the cultic allusions are: (1) their terminological presence in the Hebrew cultic legislation, (2) their ideological connections with it, and (3) their intertextual connections with Hebrew cultic texts through similar associations of terms.10 The investigation of the cultic allusions, therefore, primarily begins with a lexicographical and contextual study of those words and expressions. Besides, during the process I include some discussions on relevant textual-critical issues.

Second, I engage in the literary analysis of the Suffering Servant Poem as part of

---

the exegetical procedure. I examine the literary aspects of the Suffering Servant Poem in the context of Isa 40-55 in general and of the Servant Poems in particular. I also investigate other literary aspects of the Poem itself, namely its literary structure, genre, and devices in order to find some hints to the interpretation of its cultic allusions.

Finally, I summarize the investigation and draw conclusions.
CHAPTER II

SURVEY OF LITERATURE

Introduction

It is not too much to say that throughout the long history of the interpretation of the Suffering Servant Poem the main focus largely has been on the identity of the Suffering Servant. Otto Eissfeldt observed that recent treatment of the Servant of Yahweh problem was characterized by the tendency for the boundaries between the different categories of interpretation on the Servant's identity "to be more and more obscured and for them to merge increasingly in one another." He mentioned that "this is primarily true of the various forms of individualistic interpretation," but that "it may also be said further that the division between the individual and collective interpretations has become very thin." He pointed out, furthermore, that "there are already many crossings of the boundary between the two types [of interpretation]."

---

1See North, 1; Claus Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, OTL (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster, 1969), 93. For the categories of theory about the identity of the Servant, see North, 192-219.


3Ibid., 335.


5Eissfeldt, 335-36; cf. Ernst Sellin and Georg Fohrer, Introduction to the Old Testament, 10th ed., trans. David E. Green (Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1968), 379-80. The many crossings were classified into another category, which is called the "composite interpretation" (cf. North, 111-12), "fluid interpretation" (cf. Rowley, 35, 39-44, 51-60), "synthetic interpretation" (cf. Lindhagen, "Important Hypotheses Reconsidered," 281), or
At the height of such mergences, Hans Walter Wolff went so far as to say that the ancient text defies every attempt to define precisely the identity of the Suffering Servant. Claus Westermann thus made a point of expressing his disagreement with most other exegetes who had allowed the question about the identity of the Servant of Yahweh to control their exegesis. Then he contended, "The questions which should control exegesis are: 'What do the texts make known about what transpires, or is to transpire, between God, the servant, and those to whom his task pertains?'

Gerhard von Rad already noticed that the only way to understand the Suffering Servant Poem completely is by understanding the nature of the office allotted to the Suffering Servant. On the one hand, therefore, Eissfeldt observed that the main point in the discussion of the Servant of

"mediating, fluid, or integral interpretation" (cf. Sellin and Fohrer, 379-80). Mentioning that the fluid or integral interpretation seeks to combine the individual and collective interpretations, Sellin and Fohrer asserted that this raises the question whether such complex ideas may be considered probable. To be noted in this connection is Walther Zimmerli's contention in his "παῦς θεοῦ. A. The יהוה עֶבֶד in the OT," *TDNT*, 5:667, n. 68, that "the claim that we ought not to be confronted with exclusive alternatives... seems to me to serve only to confuse the whole issue" (see also Zimmerli, "I. The יהוה עֶבֶד in the Old Testament," in Zimmerli and J. Jeremias, *The Servant of God*, SBT 20 [Naperville, IL: A. R. Allenson, 1957], 25, n. 68).

---


W.M.W. Roth mentioned a phenomenon of intentional and perpetual anonymity in regard to the identity of the Suffering Servant ("The Anonymity of the Suffering Servant," *JBL* 83 [1964]: 171-79). Westermann also contended: "The cryptic, veiled language used is deliberate. This is true of every one of the servant songs alike. From the very outset there must be no idea that exegesis can clear up all their problems. The veiled manner of speaking is intentional, and to our knowledge much in them was meant to remain hidden even from their original hearers" (93). David J.A. Clines, in his work, asserted that the force of the Suffering Servant Poem lies in its enigmas and ambiguities (*I, He, We, and They: A Literary Approach to Isaiah 53*, JSOTSUp 1, ed. David J.A. Clines, Philip R. Davies, and David M. Gunn [Sheffield: JSOT, 1976], 25). Such a position seems to result from the lack of scholarly consensus on the interpretation of the Poem (cf. Rodriguez, 276).

7 Westermann, 93.

8 Ibid.

Yahweh had moved from the question as to who the Servant is, to the problem of what he signifies. On the other, Georg Fohrer, in a brief survey of the history of the interpretation of the Servant of Yahweh, indicated that "recent study is typified by a penetrating search for the roots of the conception associated with the Servant of Yahweh."  

The literature on the Suffering Servant of Yahweh is so immense, because of Bible scholars' unabated interest in it down through the ages, that it is almost impossible to survey it all. Hence, the survey of literature in this study is restricted to the recent tendencies concerning the background of the Suffering Servant Poem and the meaning of the Servant's sufferings. There has been a general consensus that the Suffering Servant Poem is cultic. However, there is no consensus on two issues: (1) its background, and

---

10 Eissfeldt, 336. The movement is particularly clear in Johannes Lindblom, *The Servant Songs in Deutero-Isaiah: A New Attempt to Solve an Old Problem* (Lund: C.W.K. Gleerup, 1951). In his view, the Servant of Yahweh incorporates an idea; namely, that of Israel's universal mission. The question as to who the Servant is appears to him, therefore, as meaningless as to ask who is indicated by the prodigal son in Luke 15:11-32. See also Roth. "The Anonymity of the Suffering Servant," 171-79. Roth saw the Suffering Servant as a type of the true prophetic office, but not as a person. In that case, he contended that the Servant is anonymous by necessity, and that he is "the prophet of Yahweh, unknown by name but known by his function: to stand between man and God in service and in suffering" (ibid., 179). However, Leland E. Wilshire wanted to re-open the question of the identity of the Servant of the Lord, particularly by adducing parallels from the ancient Near Eastern literature in which the imagery of the fall of cultic cities is similar to that of the Suffering Servant in Deutero-Isaiah. He alleged that the Servant is a metaphor symbolizing the cultic center of Zion-Jerusalem, "the conquered and humiliated city," which "is now, through a new act of God, being restored to life again." He finally concluded that, because of the identification of Zion-Jerusalem with the nation Israel, the individualistic and the corporate interpretations merge. See Leland E. Wilshire, "The Servant-City: A New Interpretation of the 'Servant of the Lord' in the Servant Songs of Deutero-Isaiah," *JBL* 94 (1975): 356-67, specifically 357-58, 367; idem, "Jerusalem as the 'Servant City' in Isaiah 40-66: Reflections in the Light of Further Study of the Cuneiform Tradition," in *The Bible in the Light of Cuneiform Literature: Scripture in Context III*, ANETS 8, ed. William W. Hallo et al. (Lewiston, NY: Edwin Mellen, 1990), 231-55, esp. 231, 250-51.

11 Sellin and Fohrer, 381.

12 Cf. North, iii-iv, 1.
(2) the meaning of the sufferings of the Servant. As these seem to be critical to the interpretation of the Song, the survey of literature concerns more precisely the following two questions in light of their respective recent tendencies:

1. Does the Suffering Servant Poem have as its background ancient Near Eastern cults or the Hebrew cult?

2. If its background is the Hebrew cult, what does the text of the Suffering Servant Poem say about the meaning of the sufferings of the Servant?

The Cultic Background of the Suffering Servant Poem

As has been perceived by many scholars, the Suffering Servant Poem contains the language of some cultic background. The mythological interpretation, though it has lost a great deal of its influence, was based on that perception. Its proponents have suggested that the origin of the cultic background of the Poem is to be found in ancient Near Eastern mythological cults.

Tammuz and the Suffering Servant

Hugo Gressmann was the first to contend that the Suffering Servant Poem had its origin in the mystery cult of the dying and rising god Tammuz. However, he actually

---


14North, 101, 201.

15Tammuz is the Akkadian name of an ancient Sumerian fertility god Dumuzi, whose cult is assumed to have been predominantly a women's cult (cf. Ezek 8:14). A month was named after him, and its Akkadian form was borrowed with other month names into the Jewish calendar, in which Tammuz is the post-exilic name of the fourth month of the year. See Thorkild Jacobsen, "Dumuzi," EncRel, ed. Mircea Eliade (New York: Macmillan, 1987), 4:512-13; Raphael Kutscher, "Tammuz," EncJud, ed. Cecil Roth and Geoffrey Wigoder (Jerusalem: Keter, 1971), 15:787-88; idem, "The Cult of
followed in the wake of James G. Frazer's thesis of the dying and rising gods.  

Gressmann maintained that the implied resurrection of the Servant in the Poem pointed to the myth of the dying and rising god as the source of the prophet's ideas.

W. W. F. Graf von Baudissin criticized this view and denied any real basis for it.


16The category of dying and rising gods, as well as the pattern of its mythological and cultic associations, received its earliest full formulation in the monumental work of James G. Frazer, The Golden Bough: A Study in Magic and Religion, especially in its central volumes, The Dying God and Adonis, Attis, Osiris: Studies in the History of Oriental Religion (see Jonathan Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," EncRel, 4:521). The dictum of Frazer in 1906 was: "Under the names of Osiris, Tammuz, Adonis, and Attis, the peoples of Egypt and Western Asia represented the yearly decay and revival of life, especially of vegetable life, which they personified as a god who annually died and rose again from the dead" (Adonis, Attis, Osiris [New York: Macmillan, 1906], 6).

Based on the Frazerian thesis, Tammuz has been regarded as the divine representation of the life cycle of crops and therefore a vegetation deity that died with the plants and rose again when they reappeared the next season. Besides, Tammuz has been considered to be the prototype of the dying and rising god (even to be a prototype of Christ). See Lowell K. Handy, "Tammuz," ABD, 6:318; P. W. Gaebelein, Jr., "Tammuz," ISBE, 4:725-26; J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 521; Edwin M. Yamauchi, "Tammuz and the Bible," JBL 84 (1965): 283-84.

17Hugo Gressmann, Der Ursprung der israelitisch-jüdischen Eschatologie (Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1905), 301-33, esp. 325, 330. Hermann Gunkel was also one of the chief exponents of this view. See Hermann Gunkel, "Knecht Jahves," RGG (1912), 3:1540-43. Alfred A. Jeremias, in his work, asserted that the Servant of Yahweh is "a figure of Tammuz embellished by the prophet" (The Old Testament in the Light of the Ancient East: Manual of Biblical Archaeology, 2 vols., trans. C. L. Beaumont, ed. Canon C.H.W. Johns, TTL 28-29 [London: Williams & Norgate, 1911], 2:278). However, James P. Hyatt mentioned that it is too much to say so, essentially concurring with A. A. Jeremias ("The Sources of the Suffering Servant Idea," JNES 3 [1944]: 86). Hyatt argued, "It is rather that the myth and its accompanying ritual have furnished the prophet with imagery and terminology which he used in his own original way" (ibid.; cf. G. H. Dix, "The Influence of Babylonian Ideas on Jewish Messianism," JTS 26 [1924]: 251-55, esp. 254).

18W. W. F. Graf von Baudissin, Adonis und Ešmun: Eine Untersuchung zur Geschichte des Glaubens an Auferstehungsgötter und an Heilgötter (Leipzig: J. C. Hinrich, 1911), 184, n. 1; 424, n. 1. Three years after Frazer's thesis, the first attempt to treat Tammuz in isolation appeared in 1909—Heinrich Zimmern's work Der babylonische Gott Tamīz (Leipzig: B. G. Teubner, 1909). Zimmern asserted, though extremely cautiously, that Tammuz died and was resurrected (ibid., 32-33, 39-40). The results of Zimmern's analysis of Tammuz material were essentially reflected in
Tammuz was a nature-god, pure and simple, and his death had no atoning significance at all. This was generally recognized, and thus the mythological interpretation could hardly survive except in a modified form. In fact, neither Gressmann nor Hermann Gunkel was uncompromising in the advocacy of the mythological interpretation, and


19 For this and other reasons for rejecting the influence of the Tammuz cult on the Suffering Servant Song, see Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 198-99. Scharbert contended that the superficial parallels in the Tammuz and the Suffering Servant of Yahweh should not blind us to the fundamental differences (ibid., 198). Thus he concluded that at best we can reckon with an influence of the Tammuz liturgy upon the literary concept and the outward description of the suffering of the Servant, but that it is by no means definitely proven (ibid., 199).

20 Gressmann, 69.

subsequently both of them modified their views. Gressmann partially, and Gunkel totally, abandoned the idea that the Servant was adopted from the ancient Near Eastern mythology. Thus recent scholars have not gone farther than to suggest that the Servant is delineated with some mythological coloring. North asserted: "The most that can be pleaded is that the Servant is delineated with some mythological coloring." Harold H. Rowley also contended that "the conception of the Servant in its totality is quite different from the conception of the dying and rising Nature god," even though he noted that "the prophet's language might be reminiscent of the language of the Tammuz cult." Consequently, in varying ways the idea of the mythological coloring has been attached to different interpretations of the Servant.

In fact, however, although Tammuz has been generally regarded as a dying and rising god, the resurrection of Tammuz is nowhere expressly mentioned or attested in mythological texts. Furthermore, the ritual evidence is unambiguously negative in that

---

22 Gressmann, in his posthumous work, abandoned his mythological interpretation for a highly speculative form of Messianic theory, which still retained some mythological coloring (Der Messias, FRLANT 43 [Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1929], 287-339). For a good summary of Gressmann's Messianic theory, see North, 90-94.

23 In his article "Knecht Jahves" in the second, thoroughly revised, edition of RGG (1929): 1100-103, however, Gunkel openly expressed his acceptance of Sigmund Mowinckel's 1921 thesis of autobiographical interpretation, which was to be abandoned by Mowinckel in 1931. Gunkel here asserted: "This explanation of the Servant of Yahweh as the prophet himself demonstrates such a unified, historically intelligible, and touching picture that we may well assume that it will be widely accepted after a certain time" (ibid., 1103).


25 Ibid., 201. He added that, even if it could be proven that there are close verbal parallels between the Suffering Servant Song and the mythological text, this would not mean that the Suffering Servant is a mythological figure (ibid.).

26 Rowley, 27.

27 See North, 98-99, 101-102, 220-22; Rowley, 44-51.

28 See Oliver R. Gurney, "Tammuz Reconsidered: Some Recent Developments," JSS 7 (1962): 151; Wagner, 141, 145, 262. The resurrection of Tammuz was based, in
it shows the character of a funeral or mortuary cult. Therefore, Tammuz is not to be


J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 525. J. Z. Smith noted: "There is no evidence for any cultic celebration of a rebirth of Tammuz apart from late Christian texts in which he is identified with Adonis" (ibid.). See also Wagner, 142, n. 36; 145, 147; Gurney, "Tammuz Reconsidered," 155, 159. In spite of the lack of cultic evidence, it was widely supposed on the ground of the thesis of a dying and rising god that the period of mourning for Tammuz must have been followed by a festival of rejoicing (see Aimo T. Nikolainen, Der Auferstehungsglauben in der Bibel und ihrer Umbelt: I. Religionsgeschichtlicher Teil [Helsinki: Druckerei–A. G. der Finnischen Literaturgesellschaft, 1944], 43; Friedrich Jeremias, "Semitische Völker in Vorderasien," in P. D. Chantepe de la Sausssaye, Lehrbuch der Religionsgeschichte, 4th ed., ed. Alfred Berthelet and Edvard Lehmann [Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1925], 1:555-56). This speculation seemed to gain support with the view that Ishtar (the Accadian form of Inanna) descended to bring her consort Tammuz up from the underworld, as maintained by Adam Falkenstein and Maurus Witzel (see Falkenstein, "Zu 'Inannas Gang zur Unterwelt," AFO 14 [1942]: 113-138; Witzel, "Zur sumerischen Rezension der Höllenhafte Ischtars," Or 4 [1945]: 24-69; idem, "Ischtar (Inanna) gegen Tammuz?," Or 21 [1952]: 435-55). However, Inanna did not descend to the realm of the dead to rescue Dumuzi (the Sumerian form of Tammuz). Rather it was her descent that was responsible for his death, since he, as a substitute for her, was captured, killed, and carried off to the underworld (see J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 525-26;
regarded as a dying and rising deity.\textsuperscript{30}

**Baal and the Suffering Servant**

The Ugaritic myth which was assumed to describe the death and resurrection of Baal\textsuperscript{31} has also been considered to have a decisive influence upon the idea of the Suffering Servant.\textsuperscript{32} Firmly based on the hypothesis of dying and rising gods,\textsuperscript{33} James P. Hyatt alleged the myth of the dying-rising god, particularly its Ugaritic form of the

Yamauchi, "Tammuz and the Bible," 286-88).

\textsuperscript{30}See J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 526; Yamauchi, "Tammuz and the Bible," 289-90; Gurney, "Tammuz Reconsidered," 159-60. Wagner contended that the sources of Tammuz "give reason to believe that Tammuz's death and descent to the Nether World was regarded as an event that happened once and for all and that he remained in the Nether World" (145). Unfortunately, however, Wagner was not consistent in his position in that, even though he couldn't find any conclusive evidence for Tammuz as a dying and rising god, he mentioned, wrongly quoting from W. von Soden and simply following it, "Tammuz is perhaps to be regarded as a dying and rising god" (262; cf. esp. 136). In fact, however, Wolfram von Soden simply mentioned that "Dumusi/Tammuz galt in der späteren Zeit, vielleicht unter syrischem Einfluss, wohl als ein solcher [sterbender und wiederauferstehender] Gott" ("Babylonien und Assyrien," \textit{EKL} [1961], 1:283-84). Throughout the history of the interpretation of the Tammuz cycle, there have been a few scholars, for example, Lewis R. Farnell, Cyrus H. Gordon, William F. Albright, and F. R. Kraus (see Kraus, "Zu Moortgat, 'Tammuz,'" \textit{WZKM} 52 [1953-55]: 36-80, specifically against the work culminating the Tammuz thesis by Anton Moortgat, \textit{Tammuz: Der Unsterblichkeitsglaube in der altorientalischen Bildkunst} [Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1949]), T. Jacobsen ("The Myth of Inanna and Bilulu," \textit{JNES} 12 [1953]: 160-87; cf. idem, "Toward the Image of Tammuz," \textit{HR} 1 [1962]: 189-213), and L. Vanden Berghe, who were suspicious about the alleged resurrection of Tammuz (see Gurney, "Tammuz Reconsidered," 150-51; Yamauchi, "Tammuz and the Bible," 289). It is sobering, thus, to note that the resurrection of Tammuz has been widely accepted almost for a century and frequently made the basis of numerous comparisons with the Bible (cf. Yamauchi, "Tammuz and the Bible," 289). Therefore, biblical studies which assumed Tammuz's resurrection should be laid to rest or drastically revised. For critical surveys on the history of the interpretation of the Tammuz cycle, see Gurney, "Tammuz Reconsidered," 147-60; Yamauchi, "Tammuz and the Bible," 283-90; J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 525-26.

\textsuperscript{31}E.g., Werner H. Schmidt in 1963 spoke of the death and resurrection in regard to Baal ("Baals Tod und Auferstehung," \textit{ZRGG} 15 [1963]: 1-13).

\textsuperscript{32}Hyatt, "The Sources of the Suffering Servant Idea," 84-86.

\textsuperscript{33}Ibid., 84-86.
Baal myth, as one of the four principal sources for the idea of the suffering Servant. Edward J. Young, however, persuasively argued against Hyatt's thesis. After investigating Hyatt's suggested parallels between the Suffering Servant Poem and the Ras Shamra myth, Young concluded that there is "certainly no connection" between them. 

Whereas there are superficial and accidental resemblances between the Servant Poem and the Canaanite epics, there are no essential similarities, but rather profound differences. The most significant one of them is the unique concept of the righteous Servant's atoning sacrifice for those who are unrighteous.

Furthermore, in regard to the Ugaritic texts, a number of significant aspects

---

34The other three are "the idea of corporate personality," "the Hebrew conception of the prophet and his role, together with the actual experiences of individual prophets, particularly Jeremiah," and "the ideas underlying the Israelite sacrificial system" (cf. ibid., 79-84, italics his).


36Ibid., 140.

37Cf. ibid., 137. Young contended here: "This concept differs toto coelo from anything that is found in the Baal myth" (ibid.).

should be mentioned. First, it is uncertain whether the so-called "Baal cycle," which is a collection of a number of different texts, in fact forms a unified cycle and what order the texts assigned to the cycle are to follow. Second, the texts which are of greatest relevance to the question of whether Baal is correctly to be classified as a dying-rising deity have major lacunae at the most crucial points. Third, in the light of the fact that these texts have been reconstructed by some scholars adopting the dying and rising pattern, it remains an open question whether these texts are an independent witness to that pattern. Fourth, there is no evidence that any of the events, narrated in these


40J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 522-23; see also Kapelrud, 131; Gaster, 122-23.


Just in line with the ancient Near Eastern pattern of myth and ritual, Gaster and Kapelrud regarded Baal as a dying and rising god like Adonis and Tammuz (Gaster, 23-25, 61-64, 77-85, 128-29; Kapelrud, 27-43, 93-98, 117-35). See also Samuel H. Hooke, "Traces of the Myth and Ritual Pattern in Canaan," in Myth and Ritual: Essays on the Myth and Ritual of the Hebrews in Relation to the Culture Pattern of the Ancient East, ed. Hooke (London: Oxford University Press, 1933), 68-86. However, very recently M. S. Smith mentioned: "Frazer's new mythology [of 'dying and rising gods'] was cast in the new idiom of the nascent anthropology and assumed the mantel of its authority. Part of the intellectual baggage of this field was a relationship between myth and ritual which has recently come under attack" ("The Death of 'Dying and Rising Gods' in the Biblical World: An Update, with Special Reference to Baal in the Baal Cycle," SJOT 12 [1998]: 310). He asserted: "Frazer and his intellectual successor, T. H. Gaster, generalized too much about ritual as the linchpin linking nature and myth. Ritual is only one of many different sorts of social phenomena encoded in literature. And in the case of Baal, the ritual standing between nature and myth was not a complex celebrating the death and
fragmentary and obscure texts, were ritually re-enacted.\footnote{J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 523; M. S. Smith, The Ugaritic Baal Cycle, 62-63, 67. See also R. de Langhe, "Myth, Ritual, and Kingship in the Ras Shamra Tablets," in Myth, Ritual, and Kingship: Essays on the Theory and Practice of Kingship in the Ancient Near East and in Israel, ed. S. H. Hooke (Oxford: Clarendon, 1958), 139-40. Walls rightly pointed out: "Misrepresenting the Ugaritic myths as purely ritual texts, the myth-ritual approach attempts to reconstruct the Ugaritic cult based on the actions of the gods in the mythic narratives. The hypothetical rituals are then used as the basis for interpreting the myths" (4; cf. 67-68). M. S. Smith argued: "For decades the dominant paradigm for reading the Baal Cycle was to see it as the libretto for a cultic or ritual drama. There is, in fact, no evidence for such a ritual background for the Baal Cycle. Instead, this text was a literary achievement which incorporated motifs known from ritual, but it is itself not to be located against a ritual setting (The Ugaritic Baal Cycle, 60-87, 96-100)."

Fifth, there is no suggestion of an "annual" cycle of death and rebirth.\footnote{J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 523; M. S. Smith, The Ugaritic Baal Cycle, 62, 69-71. The idea of the "annual" death and rebirth essentially resulted from the Frazerian concept of the dying-rising fertility or vegetation god. Johannes C. de Moor has developed most fully the seasonal dimension of the ritual approach by a detailed correlation between the events reported in the Baal cycle with the weather of the Syrian coast within a single annual cycle. Assuming that the rites or cultic acts celebrating the divine deeds in the myths reflects the vicissitudes of the seasons, his interpretation correlated the three phenomena of seasons, rites, and myths. He thus tried to demonstrate that the Ugaritic myth of Baal "contains a large number of references to datable seasonal events that follow the course of Ugaritic cultic year which coincided with the Syrian agroclimatic year" (The Seasonal Pattern in the Ugaritic Myth of Ba"lu: According to the Version of Ilimmilku, AOAT 16, ed. Kurt Bergerhof et al. [Kavelaer: Butzon & Bercker, 1971], 67). While there is certainly seasonal imagery in the Baal cycle, it is demonstrated that there are several methodological weaknesses in sustaining the approach (see M. S. Smith, The Ugaritic Baal Cycle, 66-67; Grabbe, "The Seasonal Pattern," 57-63, esp. 61; Walls, 5). Walls mentioned, "There is no evidence that the death and resurrection of Baal or its ritual celebration was an annual occurrence in Ugaritic religion" (6). He then contended, "The interpretation that Baal personifies natural vegetation is itself methodologically flawed in its assumption that Ugaritic god can be reduced to natural phenomena" (ibid.). Walls went on to say that "it is quite unreasonable to continue with the assumption that the ancient Ugaritic religion is only concerned with fertility magic" (ibid.). Patrick D. Miller, Jr., also argued that the mythology of Ugarit "cannot be reduced to a description of it as reflection of a basically fertility religion any more than one can do that with Israelite religion" ("Ugarit and the History of Religions," JNWSL 9 [1981]: 125).} Sixth, whereas the language of Baal's death appears in the Baal cycle, the idea of "being made alive" is not explicitly shown in that cycle.\footnote{See M. S. Smith, The Ugaritic Baal Cycle, 71; Grabbe, "The Seasonal Pattern,"} In view of the many difficulties, therefore, it is presently impossible to accept resurrection of the god, but royal funerary ritual" (ibid., 311).
the category of a dying and rising god in regard to Baal also.

Marduk and the Suffering Servant

Heinrich Zimmern suggested that the Suffering Servant is to be understood in the light of the Babylonian cultus. This suggestion was later developed by Lorenz Dürr, with special reference to the ritual of the Babylonian *akītu* festival, or New Year festival. Dürr gave prominence to the experience of the Babylonian king in the ritual on the fifth day of the New Year festival.

---


47 According to the ritual of the Babylonian New Year festival, on the fifth day, after the temple had been thoroughly purified, the king, who was called the "servant" (*ardu*) of the god, was brought before Marduk. The priest took away his royal insignia from him, slapped him in the face, and pulled him by the ears. The king was also made to bow down to the ground, to recite a negative confession, and to pray. Only after this humiliating experience was the king restored to his kingship. For a succinct summary
With respect to the influence of the Babylonian New Year festival on the Suffering Servant Poem, however, serious objections should be raised. The concept that the king underwent an annual ritual of mimetic dying and rising is predicated on the fact that the deity, whose chief representative was the king, was believed to undergo a similar fate. There is no evidence, however, that Marduk was ever understood to be a dying

of Dürren's interpretation of the Suffering Servant Song, see North, 102-103.

and rising deity,\textsuperscript{49} that such a myth was reenacted during the New Year festival,\textsuperscript{50} or that


Realizing the problem of correlating the myth and the ritual, some proponents of the Myth and Ritual approach argued that the first five days of the ritual were only purificatory in nature, and went on to speculate that the next three days of the festival featured a dramatic reenactment of a myth of Marduk's death and resurrection (cf. J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 523-24). This kind of imaginative speculation, however, gave rise to a new set of problems. There is no hint of the death of Marduk in the triumphant account of his cosmic kingship in the \textit{Enuma elish}, and thus scholars turned to an esoteric text which they entitled \textit{Death and Resurrection of Bel-Marduk, Tribulations of Marduk, or Ordeal of Marduk} (cf. ibid., 524; Frymer-Kensky, "Marduk," 201). The text is fragmentary and difficult to interpret, but it is cast in the form of a cultic commentary in which a set of ritual gestures is correlated to the misfortunes of Marduk, who has been captured and imprisoned (cf. J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 524; Frymer-Kensky, "Marduk," 201). The text was first edited by H. Zimmern in his work \textit{Zum babylonischen Neujahrfest}, zweiter Beitrag (Leipzig: B. G. Teubner, 1918). Zimmern believed that the text was the first cuneiform evidence that the concept of death and resurrection of Tammuz was transferred to Marduk also. He interpreted the text as an account of the "Passion and Triumph of Bel-Marduk" at New Year's festival and even drew its numerous parallels from the passion account of the New Testament (ibid., 12-14). Zimmern's interpretation of the text was essentially adopted by Stephen H. Langdon, \textit{The Babylonian Epic of Creation} (Oxford: Clarendon, 1923), who somewhat inadequately translated and misleadingly entitled the text "The Death and Resurrection of Bel-Marduk" (ibid., 34-64, 215-17, esp. 50, 217; cf. J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 524, 526). Svend A. Pallis, in his book \textit{The Babylonian Akitu Festival} (Copenhagen: Bianco Lunos Bogtrykkeri, 1926), held essentially the same interpretation, even though very closely dealing with the text. Whereas Langdon refused to express his definite opinion on Zimmern's parallels between Marduk's fate and Jesus' Passion, Pallis very decidedly rejected to see the parallels (ibid., 200-201, 227).

For such scholars as Zimmern, Langdon, and Pallis, Marduk's imprisonment was equivalent to his death, and his presumed ultimate release (based on a hint in the text that Marduk was or was about to be freed owing to someone's intercession on behalf of Marduk) represented his resurrection (cf. J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 524; Frymer-Kensky, "Marduk," 201; idem, "The Tribulations of Marduk: The So-called 'Marduk Ordeal Text',' \textit{JAOS} 103 [1983]: 131). However, W. von Soden, in his significant study of the text ("Gift es ein Zeugnis dafür, daß die Babylonier an die Wiederaufererstehung Marduks geglaubt haben?," \textit{ZA} 51 [1955]: 130-66), showed through an exhaustive textual study that no death and resurrection of Marduk was mentioned in the text, and that any connection with the New Year ritual was not proven (see also idem, "Babylonien und Assyrien," 284). Since then the text has been referred to as the "Marduk Ordeal Text" (see Frymer-Kensky, "The Tribulations of Marduk," 132). Frymer-Kensky contended: "Although it was originally understood to be a tale of a dying and resurrected god, there is no basis for this interpretation and no evidence at all that Marduk was a vegetation-type dying God" ("Marduk," 201). W. G. Lambert also asserted that "no single piece of evidence tells of any death or resurrection of Marduk, and in the lack of such evidence it must be excluded from the discussion" ("Myth and Ritual as Conceived by the Babylonians," \textit{JSJS} 13 [1968]: 106). Daniel I. Block went so far as to say that, although the \textit{akītu} festival is often associated with the New Year, it is
the king was believed to undergo a similar fate.\textsuperscript{51}

Furthermore, the differences between the Babylonian king and the Suffering Servant are insurmountable. Sigmund Mowinckel perceived an essential difference between the Babylonian king's ritual humiliation and the suffering of the Servant. With regard to the Babylonian king there are three acts: exaltation—he was a king; abasement—the king was humiliated; exaltation—he became king again afterwards. In respect to the Servant, however, there are only two acts: "a time of ever-increasing abasement, followed by elevation to a height above anything previously attained."\textsuperscript{52}

clear that in ancient Mesopotamia the event was celebrated in different cities and at different times of the year, and thus that it is unlikely that the akitu festival functioned generally as a New Year celebration ("New Year," 529; cf. Clines, "New Year," 626; Lambert, "Myth and Ritual," 106; Cohen, 401-403, 453).\textsuperscript{50}

J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 524; Wagner, 164-65; see also Clines, "New Year," 626, 628; Block, "New Year," 529. The ritual text of the New Year festival in Babylon, which is an exceedingly late cuneiform text, is not only fragmentary but also the only detailed description of the ritual program in Babylon to survive. It enjoins twenty-six ritual actions for the first five days of the twelve-day ceremony, including a double reading of a text entitled Enuma elish (cf. J. Z. Smith, "Dying and Rising Gods," 523). On the assumption that this refers to some form of the text now known by that name, the "Babylonian creation epic" as reconstructed by contemporary scholars, it is alleged that the ritual suggests a close link to the myth (ibid.). Not one of the twenty-six ritual actions, however, bears the slightest resemblance to any narrative element in the myth (ibid.). Whatever the significance of the recitation of the text during the akitu festival, the myth is certainly not re-enacted in that portion of the ceremonies which has survived (ibid.). Clines asserted that "it is almost certainly incorrect that the festival included a celebration of Marduk's death and resurrection" ("New Year," 626). He went on to contend: "The relation between mythological texts and rituals is complex. Myth is not simply the spoken accompaniment of ritual. Near Eastern myths are often essentially literary productions, with only distant connections to particular ritual acts. Even when they were recited during a ritual—as was the case with the Babylonian Creation Epic—the ritual activities cannot be safely reconstructed from the myths" (ibid., 628).


\textsuperscript{51}Mowinckel, 225.
Scharbert convincingly pointed out two of the most significant differences in the fact that the central ideas of the Suffering Servant Song—the thought of vicarious expiation and the confession of the sins of the "we"—have no counterparts in the Babylonian ritual.  

Jonathan Z. Smith's position is to be noted as a conclusion of the relationship between the Suffering Servant and Tammuz, Baal, or Marduk.  

Noting that "the figure of the dying and rising deity has continued to be employed, largely as a preoccupation of biblical scholarship," he contended that "all the deities that have been identified as belonging to the class of dying and rising deities can be subsumed under two larger classes of disappearing deities or dying deities." Therefore, he argued against the concept of the dying and rising god in general:

The category of dying and rising gods, once a major topic of scholarly investigation, must now be understood to have been largely a misnomer based on imaginative reconstructions and exceedingly later or highly ambiguous

---

53 Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 202-204. Scharbert maintained that at best the picture of the Babylonian king's being humiliated and designated as "servant" could have had an effect on the outward description of the Suffering Servant, but that even this is very unlikely in his opinion (ibid., 204). It is to be noted that Eduard König, in his work, had already called in question the expiatory role of the Babylonian king, and thus had concluded, "Dürer's hypothesis, that the figure of the Servant of God in Isaiah 53 might have been called forth with a view to a Babylonian concept and thus added from the outside of the Israelite treasure of ideas, is also a spurious one" (Das Buch Jesaja [Gütersloh: C. Bertelsmann, 1926], 469). Georg Fohrer, in his article, also asserted that "no Babylonian text speaks about the transfer of the sins of the people to the king and their expiation through him," and that "there can be no speech [of the king] as to substitution" in the ritual of the Babylonian New Year Festival ("Stellvertretung und Schuldopfer in Jesaja 52:13-53:12 vor dem Hintergrund des alten Testaments und des Alten Orients," in Das Kreuz Jesu: Theologische Überlegungen, ed. Paul Rieger [Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1969], 21).  

54 Pace especially Mowinckel, 82, 235-238, esp. 236.  


56 Ibid., 522, italics mine. J. Z. Smith added: "In the first case, the deities return but have not died; in the second, the gods die but do not return" (ibid.).
Most recently in 1998 Mark S. Smith issued the death certificate for the thesis of dying and rising gods, and Tryggve N. D. Mettinger, who once was a firm supporter for the thesis, seems to have finally accepted its demise. Therefore, the present scholarly consensus seems to be that the thesis of dying and rising gods is untenable.

57Ibid., 521, italics mine. He went on to assert: "The category of dying and rising deities is exceedingly dubious. It has been based largely on Christian interest and tenuous evidence. As such, the category is of more interest to the history of scholarship than to the history of religions" (ibid., 526). For detailed and strong reactions against the dying and rising thesis, see, e.g., J. Z. Smith, "The Glory, Jest and Riddle: James George Frazer and the Golden Bough" (Ph.D. dissertation, Yale University, 1969), 40, n. 43, 366-75; idem, "Dying and Rising Gods," 521-27; Burkert, 99-102; Roland de Vaux, The Bible and the Ancient Near East, trans. Damian McHugh (London: Darton, Longman & Todd, 1972), 210-37; M. S. Smith, 69-70; Walls, 5-6, 68; Barstad, 84, n. 45, 148-51. For a good bibliography with regard to the thesis, from the perspective of OT scholarship, see Karl-Heinz Bernhardt, Das Problem der altorientalischen Königsideologie im Alten Testament: Unter besonderer Berücksichtigung der Geschichte der Psalmexegese dargestellt und kritisch gewürdigt, ed. G. W. Anderson et al., VTSup 8 (Leiden: Brill, 1961); for a brilliant criticism of the thesis as well as a good bibliography, from the perspective of NT research, see Wagner, Pauline Baptism and the Pagan Mysteries.

58M. S. Smith, "The Death of 'Dying and Rising Gods' in the Biblical World," 257-313; cf. esp. 288-89 in regard to Frazer's major problems of method and data; see also Hans-Peter Müller, "Sterbende und auferstehende Vegetationsgötter?: Eine Skizze," TZ 53 (1997): 74-82. As of Baal text, M. S. Smith argued: "While the Ugaritic view of nature affected the presentation of Baal as a storm-god, it would seem that a further influence on the presentation of Baal's death [i.e., disappearance] and return to life was royal funerary ritual" ("The Death of 'Dying and Rising Gods' in the Biblical World," 311). Thus he interpreted: "In Ugarit's cultural context, Baal's fate may reflect his offity [sic] to the condition of Ugarit's dynasty, both the deceased king and his living successor. . . . Baal's death reflects the demise of Ugaritic kings, but his return to life heralds the role of the living king to provide peace for the world" (ibid., 308-309).


In connection with the Suffering Servant Poem F.M.Th. de Liagre Böhl made reference to the practice of a royal substitute (sār pūḫi) in Babylonia and Assyria.  

(Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2004), 43.

62 F.M.Th. de Liagre Böhl, "Prophetentum und stellvertretendes Leiden in Assyrien und Israel," in Opera Minora: Studies en Bijdragen op Assyriologisch en Oudtestamentisch Terrein (Groningen, Netherlands: J. B. Wolters, 1953), 63-80. Along with the ritual of the New Year festival in Babylonia, Roy A. Rosenberg mentioned the practice of a substitute king in Babylonia and Assyria as a background of the Suffering Servant (see 381-83). Norman Hillyer seems to take up his position in line with Rosenberg ("The Servant of God," EvQ 41 [1969]: 148). The kingship in Mesopotamia was considered to be a religious institution of divine origin. The king was regarded not only to preserve the social, economical, and political well-being of the nation but the cosmic order as well. If he did not fulfill his function properly, his people and the land suffered. The king's well-being was inextricably bound up with the well-being of his country, and thus essential for it. Any situation which could endanger the security of the king was to be avoided. In order to protect the king from such a situation the practice of a substitute king (sār pūḫi) seems to have been quite common. The king was to be protected especially from such evil omens as eclipses, which were interpreted as predictions of his death. In such a case a substitute for the king was selected shortly before the heavenly phenomenon. He was identified with the king through a ritual before Shamash, in which he was declared the king's substitute, and to him was transferred the evil omen. The kingship was considered to be given to the royal substitute by the gods. The substitute was seated on the king's throne, dressed in the king's robes, wearing a royal crown, and having a royal scepter. The sār pūḫi was fully identified with the real king, and reigned for one hundred days in order to assume the consequence of the danger upon himself. During the reign of the sār pūḫi the real king was temporarily withdrawn from his royal function. At the end of the one hundred days the sār pūḫi was put to death, whereby the evil omen was thought to be fulfilled. Right after that ritual act the real king was restored to the kingship. For the institution of the sār pūḫi, see Emil Behrens, Assyrisch-babylonische Briefe kultischen Inhalts aus der Sargonidenzeit, LSS 2/1 (Leipzig: J. C. Hinrich, 1906), 14-16; Friedrich Hrozný, "Bemerkungen zu den babylonischen Chroniken BM. 26472 und BM. 96152," WZKM 21 (1907): 375-83; Erich Ebeling, Tod und Leben nach den Vorstellungen der Babylonier, I. Teil: Texte (Berlin and Leipzig: Walter de Gruyter, 1931), 62-63; Wolfram F. von Soden, "Bemerkungen zu den von Ebeling in "Tod und Leben" Band I bearbeiteten Texten," ZA 43 (1936): 255-57; idem, "Aus einem Ersatzopferritus für den assyrischen Hof," ZA 45 (1939): 42-61; idem, "Beiträge zum Verständnis der neaussyrischen Briefe über die Ersatzkönigriten," in Vorderasiatische Studien: Festschrift für Prof. Dr. Viktor Christian gewidmet von Kollegen und Schülern zum 70. Geburtstag, ed. Kurt Schubert (Wien: Johannes Botterwerck und Vorderasiatische Verlag, 1956), 100-107; René Labat, Le caractère religieux de la royauté assyro-babylonienne (Paris: A. Maisonneuve, 1939), 354-60; idem, "Le sort des substituts royaux en Assyrie au temps des Sargonides," RA 40 (1945-1946): 123-42; Albert Schott, "Vier Briefe Mar-Istars an Asarhaddôn über Himmelserscheinungen der Jahre 670/668," ZA 47 (1942): 89-115; Frankfort, Kingship and the Gods, 262-65; G. Goossens, "Les substituts royaux en Babylone," ETL 25 (1949): 383-400; Samuel H. Hooke, "The Theory and Practice of Substitution," VT 2
There is no persuasive evidence, however, that could support a connection between the Servant and the substitute king. Unlike the appointment of the Servant, a sār pūhi was installed because of evil omens against the king, not because of the need for atonement for sin, either the king's or his people's. The installation of the sār pūhi was intended solely to avert the threatening disaster from the king to the substitute, and thus to preserve the king and his land from it. The practice, therefore, completely corresponds with the magical Weltanschauung of Babylonia and Assyria. The problem of the innocent suffering of the Servant of Yahweh is completely disregarded in the sār pūhi text. The Underworld powers, which were forced through the ritual to


Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 209. As pointed out by Scharbert, "there is absolutely no thought of sins and guilt [in the sār pūhi text]" (ibid.). See also Rodriguez, 285-86.

Lambert, "A Part of the Ritual for the Substitute King," 109-10; see also Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 209; Fohrer, "Stellvertretung und Schuldopfer," 23; Rodriguez, 286. The death of the substitute king was not an offering, but a protective measure of an apotropaic value.

Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 209-10; see also Rodriguez, 286. In this regard, Fohrer, "Stellvertretung und Schuldopfer," 23, pointed out two things. First, "we are found in the area of magical resemblance as to the concept of the identification of prototype [king] and type [substitute]. Thereby the type can take the place of the prototype and assume its fate while the prototype itself is spared." Second, "the substitute king ritual is thoroughly independent of sin or piety of the king and the substitute king. For the ritual works, regardless of the religious-ethical quality of the participants, as magical action through the power inherent in it."

receive the sār pūḥi instead of the king, are not even indirectly mentioned in the Suffering Servant Song.\(^{68}\) In spite of the common idea of substitution, therefore, the sār pūḥi and the Servant are so essentially different that it is still most unlikely that they have anything to do with each other.\(^{69}\) L. G. Rignell has already argued correctly:

The conceptions, and even the terminology itself, which are used to make clear the mission of the Servant are influenced by the Pentateuchal description of sacrifice in ancient Israel. . . . The whole complex of conceptions about the Servant of Yahweh in Deutero-Isaiah can be completely explained in the light of Israel's own religious tradition. Especially with regard to our part of Isaiah no trace can be found of any supposed kingship ideology along the lines of a Babylonian cult-pattern. Still less do the texts yield the slightest support for a statement that a myth about a dead and risen god, such as Tammuz, could have coloured the prophet's message.\(^{70}\)

Rowley also asserted that "in so far as the prophet's language had any cultic background it is more likely to have been in the Yahwistic ritual of his own people."\(^{71}\)

\(^{68}\)Rodríguez, 33, 286.

\(^{69}\)Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 209. Fohrer also mentioned that "we come across over and over again difference between the substitute king and the Servant of Yahweh instead of similarity," and added, "This applies all the more so to the substitute king ritual of the Hittites of the Asia Minor" ("Stellvertretung und Schuldopfer," 23). Scharbert asserted that the sār pūḥi texts are nevertheless significant to the exegesis of the Suffering Servant Song in that they throw light upon the doctrine of substitutional expiation ("Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 210). For the Hittite practice of a royal substitute, especially see H. M. Kümmel, Ersatzrituale für den hethitischen König; cf. Rodríguez, 53-59; Fohrer, "Stellvertretung und Schuldopfer," 13-14.

\(^{70}\)Rignell, "Isa 52:13-53:12," VT 3 (1953): 89. Very recently Hermisson, "The Fourth Servant Song," 43, observed: "Scholars often have wished to derive the statements of the last Servant Song from Babylonian tradition. For example, the cult of the dying and rising vegetation god Tammuz with his liturgies is sometimes thought to stand in the background. But this thesis fails because, according to recent investigations, Tammuz descended into the underworld but never came up again. Scholars have also found a paradigmatic example of vicarious or substitutionary suffering in the 'suffering' of the king in the Babylonian New Year ritual or in the Babylonian custom of the substitute king, who in circumstances of threatened disaster had to take the real king's place. But . . . none of these comes seriously into consideration as a pattern for Isaiah 53. If one asks about the prehistory of the office depicted here, one is rather referred to the Old Testament traditions." However, Hermisson primarily resorted to two lines of tradition: (1) "the prophet's office as a mediator"; (2) "the experience of prophetic suffering" (ibid., 43-44).

\(^{71}\)Rowley, 25; see also Scharbert, "Stellvertretendes Sühneleiden," 210-11; Rodríguez, 286; Laato, 144, 152. For Edmond Jacob's dubious position, see his
As clearly shown thus far, the mythological interpretation was based on the superficial similarities between the Suffering Servant Poem and some ancient Near Eastern texts, ignoring their essential differences. The alleged ancient Near Eastern parallels scarcely stand up as such under careful scrutiny. It seems, however, that the mythological interpretation has created an awareness of the Hebrew cultic dimension of the Suffering Servant Poem, which is a result of the counteraction to the emphasis on its ancient Near Eastern cultic background. In that sense it has given a clue and an impetus to the Hebrew cultic interpretation of the Suffering Servant Poem which this study undertakes.

The Meaning of the Sufferings of the Servant

The issues of the degree and the nature of the sufferings in regard to the Suffering Servant are extremely critical to the interpretation of the Poem.

The Degree of the Servant's Sufferings: Death?

One of the recent tendencies in the study of the Suffering Servant Poem is connected with the issue of whether the death of the Servant is mentioned or not. Harry M. Orlinsky complained that far too much Christian scholarship had been guilty of eisegesis in so far as Isa 53 is concerned. He contended that the

---


The issue was raised long ago, and North addressed this problem, answering it in the affirmative, against E. Sellin and W. Staerk in particular (see North, The Suffering Servant in Deutero-Isaiah, 148-49). Recently, however, the question has been reopened, again challenging the traditional view.


29
identification of the Servant with Jesus had led Christians to assume, without serious investigation, that the chapter reported the death of the Servant. Quoting Charles C. Torrey's comment on Isa 53:9, he followed Torrey's position with respect to the issue of the death of the Suffering Servant. Orlinsky asserted, as did Torrey, that the language of the suffering, and even of the death, of the Servant is to be taken rhetorically as "hyperbole," "poetic exaggeration rather than as literal fact." As a result of his linguistic study of the Suffering Servant text, Godfrey R. Driver concluded that "no phrase is used which unambiguously implies his death" and finally denied that Isa 53 reported the death of the Servant. In a similar way R. N. Whybray and J. A. Soggin also have argued against the death of the Servant.

David J. A. Clines, even though trying to be neutral on the issue of the death of the Servant, found himself compelled to add this item to his list of "enigmas" of the Suffering Servant Song.

---

75 Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 17, 61-62, 65.


77 Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 253. Orlinsky thus considered the concept of the "Suffering Servant" in Isa 53 as "a theological and scholarly fiction" ("The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 59).


79 Ibid., 104-105.


81 Clines, 27-29. The statement of Clines is to be noted that the majority view has been consistently in the affirmative to the question, "Did the servant actually die?," in spite of dissension by E. Sellin and W. Staerk, but that in recent years Orlinsky, G. R.
D. F. Payne argued, however, mentioning the relevance of language to interpretation, that not all scholars had proceeded from the language to the interpretation because it is too easy to make a predetermined interpretation a Procrustean bed for the language, and that Orlinsky showed a tendency to do this. If Payne's argument is right, then might Orlinsky's interpretation of Isa 53 be considered, contrary to his argument against the traditional Christian interpretation, as an example of *eisegesis*?

Though admitting not only that "Driver's general statement bears consideration," but also that "Driver may be right about several at least of the words and phrases in the passage," Payne asserted that "the *onus [probandi]* should be on him to show that death did *not* occur in the prophet's portrayal of the Servant."

Although he did not deny that the issue requires more detailed studies, Payne strongly contested against Soggin and Whybray. He pointed out that some of Soggin's arguments seemed to be rather specious or farfetched. Furthermore, he noted that although "the linguistic picture in Isa 53 is undeniably one of death," it seems to have been overlooked in some of Soggin's discussions. As to Soggin, thus, the real question

Driver, Whybray, and Soggin have declared themselves unconvinc ed, and thus that "the weight of their names ensures that this question too must now be ranked among the enigmas of Isaiah 53" (ibid., 28, italics mine). He went on to say that it was not his intention to argue that, although the above scholars had vigorously argued that it does not, the poem does not speak of the servant's death. He finally took up his position: "It is enough for my purpose—rather, it is precisely my point—to observe that the references to the servant's 'death' are all ambiguous, and to add this item also to my list of enigmas in Isaiah 53" (ibid., 29).

---


83 Ibid., 137.

84 For a critical discussion on Soggin's and Whybray's study, see Payne, "Recent Trends," 8-10.

85 See ibid., 9, 16, n. 33.

to be asked is "not a linguistic one, but whether the total picture is literal or hyperbolic." 87

While maintaining that the language in Isa 53 which is connected with the issue of the Servant's death is metaphorical, Whybray was not consistent in his interpretation. 88

Thus Payne rightly asked a crucial question, "On what basis does one decide where the literal ends and the metaphorical begins?" 89

Payne argued against Clines that, though it might be admitted that some of the phrases or words used seem to be ambiguous, the total linguistic picture and its very natural sequence in the Poem seem to irrefutably stand for the death of the Servant. 90

The Nature of the Servant's Sufferings:

Vicariousness?

Another important tendency has been to deny that the sufferings of the Servant are in any way vicarious. 91 The tendency also began with Orlinsky, 92 shared by

---

87 Payne, "Recent Trends," 9, 17, n. 34. Payne added: "If the latter, then to ask whether the Servant was actually laid in the grave assigned to him, is a wooden and unimaginative approach to the interpretation of a piece of poetry" (ibid., 9).

88 See Whybray, particularly 135.


91 For a survey of literature since the beginning of this century concerning the debate on the idea of sacrificial substitution in the Hebrew cultus, see Rodríguez, 7-19.

92 Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 51-58, 118; idem, "The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 245-50, 265-70. Orlinsky mentioned: "It is remarkable how virtually every scholar dealing with the subject has merely taken it for granted that the principle of vicariousness is present in Isaiah" (idem, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 51). Then he asserted that "the concept of vicarious suffering and atonement is not to be found either here or anywhere else in the Bible," but that "it is a concept that arose in Jewish and especially Christian circles of post-biblical times" (ibid., 54). Orlinsky also argued that the concept of vicarious suffering and atonement conflicts fundamentally with the idea of covenant, which assured both the guiltless and the wicked their proper due, i.e., which was totally grounded in a basic concept of quid pro quo (see idem, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 54-55; idem, "The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 246-47). Orlinsky contended that long after Isa 53 was composed, and in
consequence of the vicariousness" "read into it in conjunction with the death of Jesus, "the servant came to be associated with such extreme and unique suffering as to be dubbed the Suffering Servant par excellence, an appellation [sic] unknown to the Hebrew Bible and unsupported by it" ("The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 254) and thus also called the concept of the vicarious suffering in Isa 53 "a theological and scholarly fiction" (idem, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 51).

However, Oswalt countered: "Orlinsky maintains that if it were not for the vicarious element in Christian theology . . ., no one would have ever thought of seeing anything substitutionary in this passage . . . But I suspect the opposite is true: If it were not for the vicarious element in the sufferings of Jesus Christ, which has so many analogues in Isa 53, there would be no barrier to recognizing the obvious substitutionary element in that chapter" (377, n. 71). In regard to the issue of the vicarious suffering of the Servant, Orlinsky seems to have been greatly influenced by Leroy Waterman, "The Martyred Servant Motif of Isa 53," JBL 56 (1937): 27-34, and then particularly by Morna D. Hooker, Jesus and the Servant: The Influence of the Servant Concept of Deutero-Isaiah in the New Testament (London: S.P.C.K., 1959); cf. Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 267; idem, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 59, 70-73. Norman H. Snaith, ahead of Orlinsky, also rejected the vicarious suffering of the Servant. See Snaith, "Isaiah 40-66: A Study of the Teaching of the Second Isaiah and Its Consequences," in Studies on the Second Part of the Book of Isaiah, ed. G. W. Anderson, VTSup 14 (Leiden: Brill, 1967), 147, 195-7, 204-5, 218; cf. also idem, "The Servant of the Lord in Deutero-Isaiah," in Studies in Old Testament Prophecy, ed. H. H. Rowley (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1950), 187-200. Snaith's exegesis of Isa 40-55 and 60-62 in general and of Isa 53 in particular was done on two basic assumptions: (1) the prophet was essentially a nationalist; and (2) the Servant of the Lord is primarily the 597 B.C. exiles, but gradually it tends to include all the Babylonian exiles (see idem, Second Part of the Book of Isaiah, 137, 175-77).

Generally speaking, Jewish interpreters of old, though not having developed the full-fledged concept of vicariousness, did not deny the existence of the concept in the Suffering Servant Poem. There have been, however, several who had a different approach to the sufferings of the Servant. For example, Isaiah ben Mali maintained that the Servant did not suffer for others but because of other men who made him suffer through their evil ways and thus were reckoned as transgressors, and he also contended that the Servant suffered together with the transgressors (see The Fifty-Third Chapter of Isaiah According to the Jewish Interpreters, vol 2., ed. H. M. Orlinsky, LBS [New York: Ktav, 1969], 76-77; Eugene Joseph Cohen, "Jewish Concepts of the Servant of the Lord in Deutero-Isaiah" [Ph.D. dissertation, Boston University, 1954], 151, 153). Shlomoh Levi argued that the private sin of an individual should be paid for by the individual violator, but that the righteous assume the communal sin (The Fifty-Third Chapter of Isaiah, 282).

Yehezkel Kaufmann, 


94 Marco Treves, "Isaiah 53," VT 24 (1974): 107. Treves rejected the existence of any idea of vicarious atonement in Isaiah 53, asserting that it is foreign to Jewish theology. He mentioned that "it is an extremely frequent historical fact that the innocent suffers for the sins of the guilty," and also that "it may happen occasionally that the death
In regard to this tendency, however, Rodríguez observed a crucial methodological problem. He pointed out that those who deny the vicarious suffering of the Servant usually have a pre-understanding of his identity and of the "many" whose sins he bore.\(^96\)

The pre-understanding is then used to evaluate the presence of the idea of vicarious suffering in the Suffering Servant Poem.\(^97\) If Rodríguez's observation is right, shouldn't such an approach be considered methodologically unsound? To a certain extent the reasoning seems to be circular in that first the identities of the Servant and of the "many" are determined or presupposed, and then, on the basis of that identification, it is decided whether the suffering of the Servant is vicarious or not.\(^98\) Methodologically, what should be determined first of all is what the text says, particularly the extent and nature of the sufferings of the Servant, and then this should be employed as the basic criterion for of the innocent causes the guilty to forsake his sins" (ibid.). Treves opted the Maccabean date for Isa 53, regarded the Servant as the high priest Onias, and linked the tragic death of Onias with the resurrection of Judaism under Mattathias and Maccabaeus. He admits, "Historically speaking, however, this image is not quite accurate" (ibid., 108).

\(^95\) Whybray, 29-74. Whybray contended that Isa 53 does not refer to the vicarious suffering of the Servant, but to his sharing, in a greater measure, the suffering of his fellow-exiles (ibid., 30, 57). Thus he dismissed the theory of vicarious suffering in regard to Isaiah as impossible (ibid., 30).

\(^96\) Rodríguez, 278.

\(^97\) Ibid. Orlinsky argued that the idea of substitution is not present here because neither Israel nor the Gentiles suffered as innocent substitutes and also because both of them were punished for their own sins (see Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 27-28). The same argument is used by Kaufmann, 144 and 157. Whybray regarded the "many" as a designation for the Jewish exiles in Babylon, and then concluded it is impossible to say that the Servant suffered in their place because they did not escape judgment (see Whybray, 30). For Orlinsky and Kaufmann as well as Whybray, the Servant is the prophet himself. Payne mentioned against Orlinsky: "Note that this position [of Orlinsky] can only be adopted once you have decided who the Servant is" ("The Servant of the Lord," 141). Payne asserted there can be no doubt that Whybray's interpretation is based more on his prior identification of the Servant than his linguistic and semantic findings ("Recent Trends," 11). Thus, it is in light of his alleged Christian pre-conceptions and eisegesis, Whybray seems to contradict himself in that he had presuppositions on the date and authorship on the book of so-called Deutero-Isaiah and on the identity of the Servant (see Whybray, 25, 30).

\(^98\) Rodríguez, 278-79.
the identification of the Servant and of the "many."  

Orlinsky and Whybray also argued that the suffering of the Servant is not substitutionary because, as a result of his special call and mission as God's spokesman, his suffering was not different from that of the other prophets. According to Orlinsky, like all spokesmen and prophets of God, the Servant suffered "on account of and along with the people" to bring God's message of rebuke and repentance so that the people might be made whole and their wounds could be healed. As for Whybray, while the Servant suffered from his being arrested and mistreated by the Babylonians because of his anti-Babylonian prophecies, his suffering was interpreted by the exiles as an indication that he was either a sinner or, more probably, a false prophet justly punished by God. They therefore refused to believe his message of the imminent deliverance of the Jewish exiles from the Babylonian captivity. But now they acknowledge that "the Servant, who deserved no punishment, has, as a result of their sins, which had necessitated his dangerous and fateful prophetic ministry, received the largest share of it."  

---

99Ibid., 279. Payne also rightly argued: "The only scientific way to approach the passage is first to investigate what is actually said, and then ask the question who best fits the description given" ("The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 141).

100See Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 56-57; idem, "The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 248-50; Whybray, 59, 61, 134-35.

101Orlinsky, "The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 56-57; idem, "The So-called 'Suffering Servant,'" 248-50.

102Whybray, 134-35.

103Whybray, 61, italics his. Oswalt put several questions to Whybray: "If the prophet was put into prison for preaching against Babylon, as Whybray suggests, in what sense was he there as a result (as Whybray wants it) of his fellow exiles' sins? Furthermore, in what sense could his imprisonment (for political subversion) produce healing or reconciliation (vs. 5) for them? Why should his people feel that he was somehow doing this all on their account and be deeply ashamed of how they had thought of him?" (394, n. 26). Childs also correctly observed: "Whybray . . . picks up the argument of Orlinsky that the use of the preposition min in vss. 5 and 8 cannot be understood vicariously since this would have called for the preposition b't (beth pretii),
On that understanding of the Servant's suffering, however, two observations were made by Rodríguez. First, if the suffering of the Servant is to be regarded equal to that of the prophets, then the uniqueness of his suffering disappears. But the Suffering Servant Poem seems to be precisely interested in emphasizing that uniqueness with its exclusive ultimate results. It could be argued that the suffering of the Servant is quantitatively unique in that he suffered more than any other person in Israel. Furthermore, the Song appears to be concerned with the unique quality of the Servant's suffering, that is, the unique nature and the exclusive results of his suffering. Second, the Poem does not describe the Suffering Servant as a prophet proclaiming a message of judgment, rebuke, and repentance which results in his suffering. The suffering of the Servant is not the result of his proclamation of God's messages in that the total picture of the Servant is characterized by his extreme silence and passivity. Rowley argued that "the uniqueness of the Servant is that whereas others suffered in consequence of their mission, his suffering is the organ of his mission." 

meaning 'in exchange for.' Actually a *beth pret* does occur in vs. 5, as Walther Zimmerli has pointed out ("Zur Vorgeschichte von Jes. 53," in *Congress Volume, Rome, 1968*, ed. G. W. Anderson, VTSup 17 [Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1969], 215). However, Whybray is convinced of the 'inherent improbability of such a notion in the Old Testament.'... In my judgment, this bland and even superficial understanding of the passage serves as a major indictment of his conclusions" (415).

104 Rodríguez, 280.

105 Ibid.


107 Rodríguez, 280. See also Zimmerli, "πᾶς θεοῦ," 671, 673.

108 Rodríguez, 280.

109 Cf. ibid.

After a detailed investigation of the words and phrases of Isa 53 that had been interpreted in a vicarious sense, Whybray concluded that none of them has the notion of vicarious suffering in the OT, and that the Hebrew text itself, interpreted without preconceived ideas and inherited convictions, does not permit the theory of vicarious suffering.

In regard to Whybray's arguments, however, Payne mentioned that "only time will show how far Whybray's conclusions will commend themselves." He then added two observations:

Firstly, it is remarkable how many terms and phrases in the passage have, in the past, been thought to describe vicarious suffering, rightly or wrongly; and secondly, it only requires the traditional interpretation to be substantiated for a single one of these cases, for that interpretation to govern the whole passage.

Payne also pointed out, "Ultimately, in fact, all Whybray has done is to show that these various expressions could be otherwise interpreted; whether they should be, is another question." Kaufmann asserted that the sufferings of the Servant were shared sufferings, that is, that the Servant did not suffer in their place but with them. He supports his thesis of his work; so Hosea and Jeremiah. The uniqueness of the Servant lies in this: he not only encountered and accepted suffering in the course of his work; in the final phase suffering became the means whereby he accomplished his work, and was effective in the salvation of others. . . . This is vicarious suffering, but it is not crude substitution" ("Servant of the Lord," *IDB* [1962], 4:293-94).

111 Whybray, 30, 75.

112 Ibid., 75-76.

113 Payne, "Recent Trends," 11; for a case in favor of Payne's periphrasis, see Gudmundur Olafsson, "The Use of NS" in the Pentateuch and Its Contribution to the Concept of Forgiveness" (Ph.D. dissertation, Andrews University, Seventh-day Adventist Theologicall Seminary, 1992), esp. 282-84.

114 Payne, "Recent Trends," 11.

115 Ibid., italics his.

116 Kaufmann, 157. Kaufmann argued for his position by referring particularly to
by referring to the concept of collective retribution.\textsuperscript{117} He mentioned that "the idea is certainly current in the Bible that men suffer for the sins of others, and that in this broad sense the concept of vicarious suffering is biblical."\textsuperscript{118} He asserted, however, that the biblical concept of suffering without personal sin is rooted in the concept of collective retribution.\textsuperscript{119} For Kaufmann, the sufferings affecting the whole community are, by reason of the idea of collective sin and retribution, not vicarious sufferings of the innocent for the sinners, but sufferings as punishment for collective sin.\textsuperscript{120} Thus, according to Kaufmann, "the idea of vicarious suffering has no place in the doctrine of retribution."\textsuperscript{121} Furthermore, except for this Poem, Kaufmann was not able to find a single case where the sufferings of the innocent due to collective retribution move God to save the innocent as well as the guilty ones, as pointed out by Rodriguez.\textsuperscript{122} It seems therefore that collective retribution could hardly serve to explain what is said in the

\begin{itemize}
\item Is\textsuperscript{a}a 53:5d, "And with his stripes we were healed." As to him, the phrase implies that the "we" also suffered and were healed by the merits of the sufferings of the Servant. He found here, contrary to Orlinsky, the idea that the sufferings of the righteous have specific atoning power: "Because the humble who were innocent of transgression were smitten along with the rest of the people, God noticed their misery and took pity on the entire nation" (ibid., 159).
\item Similarly Orlinsky by referring to the covenant concept and denying the existence of the concept of vicarious suffering and atonement in the Scripture ("The So-called 'Servant of the Lord,'" 54-55).
\item Kaufmann, 142.
\item Ibid.
\item Ibid.
\item Ibid., 145.
\item Rodriguez, 282. Interestingly enough Kaufmann asserted: "The idea of specifically vicarious suffering is to be found in Scripture only with respect to sacrifice" (144). Then he repeated that "in Hebrew Scripture the idea of vicarious sacrifice, insofar as it is present, is limited strictly to the cultic sphere" (ibid., 145).
\end{itemize}
Suffering Servant Poem.

In connection with these tendencies, thus, H. L. Ginsberg argued specifically against Kaufmann and Orlinsky:

Now . . . the sense of the entire composition is that the servant has suffered in order vicariously to expiate the guilt of the many. The idea of vicarious expiation is almost unparalleled . . . hence a natural reluctance . . . to accept the plain meaning of the fourth Servant song. But the scientific method is to accept the unique as unique.123

As shown above, the fact that vicarious suffering of an innocent person is unknown in the OT has been used to argue against the existence of the concept of substitution in the Suffering Servant Poem. It seems, however, that a good parallel could be found in the Israelite cult. Rodriguez asserted:

What we have in this poem is something unique, never seen before (52:15). The prophet seems to be at pains trying to explain that which has not been heard before. It is here where the cultic language becomes extremely important for him. He uses it especially to describe the experience of the Servant as a sacrificial substitute. That the suffering and death of an individual could be interpreted in terms of sacrificial substitution was something unknown before in Israel. Sacrificial substitution was possible only in the cultus through a sacrificial animal. If the experience of the Servant was to be interpreted as achieving atonement for the sinner, the only way left to do so was through the usage of cultic language. That was what the prophet did.124

Rodriguez convincingly showed that cultic terminology was used in the Suffering Servant Poem "in an effort to interpret the experience of the Servant in terms of sacrificial substitution."125 In the last chapter of his dissertation he investigated three cultic-related texts (Gen 22:1-19; Exod 12:1-13:16; Isa 52:13-53:12) referred to quite

125Rodriguez, 307; cf. also 300-302.
often in the debate over the idea of sacrificial substitution. He dealt with the Poem from the perspective of the Israelite cultus, but only as one of the three texts in the final section of that chapter.\footnote{Ibid., 276-302.} Furthermore, because he was mainly interested in the idea of substitution, his interpretation of the Poem seems to leave much to be desired in that it is neither based on a penetrating study nor on a comprehensive study from the literary, linguistic, and textual point of view.

Recently J. Alec Motyer also rightly pointed out that the issues concerning the Suffering Servant Song should be clarified by the "cultic interpretation."\footnote{J. Alec Motyer, \textit{The Prophecy of Isaiah: An Introduction and Commentary} (Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity, 1993), 422-44, esp. 426. Even though Motyer did not make it clear which cult he meant, we can understand from his commentary on the Suffering Servant pericope that he meant the Hebrew cult.} However, he neither explained in detail what this interpretation is, nor developed it consistently and fully.

**Summary**

This survey of literature was restricted to the background of the Suffering Servant Poem and the meaning of the Servant's suffering in light of scholars’ recent tendencies.

Many scholars have recognized that the Suffering Servant Poem contains the language of some cultic background. The proponents of the mythological interpretation of the Poem have suggested that the origin of its cultic background is to be found in ancient Near Eastern mythological cults.

The idea of the Suffering Servant has been regarded to have its origin in the Sumerian myth and cult of Tammuz or the Ugaritic myth and cult of Baal. Besides, the Suffering Servant has been understood in the light of the king's experience in the ritual of the Babylonian \textit{akītu} festival, who was the chief representative of Marduk or in the light...
of the custom of a substitute king (sār pūḥi) in Babylonia and Assyria.

This mythological interpretation, however, was shown to be based on superficial similarities between the Suffering Servant Poem and the ancient Near Eastern texts, ignoring their essential differences. The most significant difference is the unique idea of the Servant's vicarious expiation. Furthermore, now many scholars contend that biblical studies, which were based on the Frazerian thesis of dying and rising gods (Tammuz, Baal, Marduk, etc.) with its patternism of the myth and ritual, should be drastically revised or laid to rest. For the present, scholarly consensus seems to be that the thesis of dying and rising gods is untenable.

Therefore, insofar as the language of the Suffering Servant Poem had any cultic background, it is most likely to have been in the Hebrew cultus. The mythological interpretation, however, seems to have created an awareness of the Hebrew cultic dimension of the Suffering Servant Poem, which is a result of the counteraction to its emphasis on the ancient Near Eastern cultic background. In that sense it has given a clue and an impetus to the Hebrew cultic interpretation of the Suffering Servant Poem, which this study undertakes.

One of the recent tendencies in the study of the Poem is connected with the issue of whether the death of the Servant is mentioned or not. Some scholars have contended that the language of the suffering, and even of the death, of the Servant is to be taken rhetorically as hyperbolic or metaphorical rather than literal, and thus that the Song does not portray the death of the Servant. It has been argued against such a position, however, that the sound process to the issue of the Servant's death should be from the language to the interpretation, recognizing the relevance of language to interpretation. Besides, it is questioned, "On what basis does one decide where the literal ends and the metaphorical begins or where the metaphorical ends and the literal begins?"

Some have also asserted, on the basis of the ambiguity of the words and phrases
in the Poem, that it does not report the death of the Servant or that the issue of his death is one of enigmas of the Poem. However, it has been maintained that, though some of the words or phrases used might seem to be ambiguous, the total linguistic picture and its very natural sequence in the Poem irrefutably stand for the death of the Servant.

Another important tendency has been to deny that the sufferings of the Servant are in any way vicarious. However, it was pointed out first of all that those who deny his vicarious suffering usually have a pre-understanding of his identity and of the "many" whose sins he bore, and that the pre-understanding is then used to evaluate the presence of the concept of vicarious suffering in the Poem. If this criticism is really right, then such an approach should be considered methodologically unsound, employing a somewhat circular reasoning. Methodologically, what should be determined first is what the text says, and then the content of the text should be used as the basic criterion for the identification of the Servant and of the "many."

Some scholars have also contended that the suffering of the Servant is not substitutionary because his suffering, as a result of his special call and mission as God's spokesman, was not different from that of the other prophets. However, the suffering of the Servant is not to be regarded as equal to that of the prophets because of its uniqueness, both quantitative and qualitative, that is, that he suffered more than any other person in Israel and that his suffering was of a unique nature with its exclusive ultimate results. Besides, his suffering is not the result of his proclamation of God's messages in that the total picture of the Servant is characterized by his extreme silence and passivity. Furthermore, it was also recognized that the uniqueness of the Servant is that his suffering is the means of his mission, while others suffered in consequence of their mission.

Several scholars have maintained, on the basis of a detailed investigation of the words and phrases of Isa 53 which many have taken to indicate vicariousness, that none
of them has the notion of vicarious suffering in the OT, and that the Hebrew text itself does not permit the theory of vicarious suffering. Even though it might be true that several words and phrases in the passage have been wrongly thought to describe vicarious suffering, it was pointed out that the investigation showed only that they could be otherwise interpreted, but not that they should be.

The fact that vicarious suffering of an innocent person is unknown elsewhere in the OT has been also used, along with the covenant concept or the concept of collective retribution, to argue against the existence of the idea of substitution in the Suffering Servant Poem. It was argued, however, that if the suffering of the Servant was to be interpreted as achieving atonement for the sinner, the only way to express this was through Hebrew cultic language, which was what the author of the Poem did.

It can be concluded, therefore, that the background of the Suffering Servant Poem is to be found in the Israelite cultus, and that thus the degree and the nature of the Servant's sufferings are to be determined by a penetrating as well as comprehensive study of the text, specifically from the Hebrew cultic perspective. However, there has never been any careful, comprehensive study of Hebrew cultic allusions in connection with the Suffering Servant of Yahweh. Therefore, there seems to be an urgent need to investigate the cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant Poem to settle various problems which have been and are still under debate. The cultic allusions might clarify what the Suffering Servant signifies, that is to say, what his role and significance may be.
CHAPTER III

LEXICAL ANALYSIS

Introduction

According to the survey of literature presented in the previous chapter, many scholars have asserted that the Suffering Servant Poem clearly has the Hebrew cultus as its background.

As already defined in the first chapter of this research, the term "cult" refers to practices related to the ritual system by which people, individually and collectively, interacted with their God or gods. When it comes to the Hebrew ritual system, these practices appear especially in the sanctuary, sacrifices, and other priestly activities.

Cultic allusions are found in the technical terms and phrases/clauses which are either terminologically or ideologically connected with the Hebrew cultic institution, especially in the book of Leviticus. Thus the criteria employed here in the selection of cultic allusions are: (1) their terminological existence in the Hebrew cultic legislation, (2) their ideological connections with it, and (3) their intertextual connections with Hebrew cultic texts through similar associations of terms. According to these criteria, cultic terms and phrases/clauses will be selected from the terms and phrases/clauses in the Suffering Servant pericope. Then their meanings will be checked, and their usages in the OT will be investigated and analyzed, especially against the background of the Hebrew sacrificial system. Therefore, the investigation of the cultic terms and phrases/clauses will primarily consist of a lexicographical and contextual study of them. Especially the associated terms or phrases/clauses, which occur in juxtaposition or
parallel with them, will also be noted. During the lexical investigation relevant
textual-critical issues are also to be discussed, and some exegetical analysis will be
carried out to show what the cultic terms and phrases/clauses mean in the Suffering
Servant Poem.

The Suffering Servant Poem clearly seems to contain a few Hebrew cultic terms
and clauses that are significant for its interpretation and thus that need to be investigated.

Cultic Terminology

The term מִשְׁחַת occurs in Isa 52:14 of the MT. It is pointed as a noun of the
verb, מָשַׁח, "go to ruin," and thus it means "disfigurement."\(^1\)

According to the Hebrew consonantal text, however, מִשְׁחַת occurs 26 times in the
OT. In the MT, it is vocalized 8 times as מָשַׁח,\(^3\) 13 as מִשְׁחַת,\(^4\) 3 as מִשׁחת,\(^5\) and 2 as מָשְׁחָת.\(^6\) Thus, as for the root of מִשְׁחַת in Isa 52:14, the contextually impossible מִשְׁחַת ("pit")
being eliminated, two possible choices seem to be left: מִשְׁחַת and מָשָׁח.\(^7\)

---

\(^1\)Cf. BDB, 1007-1008. For a debate on the basic meaning of the root, see J.
Conrad, "מָשַׁח šâh at," TDOT, 14:583-84.

\(^2\)Cf. BDB, 1007-1008.

\(^3\)There are two kinds of מִשְׁחַת: (1) f.s. cstr. of מֶשֶׁחַ "anointing" (Exod 30:25 [2x],
31; Lev 10:7; 21:12) or "consecrated portion" (Lev 7:35 [2x]); (2) m.s. cstr. of מֶשֶׁח "disfigurement" (Isa 52:14). The term מֶשֶׁח forms a construct chain with "Aaron" and
"his sons" in Lev 7:35 and with "his appearance/form" in Isa 52:14. In all the other
passages the term מֶשֶׁח is in a construct state with the preceding מֶשֶׁח (which thus means "anointing oil") and they in turn form a construct chain with מֶשֶׁח in Exod 30:25 (2x) and

\(^4\)Qal pf. 2 m.s. of מָשַׁח "anoint" (Gen 31:13; Exod 28:41; 29:7, 36; 30:26; 40:9, 10,
11, 13, 15 [2x]; 1 Sam 16:3; 1 Kgs 19:15).

\(^5\)The preposition מ plus the noun מֶשֶׁח "pit" (Ps 103:4; Isa 38:17; Jonah 2:7).

\(^6\)Hophal ptcp. m.s. of מָשַׁח "corrupt" (Prov 25:26; Mal 1:14).

\(^7\)Jan L. Koole also concluded: "All things considered, it seems that, generally
speaking, we have to choose between a derivation from מֶשֶׁח = 'to anoint' and מֶשֶׁח = 'to
There have been several scholarly attempts to interpret מְשַׁחַת in Isa 52:14 as a verbal form of מְשַׁח, "anoint." W. A. Wordsworth argued that the ambiguity lies between the noun מִשְׁחַת ("disfigurement) and מָשַׁחְתָּ ("You have anointed").

Wordsworth's argument, however, seems to be tenuous not only because the pronoun "You" (i.e., Yahweh) does not logically match with the previous "you" (i.e., the Servant) but also because above all things the pronoun for Yahweh occurs in the section of Yahweh's speech.

Dominique Barthélemy took מְשַׁחַת, the reading of 1QIsa, as evidence to argue that the verbal root was מָשַׁח ("to anoint"). According to Barthélemy, thus, the passage

8W. A. Wordsworth, En-Roeh: The Prophecies of Isaiah the Seer with Habakkuk and Nahum (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1939), 384-85. Wordsworth mentioned: "He [the author of the Song] seems to have chosen deliberately a form which would suggest two contrasted meanings at once" (385, n. 1).

9It has often been suggested that this pronoun be emended to "him." Though two Hebrew manuscripts, the Syriac version, and the Targum support this reading (cf. BHS, 759), the other manuscripts including both 1QIsa and 1QIsb support the MT (cf. Oswalt, Isaiah 40-66, 373, n. 53; for 1QIsa, see The Dead Sea Scrolls of St. Mark's Monastery, vol. 1, ed. Millar Burrows, with the ass. of John C. Trever and William H. Brownlee [New Haven, CT: The American Schools of Oriental Research, 1950]; for 1QIsb, see אוצר המגילות הגנוזות, ed. Eleazar L. Sukenik [Jerusalem: Bialik Foundation and the Hebrew University, 1954]). As Oswalt mentioned, "This kind of inconsistency in pronoun reference is not untypical of the Hebrew prophets" (Isaiah 40-66, 373, n. 53). The reason is: "In poetic (or prophetic) language there sometimes occurs . . . a more or less abrupt transition from one person to another" (GKC, 462; cf. North, Second Isaiah, 227; Motyer, 425).

10See The Dead Sea Scrolls of St. Mark's Monastery; cf. BHS, 759.

means, "I have anointed him, so that his appearance surpasses that of a man." William H. Brownlee first argued, on the assumption of the correctness of MT's reading מִשְׁחַת, that the construct form "introduces an ambiguity into the Hebrew text which could occur in no other form—mišḥ: at being as equally possible the construct of the noun anointing (mišḥ: āh) as of the noun marring (mišḥ: āt)." He then contended, following Barthélemy, that "a supposed messianic inference" in this ambiguous word מִשְׁחַת is made clear by the reading מָשַּחְתִּי ("I anointed") in the Qumran Isaiah Scroll.12

It is to be noted, however, that the verb מָשַׁח, which occurs predominantly in the Qal, has as its accusative object either things or persons, but not any human body

Brownlee, 11, italics his.

12Cf. ibid. Samuel Davide Luzzatto already suggested a similar reason for the MT's unusual vocalization, according to Arie Rubinstein, "Isaiah 52:14–מִשְׁחַת–and the DS1a Variant," *Biblica* 35 (1954): 475: "Luzzatto adopts the view of one of his pupils to the effect that 'the punctators [sic] designedly vocalized the word מִשְׁחַת in order to alter a meaning alleging blemish and fault to one suggesting the anointing oil of his God'." See Luzzatto's Hebrew and Italian commentary on Isaiah, ספר ישׁעיה: Il Profeta Isaia (Padova: A. Bianchi, 1855), 548.

Strongly arguing for the Messianic interpretation in regard to the MT's vocalization, Brownlee mentioned that the Targum supports the interpretation by its reading of 52:13, "Behold, my servant, the Messiah . . ." (11). However, in his response (to Reider's critique) in "Certainly Mašah ti!," *BASOR* 134 (1954): 27, he said that "the issue between us concerns Essene interpretation of Isa 52:14-15, not the original sense of the passage." For his later position, see also his *The Meaning of the Qumran Scrolls for the Bible: With Special Attention to the Book of Isaiah* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1964), 204-15, especially 205.

Very recently, however, George J. Brooke took notice of Brownlee's position and then added a significant remark that "it has become increasingly apparent that there are no sectarian variants in 1Qlsa or, for that matter, in any of the Isaiah scrolls from Qumran. The same can confidently be said about the rest of the so-called biblical manuscripts from Qumran: they do not contain sectarian exegetical interventions" ("On Isaiah at Qumran," in "As Those Who Are Taught": *The Interpretation of Isaiah from the LXX to the SBL*, ed. Claire Mathews McGinnis and Patricia K. Tull [Atlanta, GA: Society of Biblical Literature, 2006], 76).


Thus, Joseph Reider rightly pointed out: "What sense is there in a phrase like 'I anointed his appearance'?  Surely one anoints a person, not his appearance."  Besides, the reading of 1QIsa was considered to be due to the **ḥireq compaginis** which is used only to emphasize the construct state, with no change of meaning involved.  

---


Anointing a person immediately reminds us of the head to be anointed, and thus it is so easy for us to regard the head as the accusative object of the verb **מָשַׁח** "anoint."  However, there is no case in the OT in which one's head is the accusative object of the verb.  Even when the head is clearly mentioned with regard to anointing (5x), (1) the act itself is described with the phrase "pour (**יָצַק**) the anointing oil upon one's head," and then the fact "anoint one" is added to it (Exod 29:7; Lev 8:12; cf. Ps 133:2) or (2) the act itself is described with the phrase "pour (**יָצַק**) the vial of oil upon one's head," and then the verb **מָשַׁח** is used performatively with Yahweh as the first-person subject (2 Kgs 9:3, 6; cf. 1 Sam 10:1).  In Ps 23:5 the head is used as the accusative object of the different verb **שֵׁןדָּ** (**Piel**).  Thus, even though, as Brownlee, The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 213-15, argued, the terms **רָאֵם** and **רַפַע** in some passages have such concrete meanings as "face" and "body" respectively, his conclusion fails.

---

17Joseph Reider, "On **Mšk** in the Qumran Scrolls," BASOR 134 (1954): 27; for more discussions between Brownlee and Reider, see BASOR 134 (1954): 28.  For other criticisms on Brownlee's position, see Millar Burrows, The Dead Sea Scrolls (New York: Viking Press, 1955), 313-14; Alfred Guillaume, "Some Readings in the Dead Sea Scroll of Isaiah," JBL 76 (1957): 41-42; Martin J. Wyngaarden, "The Servant of Jehovah in Isaiah and the Dead Sea Scrolls," BETS 1/3 (Summer 1958): 20; Rodríguez, 289.  Burrows stated that "the idea of anointing a person's appearance seems intrinsically unlikely" (314).  Guillaume remarked: "I would agree with M. Burrows' statement . . . and would regard his judgment as a model of restraint" (41).  Rodríguez also mentioned that "the idea of anointing does not fit here very well--what would be anointed would be the 'appearance' of the Servant" (289).  However, suggesting that another meaning for the verb **פָּשְׁח** must be found, Guillaume resorted to an Arabic root **masakha** which "in its primitive root means 'to gall the back of a camel and to exhaust it,'" and he somehow translated the Hebrew word into "I marred" (42).  James Barr followed Guillaume's thesis and translated Isa 52:14bα into "so did I marr his appearance" in his Comparative Philology and the Text of the Old Testament (Oxford: Clarendon, 1968), 285 (cf. 330); idem, Comparative Philology and the Text of the Old Testament: With Additions and Corrections (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1987), 285 (cf. 330).  However, this hypothesis of the Arabic root seems to be very tenuous, for nowhere else is the alleged root attested in the OT, as was pointed out by Brownlee, The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 215.

---

Furthermore, 1QIsb supports the MT, as was correctly pointed out by Oswalt.\textsuperscript{19}

Especially to be noted is the fact that such a type of amazement (사업)\textsuperscript{20} in Isa 52:14 does not match with the idea of the Servant’s being anointed but with that of his disfigurement in vs. 14b.\textsuperscript{21}  Athalya Brenner suggested that מִשְׁחַת is a play on מָשַׁח  ("to

38.  As Oswalt, 373, n. 54, rightly pointed out, Driver mistakenly referred to 49:41 instead of 49:7, where such a kind of reading with a h\textit{ireq compaginis} is found.  See, above all things, GKC, 248-54, esp. 252-53.  Skehan supported Reider's position: "The explanation by J. Reider of the reading mšh in Isa 52:14 [of 1QIsa] as containing a h\textit{ireq compaginis}, the final vowel i occasionally used, especially with participles, in the construct state, receives support from a reading of the same scroll in Isa 48:7 . . . and it has nothing to do with anointing" (38).

19Oswalt, 373, n. 54; see אוצר המגילות הגנוזות.

20The verb שפם means "be desolate, be deserted, be uninhabited" or "shudder, be appalled," and its adjective שפם "desolated, deserted, uninhabited." The cognate nouns מְשַׁמָּה and שְׁמָמָה mean "desolation" or "horror," whereas שִׁמְמָה "desolation" and שִׁמָּמוֹן "horror/shuddering." Especially to be noted are the parallel terms and phrases: (1) verbs שפם "hiss," שפם "faint, be feeble," שפם "be astonished, be horrified," שפם I "shudder," רָעַם "tremble, be terrified," and דָּרַך "thunder"; (2) adjectives שפם "trembling"; (3) nouns שפם "hissing," שפם "hissing," שפם "reproach," שפם I "shuddering," and שפם I "terror"; (4) phrases נוּעַ יָד "wag one's hand" and נוּרְוָה "shake one's head."  See HALOT, 2:649; 4:1553-54, 1563-66.  As Koole, 266, rightly observed, the term שפם and its derivatives refer to "a terrible situation in which usually certain regions but sometimes people may find themselves," but also to the consternation over the situation.  Particularly they are mostly used to indicate the utterly devastating results of God's punishment and/or the appalled response of those who observe them (see, e.g., Lev 26:32; 1 Kgs 9:8//2 Chr 7:21; Jer 18:16; 19:8; 49:17; 50:13; Ezek 26:16, 32; 27:35; 35:12; 36:3, 4; Dan 9:18).  Gerhard F. Hasel mentioned: "Various usages of words which derive from the root (šmm) express three ideas: (1) a psychological condition of a shocking horror within a person; (2) devastation/desolation as it relates to the sanctuary/temple; and (3) judgment that is divinely decreed" ("The 'Little Horn,' the Heavenly Sanctuary, and the Time of the End: A Study of Daniel 8:9-14," in Symposium on Daniel: Introductory and Exegetical Studies, ed. Frank B. Holbrook, DARCOM, vol. 2 [Washington, DC: Biblical Research Institute, 1986], 443). For relevant Isaianic passages, see, e.g., 1:7; 5:9; 6:11; 13:9; 15:6; 17:9; 24:12; 49:8, 19; 52:14; 54:1; 61:4; 62:4; 64:9.  For detailed treatments of the verb and their derivatives, see I. Meyer, "שפם sāmam," TDOT, 15:238-48; F. Stolz, "שפם šām To Lie Deserted," TLOT, 3:1372-75; Hermann J. Austel, "שפם (šāmēm) Be Desolate, Appalled," TWOT, 2:936-37; Tyler F. Williams, "שפם," NIDOTTE, 4:167-71; cf. Rikki E. Watts, "The Meaning of 'ālāw yiqra'ū mel'ākim pihem in Isaiah 52:15," VT 15 (1990): 327-35.

21Brownlee mentioned later: "This particular type of amazement [사업] is not congenial to the idea 'I anointed' in 52:14 of 1QIsa, so that this reading can not possibly be original; but it is defensible as a Qumrân procedure of atomizing the text" (The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 295, n. 10, italics mine). Dominique Barthélémy later proposed to regard מִשְׁחַת as the noun "anointing" and interpreted the passage as follows: "his appearance (will be object of) an anointing more than human, and his form
anoint"), which seems to be traced back to the alleged idea of "anointing." In this connection Roy E. Gane argued: "Here is a person who should be anointed, but is marred instead. So those who are anointed (kings) are astonished. The word play highlights the irony." Not only in consternation but also in revulsion the "many" turned away from the Servant "who appears to have been rightly struck by divine wrath and thus avoid[ed] any risk."

Others regarded מִשְׁחַת in Isa 52:14 as a corruption and emended it to שְׁחַתנִי ("to become marred, to deteriorate, to decay"), a Niphal perfect form of the verb תָּשַׁח. It has been usually repointed as מָשְׁחָת, a Hophal participle from the verb. However, there has been no scholarly consensus in regard to its emendation or revocalization.

---


23Gane, personal communication, February 20, 2008, Berrien Springs, MI.

24Koole, 266.


26Cf. BHS, 759; Rubinstein, 475, 479; Clines, 14; Roger N. Whybray, Isaiah 40-66, NCBC, reprint of the 1978 ed. published by Oliphants, London (Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Pub. Co., 1981), 170; Brooke, 75. Landy mentioned in his "The Last Three Suffering Servant Songs," 70, n. 1: "I adopt here the usual emendation of the MT מִשְׁחַת to מָשְׁחָת." Though Rodriguez, 289, mentioned that "it is probably better to repoint the word as a Hophal participle," he argued: "One could perhaps take it as an unattested noun in the construct state and retain the MT reading" (289, n. 2). Oswalt argued: "The proposal (cf. BHS) to correct the MT reading from an adjective to a Hophal participle is unnecessary. This use of a substantive or an adjective in place of a participle is a characteristic of this poem (cf. 53:3: "a cessation of men"; "a hiding of face")" (373, n. 54).

27Reider mentioned that "the form mišḥat is incongruous, but either we read it
According to a Babylonian tradition of vocalization, the word is pointed מֻשְׁחַת ("spoiled," "ruined"), a Hophal participle from the verb שָׁחַת. Similarly, one medieval manuscript of the Hebrew Old Testament points it מָשְׁחָת. The Septuagint (LXX) interprets αδοξήσης ("[your appearance] will be deglorified/without glory"), followed by the Vulgate. The Targum דרשׁ ("was wretched") may have thought of the verb שׁוּחַ ("sink down," "be depressed").

Aquila's, Symmachus's, and Theodotion's Greek moškāt (Part. Hophal), or else explain it as niškāt (Perf. or Part. Niphal), the mem due to the meeting of two nuns [sic]" (27). Some scholars have tried to explain the form as a combination of two readings. Torrey regarded it as a combination of the Niphal ptcp. נִשְׁחָת with the Hophal ptcp. מָשְׁחָת, though he thought the former seems more likely the original reading (416). Similarly Muilenburg argued: "The word . . . represents a double reading in the Hebrew, the Niphal participle nishkāth and the Hophal participle moshkāth (so Syriac)" (617).

So argued by Thomas (cited by Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 394). The reading מֻשְׁחַת was adduced as long ago as 1863 by S. Pinsker, Einleitung in das Babylonisch-Hebräische Punktationsystem (Wien, 1863), 155-56 (Hebrew text), cited by Franz Delitzsch, Biblical Commentary on the Prophecies of Isaiah, trans. from the 4th ed., with an introd. by S. R. Driver, vol. 2 (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1890), 283, Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 394, and Rubinstein, 475. See also BHS, 759; John D. W. Watts, Isaiah 34-66, WBC, vol. 24 (Waxo, TX: Word Books, 1987), 225. For opinions about the Tiberian and Babylonian punctuators' vocalization, see S. Pinsker, Einleitung in das Babylonisch-Hebräische Punktationssystem (Vienna, 1863), 155-56 (Hebrew text), cited by Delitzsch, Isaiah, 283, and Rubinstein, 475-76. However, for a serious doubt on the existence of the Babylonian tradition as to מֻשְׁחַת in Isa 52:14, see Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 394. Rubinstein also contended that "there is not extant, so far as we know, any Biblical MS with Babylonian vocalization which contains Isaiah 52:14" (477).


translation of the OT\textsuperscript{32} and the Syriac version of the OT\textsuperscript{33} seems to support the MT.\textsuperscript{34}

In view of the ancient textual variations, John D. W. Watts mentioned, "With so many possible roots, the Heb. word is a teaser. MT's pointing is probably as good as any."\textsuperscript{35} However, without any firm textual basis, no arbitrary textual emendations are to be avoided and thus the pointing of the Masoretic Text is to be upheld. Therefore, it has to be admitted that Isa 52:14b refers to the disfigurement of the Servant's appearance/form and that the word מִשְׁחַת is a derivation from the verb חָשַׁת.

The verb חָשַׁת, which occurs 162 times in the OT,\textsuperscript{36} is mostly used with the meaning of "ruin, destroy," but 26 times with the meanings of "behave corruptly, corrupt (oneself)" or "be corrupt."\textsuperscript{37} Its nominal derivatives, מָשְׁחָת "(ritual) corruption," מִשְׁחַת "disfigurement," and מַשְׁחֵת "destruction," occur only once each in Lev 22:25, Isa 52:14, 52:13 ("Behold, my servant, the Messiah . . .") in support of their rendering of יָמֵשֵׁחת into "I anointed," are to note Targum's non-Messianic reading of מָשְׁחָת, which is almost similar in its nuance to the MT's.

\textsuperscript{32} Translated by John Chrysostom as corrupta est (Cf. BHS, 759; Isaias, 320). See also J.D.W. Watts, 225.

\textsuperscript{33} Rendered into mh;bl (cf. BHS, 759; Isaiah, ed. the Peshi\textit{t}a Institute, The Old Testament in Syriac According to the Peshi\textit{t}a Version, Part III, fascicle 1 [Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1987], 96). Brownlee, \textit{The Meaning of the Qumrān Scrolls}, 294, translated it into "[he will] disfigure." See also Guillaume, 41; J.D.W. Watts, 225.

\textsuperscript{34} Cf. J.D.W. Watts, 225.

\textsuperscript{35} Ibid.

\textsuperscript{36} It occurs 115 times in the Hiphil, 39 in the Piel, 6 in the Niphal, and 2 in the Hophal. See Mandelkern, 1162-64; Lisowsky, 1424-25; Even-Shoshan, 1132-33; \textit{VOT}, 432; Conrad, 583; D. Vetter, "חָשַׁתוּ p./hi. To Ruin," \textit{TLOT}, 3:1317.

\textsuperscript{37} For the Hiphil of חָשַׁת, see Gen 6:12; Deut 4:16, 25; 31:29 (2x); Judg 2:19; 2 Chr 26:16; 27:2; Pss 14:1//53:1 [H 2]; Isa 1:4; Jer 6:28; Ezek 16:47; 23:11; Zeph 3:7; for the Piel, see Exod 32:7; Deut 9:12; 32:5; Ezek 28:17; Hos 9:9; Mal 2:8; for the Niphal, see Gen 6:11, 12; Ezek 20:44; for the Hophal, see Prov 25:26; Mal 1:14. Besides, the Aramaic equivalent חָשַׁת occurs three times in Dan 2:9 and 6:4 (H 5; 2x), all in the Peal pass. ptcp. f.s. form with a sense of moral corruption. There seems to be almost no discernable difference in the translation of the verbal forms, but their nuances are made clearer by the context (cf. Conrad, 589; Vetter, 1318). See also \textit{HALOT}, 4:1469-72.
and Ezek 9:1 respectively. From the perspective of the Hebrew cult the usage of the root שׁחת in the sense of "corruption" seems to be significant for the following reasons.

First, in cultic contexts מָשְׁחָת is applied in Lev 22:25 and Mal 1:14 to animals that, because of some physical defects, could not be used as sacrificial victims. The cultic association of the term מָשְׁחָת is reinforced by the fact that in Lev 22:25 it occurs in synonymous parallelism with מוּם ("blemish/defect") as the more common term to refer to such animals. Besides, its cultic association is confirmed by the fact that the term מָשְׁחָת in turn shows itself as an antithetic parallel of תָּמִים ("unblemished/without defect") twice in the vss. 19-21 and once in Num 19:2. The reason is that the term מָשְׁחָת, as a technical term of cultic acceptability (cf. רָצוֹן/Niphal) for sacrificial animals, mainly occurs, apart from only two occurrences in Exodus (12:5; 29:1), in the so-called cultic writings, that is, Leviticus (19x), Numbers (19x), and Ezekiel (11x).

Furthermore, in Lev 21:17-23 the term מָשְׁחָת designates priests five times (vss. 17, 18, 21...

---

38Cf. Mandelkern, 1163-64; Lisowsky, 871; Conrad, 583, 593-94; Vetter, 1317. The Hiphil participle מַשְׁחִית, as a substantival verbal form of שָׁחַת, also often (20x) displays the meaning "destruction/ruin."

39Precisely speaking, the term מָשְׁחָת is a muqtal pattern substantive from a Hophal participle מָשְׁחַת (cf. HALOT, 2:614, 644) and it means "(ritual) corruption" (cf. BDB, 1008).

40Here the term מָשְׁחַת (Hophal ptcpl. m.s. of שָׁחַת) occurs and contextually means "what is blemished or a blemished thing," more precisely "a blemished animal." The same verbal form appears elsewhere only in Prov 25:26: "As a trampled fountain, and a corrupted (מָשְׁחַת) spring, so is a righteous man (צַדִּיק) who gives way before the wicked (רָשָׁע)."

41In the OT the term מָשְׁחָת is used not only in the sense of physical defect of man or animal (for man, see Lev 21:17, 18, 21 [2x], 23; 24:19, 20; 2 Sam 14:25; Cant 4:7; Dan 1:4 [רָצוֹן]; for animal, see Lev 22:20, 21, 25; Num 19:2; Deut 15:21 [2x]; 17:1) but also of moral defect (Deut 32:5; Job 11:15; 31:7 [רָצוֹן]; cf. Prov 9:7). See BDB, 548; HALOT, 2:539, 556.

42See Lev 1:3, 10; 3:1, 6; 4:3, 23, 28, 32; 5:15, 18; 6:6 [H 5:25]; 9:2, 3; 14:10 [2x]; 22:19, 21; 23:12, 18; Num 6:14 [3x]; 19:2; 28:3, 9, 11, 19, 31; 29:2, 8, 13, 17, 20, 23, 26, 29, 32, 36; Ezek 43:22, 23 [2x], 25; 45:18, 23; 46:4 [2x], 6 [2x], 13. Cf. BDB, 1071; HALOT, 4:1749.
who, because of certain physical defects, could not officiate at the sanctuary.

Verses 18-20\(^{43}\) have a list of physical defects similar to the one for animals in Lev 22:22-24,\(^{44}\) and thus any blemish (מָשְׁחָת/מוּם) that made an animal unfit for sacrifice also made a priest disqualified for his office.\(^{45}\)

Second, as for the cultic association of the verb נָשָׁף, Exod 32:7 (//Deut 9:12) seems to be very significant. Here Yahweh depicts with נָשָׁף Piel Israel's spiritual corruption due to their golden calf worship at Mt. Sinai. Through their apostasy to idolatry the Israelites in their entirety had a moral defect that separated them from God. Rejecting God, they became like a defective animal or a disqualified priest who is unable to come into the presence of God in the sanctuary.\(^{46}\) Because of their corruption, Yahweh was about to destroy the Israelites, even though their destruction could be avoided by Moses' intercession and God's forgiveness.\(^{47}\)

Third, the cultic connotation of the verb נָשָׁף is clearly hinted in the unique and

\(^{43}\)They are placed in the chiastic center of vss. 17-23: A: general command for a disqualified priest (vss. 17-18a)/B: list of physical defects (vss. 18b-20)/A\(^{1}\): specific command for a disqualified priest (vss. 21-23).


\(^{45}\)Cf. Rodríguez, 289.


\(^{47}\)According to Deut 9:26, Moses pleaded with Yahweh not to "destroy (נָשָׁף Hiphil) your people." In response to Moses' intercession, but exclusively from Yahweh's mercy and grace, Yahweh's forgiveness was granted to them. According to Deut 10:10, "Yahweh was not willing to destroy (נָשָׁף Hiphil) you [i.e., the Israelites]." Thus, the verb נָשָׁף is used in the narrative of the golden calf incident to describe not only the corruption of the people (Exod 32:7; Deut 9:12) but also their destruction, which was avoided (Deut 9:26; 10:10).

The verb is also employed many times not only in connection with the sins of the antediluvians and God's punishment upon them (Gen 6:11, 12 [2x], 13, 17; 9:11, 15) but also with God's punishment upon Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen 13:10; 18:28 [2x], 31, 32; 19:13 [2x], 14, 29). Cf. Victor P. Hamilton, "נָשָׁף (shāḥ-āl) Destroy, Corrupt," TWOT, 2:917; Conrad, 588-90, 592.
significant text Deut 32:5. Although physical requirements for sacrificial animals or priests are not dealt with here, הָשַׁת Piel is placed in parallel with סֶמֶן. Its cultic connotation becomes clear especially in the light of the fact that, although there exists a Hebrew verb exclusively used for moral corruption, the cultic term מַעְמָה is used here instead. The Hebrew verb is הָשַׁת Niphal, which occurs three times in the OT (Job 15:16; Pss 14:3; 53:3 [H 4]), and particularly in Pss 14:3 and 53:3 [H 4] it stands in parallel with הָשַׁת Hiphil in 14:1 and 53:1 [H 2] respectively.

Such observations seem to shed new light upon the usage of the verb הָשַׁת in connection with the sinful condition of the antediluvians in Gen 6:11 (הָשַׁת Niphal) and 12 (הָשַׁת Niphal and Hiphil). The usage there seems to have a cultic connotation, especially because the verb makes a striking contrast to the term (צַדִּיק//תָּמִים) in vs. 9 as one of Noah's good attributes. As already mentioned, the term תָּמִים, a technical term of cultic acceptability for sacrificial animals, occurs in a cultic context as an antithetic parallel of מַעְמָה twice in Lev 22:19-21 and once in Num 19:2. The term מַעְמָה also shows itself in Lev 22:25 as a synonymous parallel of הָשַׁת. In addition, is it possible for us to

48Cf. BDB, 47; HALOT, 1:54.

49The verb הָשַׁת is also employed in connection with God's punishment upon them (הָשַׁת Hiphil in vs. 13; הָשַׁת Piel in vs. 17 and 9:11, 15). Thus, not only the usage of the verb הָשַׁת in association with the golden calf incident (Israel's corruption: הָשַׁת Piel in Exod 32:7 and Deut 9:12; their avoided destruction: הָשַׁת Hiphil in Deut 9:26 and 10:10) but also the usage of the verb הָשַׁת "blot out/wipe out" (Exod 32:32-33; Deut 9:14; cf. the phrase "from under heaven" in Deut 9:14) is a clear reminder of the corruption of the antediluvian people (הָשַׁת Niphal in Gen 6:11, 12a; חָשַׁת Hiphil in vs. 12b) and God's punitive destruction for it (הָשַׁת in vs. 7 [cf. the phrase "from the face of the earth”]; חָשַׁת Hiphil in vs. 13; חָשַׁת Piel in vs. 17 and 9:11, 15). It seems, therefore, that the narrative of the Flood and that of the golden calf incident are parallel instances, even with the covenant motif included (cf. Gen 6:18; 9:8-17; Exod 34:10-28).

50The striking contrast is also made in an oracle against Tyre's king, where Ezekiel describes the case of a cherub, who once was תָּמִים (Ezek 28:15), but then who "corrupted himself" (חָשַׁת Piel) because of pride (vs. 17). This case shows some parallels with the case of King Uzziah, who did "what was right" (הַיָּשָׁר, 2 Chr 26:4; cf. vs. 5), but then who "acted corruptly" (חָשַׁת Hiphil) because of pride (vs. 16). The terminological and phraseological links are the verb חָשַׁת and "heart was lifted up" (גָּבַהּ לֵב).
see such a cultic connotation of "unacceptability" due to moral corruption even in the usage of the verb שָׁחַת for God's punishment upon Sodom and Gomorrah (魉 Piel in Gen 13:10; 19:13, 29; שָׁחַת Hiphil in 18:28 [2x], 31, 32; 19:13, 14)?

As clearly shown thus far, the root תָּשַׁפְּשׁ has a close cultic association in regard to physical defects that disqualify not only sacrificial animals but priests as well. In Moses' narrative of the golden calf incident, Yahweh denounced the Israelites for having corrupted (魉 Piel) themselves through apostasy (Exod 32:7//Deut 9:12). Similarly, Isaiah, in the introduction of his prophetic book, denounced the sinful, iniquitous, and rebellious people as children who act corruptly (魉 Hiphil, Isa 1:4). Thus, the

51 As already shown, the verb תָּשַׁפְּשׁ is employed many times not only in connection with the sins of the antediluvians and God's punishment upon them (Gen 6:11, 12 [2x], 13, 17; 9:11, 15) but also with the apostasy of the Israelites to idolatry at Mt. Sinai and God's avoided destruction (Exod 32:7; Deut 9:12, 26; 10:10). The verb is also used for God's punishment upon Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen 13:10; 18:28 [2x], 31, 32; 19:13 [2x], 14, 29). Besides, the subject of the verb תָּשַׁפְּשׁ with the meaning "corrupt" is mostly God's covenant people related to idolatry, and its accusative with the meaning "destroy" is most often God's covenant people and their possessions. Thus, in the light of the usage of the verb תָּשַׁפְּשׁ, its ultimate connotation seems to be the completeness of human corruption and God's punishment upon it, especially when it occurs in the same context with the two different meanings of "destroy" and "corrupt." Consequently, Yahweh in his punishment is portrayed as the Dumper, that is, the One who "dumps out" (i.e., "destroys") the "garbage" (i.e., those who "corrupted" themselves). Cf. Hamilton, 917; Conrad, 588-90, 592.

52 Isa 1:4 portrays the serious situation of Israel's depravity to sin as follows:

A  "sinful (חָטָא Qal ptcp. m.s.) nation"
   "people heavy (כָּבֵד adj. m.s. cstr.) with iniquity (עָוֹן)"
   "offspring of evil-doers (רָעַע Hiphil ptcp. m.p.)"

B  "children who act corruptly (魉 Hiphil ptcp. m.p.)"

A1  "They have forsaken (לְשָׁמַע Qal) Yahweh"
    "They have spurned (נָאַץ Piel) the Holy One of Israel"
    "They become estranged (זָוְר Niphal) [from Him]"

As shown above, this verse seems to make an internal chiasm. All the agents in wing A are nouns in the singular, while all the pronominal subjects in wing A1 are in the plural (3rd person common). The agent in wing B is a noun in the plural, and thus as a bridge prepare us to meet the plural subjects in A1. Besides, wing A seems to portray the situation of Israel's depravity in a rather static and abstract (condition-oriented) way, while wing A1 in a dynamic and concrete (action-oriented) way. The chiastic center B portrays the serious situation of Israel's corruption with a highly cultic-oriented verb, as
Israelites of Isaiah's days were doomed to God's destruction like the antediluvians (cf. 54:9), the people of Sodom and Gomorrah (cf. 1:10; 3:9), and the Israelite people who had apostatized with the golden calf at Mt. Sinai (cf. 4:4-6).

However, through the metaphor of transfer (סבל/נשׂא) not only Israel's corruption (i.e., sins) but also God's punishment upon the nation was transferred to Yahweh's Servant. Thus, as a result of his sufferings under God's punishment, the especially shown in Israel's idolatry in the golden calf incident. It is to be noted in this regard that the Israelites of Isaiah's day were "full of influences from the east and soothsayers" (2:6) and their land was "full of idols" (vs. 8).

For the seriousness of Israel's עזב Yahweh, see Yahweh's response to it with the same verb and its parallel with God's hiding of the face in Deut 31:16-17. For the seriousness of Israel's נאץ Yahweh, especially note the Kadesh-Barnea incident (Num 14:11 and 23; see Katharine D. Sakenfeld, "The Problem of Divine Forgiveness in Number 14," CBQ 37 [1975]: 321-22; cf. Korah's rebellion, Num 16:30; Israel's apostasy [Deut 31:20] and Yahweh's response to it [Deut 32:19]). For the seriousness of Israel's זוּר, see the cases of the wicked in Ps 58:3 [H 4] and of idolatry in Ezek 14:5. The term זוּר occurs three times more in Isaiah (5:24; 52:5; 60:14; cf. נְאָצָה "contempt/humiliation," 37:3). For the verbs זוּר "turn aside," נאץ "spurn," and עזב "leave, forsake," see BDB, 266, 610, 736; HALOT, 1:267; 2:658, 806-807.

53 It is to be dealt with later in the "Cultic Clauses" section.

54 See, e.g., Isa 53:4a, 5a, 6b, 8b, 10a; cf. 11bβ, 12ca. Although the Israelites of Isaiah's day had the fundamental problem of their rebellion (פשע) against Yahweh, the other two major sin terms (חטא and עון) are also quite frequently mentioned in the book of Isaiah. From its introductory section Yahweh denounced Israel as "a sinful (טאה) nation," and her people not only as "a people laden with עון ("1:4a) but also as "a rebellious people" (vss. 2, 4, 5, 20, 28), thus revealing their total corruption/depravity.

As a result of their sins, the Israelites are portrayed "corrupt" (1:4, שחת Hiphil ptcp.), "smitten" (1:5, חָטָא Hophal; 27:7, הָנָךְ Hiphil ptcp. and Hiphil), "afflicted" (adj. עני from ענה II, "be bowed down, afflicted, wretched": 14:32; 41:17; 49:13; 51:21; 54:11; cf. הָנָךְ II: 60:14, Piel ptcp.; 64:12 [H 11], Piel), "despised" (37:22, בז; cf. 60:14, הָנָךְ), "forsaken" (60:15, Qal pass. ptcp.; 49:14; 54:7; Qal pass.: 32:14; Niphal ptcp.: 27:10; cf. Niphal: 62:12), "oppressed" (3:5, מַכָּה from נָכָה: 1:6; 14:6 [n. and נָכָה Hiphil ptcp.]; 27:7; 30:26) and "stripe/blow" (1:6, בּוּרָחַ from חֲבֻרָה, רח: 27:7; 30:26) and experiencing "chastisement" (26:16, מוסר; cf. יסר [Qal, 8:11; Piel, 28:26]) and God's "hiding of the face" (8:17; 54:8; cf. 45:15; 59:2; 64:7 [H 6]), and "taken" (52:5, Qal pass. pf. of נלך).

In the Suffering Servant Poem, as if to reflect the sinful situation of Israel (1:2-4: עמון, עונ, פשע, 14:2-4: עמון, עונ, פשע, 43:24-25: עונא, פשע, עונא), the term פשע occurs four times (Isa 53:5 [n. pl.], 8 [n. sg.], 5 and 12 [Qal act. ptcp. m.p.]), whereas the term עון appears twice (vss. 5 [pl.] and 6 [sg.]) and the term עמון once (vs. 12). Even though the clause "פשע סבל/נשׂא does not occur in the Poem, עמון along with עמון and עמון was assuredly transferred to the
Servant had his appearance/form "disfigured" (52:14),

which forms a stark contrast to his future exaltation (vs. 13). Such a contrast matches with the contrast of the Servant's fate depicted in Isa 53:1-12. From the human perspective, the Servant of Yahweh appears (morally and physically) suitable for neither a sacrificial victim nor a priest.

However, to be noted here is that it is not Yahweh's Servant himself (morally; cf. vss. 7, 10a) who was "disfigured" but rather Yahweh himself. Yahweh's Servant "disfigured" is due to God's "hiding of the face" being transferred to him (vs. 3a). Their "chastisement" (נ.g. 26:16) and "stripes" (י.ם, 1:6) were transferred to the Servant (נ.g. and מ.ם, 53:5b). Their oppressions as well as afflictions being transferred to him, "he was 'oppressed' (נ.g.) and he was 'afflicted' (נ.g. מ.ם ptc.)" (vs. 7a; cf. vs. 4, מ.g. מ.ם ptc.). As a result of his excruciating sufferings, he "was corrupt/disfigured" (נ.g. מ.ם) in regard to his visage/form (52:14), and thus the Servant of Yahweh "was despised" (vs. 3, נ.g. מ.ם [2x], מ.ם מ.ם ptc. m. of מ.ם; cf. 49:7, מ.g. מ.ם Qal inf. cstr.) all the more (53:3b). The Servant was not only "forsaken (adj. m.s. cstr. of מ.ם [from מ.ם I, "cease"] of men" (vs. 3a) but also (so they thought) forsaken by God, the latter of which is due to Israel's experience of God's "hiding of the face" being transferred to him (vs. 3b; see Jan Heller, "Hiding of the Face: A Study of Isa 53:3," CV 1 [1958]: 263-66; Richard Elliott Friedman, "The Biblical Expression Mastīr Pānim," HAR 1 [1977]: 139-47). Their interpretation of his suffering, that is, that God's hiding of the face is due to his own sins, is the main reason that they despised him. The indescribable sufferings (and even the death) of the Servant were from Yahweh's will of love (vs. 10a; cf. vs. 10c); "Yahweh was pleased to crush/shatter (נ.g. מ.ם inf.) him, putting him to sickness (נ.g. מ.ם Piel pf.)" (vs. 10a). The suffering of the Servant is vicarious: "Surely our griefs/sicknesses he himself bore, and our sorrows/pains he carried" (vs. 4a). Their being "taken away" also being transferred to the Servant, "he was taken away (Qal pass. pf. of מ.ם)" (vs. 8a). The Israelites of Isaiah's day had every reason to be "cut off," but Yahweh, for His name/glory (48:9, נ.g. מ.ם Hiphil inf. cstr.). Instead, to our great surprise, Yahweh had his Servant "cut off": "He was cut off (נ.g. מ.ם pf. of מ.ם; cf. Dan 9:26, מ.ם מ.ם Niphal impf. of מ.ם) out of the land of the living." (53:8). The Servant "was cut off out of 'the land of the living' for the rebellion of my people [Israel] to whom the stroke (נ.g. [n.]; cf. 53:4, מ.g. מ.ם Qal pass. ptc.) was due" (vs. 8b). Yahweh let His Servant bear sins of Israel (and of the world), suffer and die a violent death (cf. "separation from life by death" [M. Görg, "נ.g. מ.ם gāzar," TDOT, 2:461]; "violent severance" from land and life [James E. Smith, "נ.g. (gāzar) Cut down, Cut off, Cut in Two, Divide, Snatch, Decree," TWOT, 1:158]).

The raison d'être and ultimate purpose of all the sufferings of the Servant is revealed in the central verse (vs. 5): "He was pierced (through)/fatally wounded" (Polal ptc. of מ.ם II, "pierce" [cf. 51:9]; see W. Dommershausen, "נ.g. מ.ם chāl II," TDOT, 4:417-21, esp. 417) for our rebellions (vs. 5a), and he was "crushed/shattered" (נ.g. מ.ם ptc.) for our iniquities (vs. 5b)."The chastisement (נ.g. מ.ם) for our welfare/peace (נ.g. מ.ם) was upon him, and by/with His stripes (נ.g. מ.ם) we are healed (נ.g. מ.ם מ.ם ptc.)" (vs. 5b).

55Significantly the two representative uses of the verb מ.ם, that is, "corrupt" and "destroy," seem to converge in the unique term מ.ם מ.ם in Isa 52:14.
but his "appearance/form" itself (physically) that is "corrupt/disfigured," and this is due to his vicarious sufferings. Thus "the Servant is like an unfit sacrificial animal or priest, but he is acceptable to God because the unfitness is not his own but results from his functioning as a substitutionary sacrifice." Therefore, while intentionally underscoring all the cultic overtones of the term מִשְׁחַת, the Suffering Servant pericope does not let it go beyond the fact that the Servant of Yahweh underwent hideous and gruesome sufferings under God's judgment. The grievous sufferings of Yahweh's Servant, which the lookers-on misunderstood as God's judgment upon his own sins, are depicted more in detail later in the Suffering Servant Poem.

The term יַזֶּה in Isa 52:15 is very significantly used as a cultic term in the OT. The root of the term is נזה, and the verb הָזַה occurs 24 times in the OT: mostly (20x) in the Hiphil, otherwise (4x) in the Qal. The verb, with an exception of Isa 52:15, is always associated with liquids (blood, oil, or water).

---

56Cf. Harold H. Rowley, The Unity of the Bible (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1953), 57: "Just as a sacrificed animal must be without physical blemish, he was without moral blemish."

57Roy E. Gane, personal communication, February 20, 2008, Berrien Springs, MI.

58Cf. Roy E. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, NIVAC (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2004), 92, 149-50. Contrasting the fate of Israel (לָשָׁחַת) in Isa 51:14 with that of the Suffering Servant, Landy observed: "Yet here he dies, and incarnates the pit: מָצוּר מַמַּשָּׂע 'his visage more waste, more pit-like than any person' (52:14)," and then he mentioned in relation to 49:8, "He was to bring habitation to the desolate lands (לָהַנֵּה יִנְהָל וְלָשָׁחַת), but he himself is desolate, the desolation cast on him by others: נָשָׁר שְׂמִית וְשַׁחַת (52:14)" (69-70). It can be said that, in a sense, the Servant himself became "desolate" (cf. 52:14b) in order to restore the land of Israel and reassign its desolate inheritances (49:8). But, his sufferings were so excruciating as to cause the "many" to misunderstand that the sufferings were the result of God's punishment on his own sins, and thus the "many" turned away from him in revulsion (cf. vs. 14a).

59For its attestations in other Semitic languages, see Jacob Milgrom and David P. Wright, "נזה," TDOT, 9:300; Victor P. Hamilton, "נזה," NIDOTTE, 3:69.

60Cf. Mandelkern, 733; Lisowsky, 913; Even-Shoshan, 750; VOT, 166.
The verb in the Qal is intransitive and means "spatter." The spattering blood is always its subject in the OT. Since no other active subject is found, it may be concluded that the verb in the Qal denotes unintentional, accidental spattering. In the case of Lev 6:27, the spattering itself lacks direct cultic significance, since it accidentally happens in the cultic situation and it is not part of the ritual itself.

The Hiphil הִזָּה is the causative of the verb נָזָה and means "sprinkle." Apart from Isa 52:15 under this investigation, the verb נָזָה in the Hiphil occurs only in the Pentateuch: predominantly (13x) in Leviticus, 5 times in Numbers, and once in Exodus. Except in Isa 52:15 it always refers to intentional sprinkling of a liquid in a holy place.

Gane is absolutely correct in arguing that the unintentional, accidental spattering on a priest's or layperson's garment could occur when blood spurted from the sacrificial animal at the moment of slaughter or splashed from the collection vessel as the priest carried it to the altar, so that "the blood contacts the garment, thereby contaminating it, before the blood is applied to the altar" (Leviticus, Numbers, 148; cf. idem, Cult and Character, 168). It is "because blood is a sticky substance" so that it "would not ricochet [i.e., rebound] through the air from the altar to a garment," as Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 148, n. 10, contended against Milgrom, Leviticus I-16, 403. Thus, the source of the impurity is not the altar, that is, the sanctuary, but the offerer himself, and purification offerings throughout the year remove sin contamination from their offerers rather than from the sanctuary, as N. Zohar correctly recognized and concluded in his "Repentance and Purification: The Significance and Semantics of חטאת in the Pentateuch," JBL 107 (1988): 612, 616.
cultic context,\textsuperscript{70} and the sprinkling itself is a significant cultic performance.

The sprinkling is not only associated with consecration of liquids,\textsuperscript{71} objects,\textsuperscript{72} or persons,\textsuperscript{73} but also with purification of objects or persons,\textsuperscript{74} or the sanctuary itself.\textsuperscript{75}

\textsuperscript{70}Cf. Theodorus C. Vriezen, "The Term Hizza: Lustration and Consecration," OTS 7 (1950): 203; Milgrom and Wright, 300.

\textsuperscript{71}For oil, see Lev 14:16, 27; for blood, see Num 19:4. See also Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 207-209; Milgrom and Wright, 300-301; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 247-48, 660. According to Milgrom and Wright, 300-301, the oil used on the eighth day to purify a leper was consecrated by means of two cultic acts: a wave/elevation offering (תְּנוּפָּה with a male lamb included; Lev 14:12, 24) and a sevenfold sprinkling before Yahweh (vss. 16, 27). This oil, unlike the "anointing oil" (cf. Exod 30:22-33; Lev 8:10-12), did not already belong to the sacred sphere but to the person who brought it, and thus the double consecration ritual, that is, the wave/elevation offering and the sevenfold sprinkling had to be performed to consecrate it for its cultic purpose. The wave/elevation offering effected a general consecration of the entire supply of oil, whereas the sevenfold sprinkling served to consecrate once more, particularly and exclusively, the oil in the priest's left hand (cf. Lev 14:15-18, 26-29), so that just this portion was made effectual for the purification of the leper (see כפר Piel in Lev 14:18, 29).

In the ritual of the "red heifer," the sevenfold sprinkling of the blood was done toward the tent of meeting (Num 19:4). Thus the sprinkling consecrated both the blood and the animal so that the ashes of the entire heifer could achieve a purifying effect against contamination caused by a dead body (see חַטָּאת, "purification offering" in vss. 9, 17; חַטָּאת Hithpael, "purify oneself," in vss. 12 [2x], 13, 20; חַטָּאת Piel, "purify," in vs. 19; חַטָּאת Qal, "be clean," in vss. 12 [2x], 19). See Milgrom and Wright, 301; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 600.

\textsuperscript{72}See Lev 8:11; cf. Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 209-10; Milgrom and Wright, 301; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 163-65. Its clearest instance is the consecration of the altar on the day when the Hebrew cult was inaugurated. The specially prepared "anointing oil" (Exod 30:22-25) was sprinkled seven times on the altar, which was then anointed along with its utensils, basin, and its base "to consecrate them" (Lev 8:11; cf. Exod 30:26-29; 40:9-12). The sprinkling here is associated with כפר Piel (see Exod 29:36-37; Lev 8:15) to be dealt with later in this chapter.

\textsuperscript{73}See Exod 29:21; Lev 8:30; Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 210; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 163-65. Moses took some of the blood on the altar together with anointing oil and sprinkled them on Aaron and his garments as well as on his sons and their garments, to consecrate them and their garments (Exod 29:21; Lev 8:30; cf. Exod 30:30; 40:12-16; Lev 8:12-13). The sprinkling here is associated with כפר (see Exod 29:33 [Pual]; Lev 8:34 [Piel]) to be dealt with later in this chapter.

\textsuperscript{74}See Lev 4:6, 17; 5:9; 14:7, 51; Num 8:7; 19:18, 19, 21; cf. Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 205-10; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 99-101, 118-22, 246-49, 555, 658-62. The sevenfold sprinkling of some of the blood of the bull was performed in the Tent of Meeting during the purification offering for an anointed priest or the whole congregation (Lev 4:6, 17). There followed a smearing of blood on the horns of the incense altar, and then came a pouring out of the rest of the blood at the base of the altar of the burnt offering. Both rituals served for purification of the offerer (see כפר Piel and הביא Niphal
in vs. 20), whereas the reversal procedure of Lev 16:16b served for purification of the holy place (cf. Gane, *Cult and Character*, 72-86, 280-84; idem, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 100-101, 272).

The sprinkling of some of the blood of a purification offering is performed when turtledoves or pigeons were sacrificed as a substitute for a sacrifice of reparation for sin (Lev 5:7-10). The priest sprinkled some of the blood of the purification offering on the side of the altar and drained the rest of the blood out at the base of the altar (vs. 9). The double ritual with the blood of the bird as a purification offering has its parallels in the blood rituals involving larger animals, in which the blood was smeared on the horns of the altar and then poured out at the base of the altar (Lev 4:7, 18, 25, 30, 34). Thus the sprinkled blood of the bird as a purification offering (with a burnt offering) is equivalent to the blood of a purification offering smeared on the horns of the altar and therefore effected purification of the offerer (see הֲכֹפֵר Piel and רוּט Niphal in 5:10; cf. Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 122; Milgrom and Wright, 302).

A healed leper or a "leprous" house could be purified by sprinkling (Lev 14:7, 51; cf. טהָר Piel in vs. 7; הֲכֹפֵר Piel and טהָר Qal in vs. 53). A bird was slaughtered over a running water in an earthen vessel. A living bird is dipped into this mixture, together with cedarwood, scarlet thread, and hyssop. Then the healed leper or the leprous house was sprinkled seven times. The living bird was then released. See הֲכֹפֵר Piel (vss. 18-21, 29, 31) and טהָר Qal (vs. 20) for the whole ritual concerning a healed leper including the eighth day.

As part of the ritual consecration of the Levites for service in the tent of meeting, Moses was to sprinkle them with "water of purification" (מֵי חַטָּאת) in order to purify them (Num 8:7; see הֲכֹפֵר and then Hithpael in vs. 7; cf. טהָר Piel in vs. 15; חטָא Hithpael in vs. 21). See הֲכֹפֵר Piel (vss. 12, 21) for the whole ritual concerning the authorization of the Levites.

Persons or objects contaminated by contact with a dead body were also sprinkled by a ritually clean layperson on the third and seventh day with "water of purification" (8:7), that is, "water of lustration" (טַבְּוָנָה; 19:9, 13, 20-21; cf. 31:23). See Num 19:18, 19, 21; cf. חטָא Hithpael, "purify oneself," in vss. 12 [2x], 13, 20; cf. טהָר Piel, "purify," in vs. 19; טהָר Qal, "be clean," in vss. 12 [2x], 19. For a detailed treatment of the ritual cleansing/purification from corpse contamination, see Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 658-64 (cf. 555).

75See Lev 16:14 [2x], 15, 19; cf. Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 206-207; Milgrom and Wright, 301-302; Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 168-70, 272-73, 275-77. Four ritual sprinklings with the blood of the purification offering took place on the Day of Atonement/Purgation. The first one was performed with the blood of the bull as a purification offering for Aaron and his priestly community. After the bull was slain in the court, Aaron was to take some of its blood behind the veil, into the Holy of Holies, and sprinkle it once with his finger on the east side of the mercy seat, and then he was to sprinkle some of the blood seven times in front of the mercy seat (Lev 16:14). The other similar ritual was performed with the blood of the goat as a purification offering for the people (vs. 15). The difference of this one from the previous is that he was to sprinkle the blood upon the mercy seat, but not on its east side. The third ritual sprinkling was to be performed for purification of the holy place, as is reconstructed from the abbreviated prescription in vs. 16b: the smearing of the blood of the bull and of the goat on the horns of the incense altar and then the sevenfold sprinkling of them in front (east) of the incense altar (cf. Gane, *Cult and Character*, 72-86, 280-84; idem, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 100-101, 272). The fourth ritual was performed at the outer altar with the blood of the bull and of the goat. Aaron was to take some of the blood of the bull and of the goat and to smear it on the horns of the altar (vs. 18), and then he was to sprinkle the
Ultimately, therefore, the sprinkling was inextricably bound up with the פָּרָס process, in which the priest was to be involved for purification and expiation on behalf of the Israelite people and the sanctuary.

As shown through the lexicographical and textual investigation of the *Hiphil* of נָזָה, it is without a doubt a technical term of the Hebrew cult in a very significant sense. The verb נָזָה in Isa 52:15, therefore, has been generally taken to mean "sprinkle," but this traditional view seems to have largely been abandoned.⁷⁶

Basically there are three main reasons for this rejection:⁷⁷ (1) נָזָה *Hiphil* requires not only the accusative of the liquid being sprinkled but also a preposition, with which objects or persons being sprinkled on is prefixed,⁷⁸ both of which are absent here; (2) the rendering "sprinkle" is regarded to be out of context in that it does not provide a proper contrast to vs. 14 or a parallel to vs. 15α;⁷⁹ (3) the reference to the Servant as a

altar seven times with some of the blood (vs. 19a). Thus he was to cleanse and hallow it (vs. 19bα). It seems here that "smearing the blood on the horns effects purification, while sprinkling with blood effects consecration" (Milgrom and Wright, 301).

The purpose of all these blood rituals was, on the one hand, purification of the sanctuary (vss. 16, 19bα). That is what the entire ritual of the Day of Atonement denoted: purgation was made for the Holy of Holies, the Tent of Meeting, and the altar of burnt offerings (vss. 16, 18a, 20, 33a). On the other hand, the purpose was moral purification of the people as a whole (vs. 30). That is what the entire ritual of the Day of Atonement connoted: atonement was made for the high priest, the priests, and all the people of the congregation (vss. 6b, 11b, 17, 30, 33b, 34b). These ritual sprinklings are associated with כֶּפֶר *Piel*, וּנְזֵה *Piel/Qal*, and שָׁדַי *Piel*, which will be dealt with later in this chapter.


⁷⁹See, e.g., Delitzsch, 284; Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 203-204.

⁸⁰See, e.g., Knight, 166; Oswalt, *Isaiah 40-66*, 374, n. 56. In this connection Oswalt here mentioned: "Thus we would expect here that the servant is sprinkling the
priest, or to the purifying or expiatory character of his sufferings, is here unexpected and out of place.⁸¹ For these reasons a number of alternatives have been proposed. Some scholars, who argued that יַזֶּה is not the original reading, have proposed textual emendations based on their conjectures, but there is no unanimity of opinion among them as to the correct emendation.⁸²

George Foot Moore conjectured יִרְגְּזוּ ("[many nations] will tremble," Qal impf. 3 m.p. of רָגַז) instead of יַזֶּה, the view of which is followed by many scholars.⁸⁴ Moore suggested יִרְגְּזוּ by arguing: "The antithesis between verses 14 and 15, and the structure of the latter verse require in the place of יַזֶּה a plural verb of which גוים is subject."⁸⁵ Then he would explain the LXX's reading θαυμάσσονται either as a variant for θαμβήσσονται, the nations onto something else, an obvious absurdity. By itself this anomalous usage is not insuperable, but when it is coupled with the problem of the parallelism, a serious question arises" (ibid.).

⁸¹See, e.g., Delitzsch, 285; Seitz, 463. Delitzsch mentioned that "the representation of the Servant as priest would come in here quite abruptly" (285). Seitz argued: "It is a valid question to inquire, as will be done, about the cultic association found in the body of the poem, but these have to do with intra-Israelite confessions and their own distinctive theological rationale" (463).

⁸²Cf. Young, Studies in Isaiah, 199 (for a full discussion of the various suggestions, see pp. 199-201).

⁸³Moore, 222; cf. BHS, 759.


⁸⁵Moore, 222.
verb employed to render רָגַז in 1 Sam 14:15, or as a "weaker translation of יַזֶּה."
Although he argued that he came to offer the emendation "in view of the whole context," it seems that the Septuagint must have been the driving force of his conjectural emendation. Thus Moore's position shows the weaknesses of those who have emended the verb יַזֶּה mainly on the basis of the Septuagint: (1) disregarding the Masoretic punctuation, רָגַז is included in 15αα, but not in 15αβ; (2) as a result, not he (i.e., the Servant) but "many nations" becomes the subject of יַזֶּה, in spite of the fact that the verb is singular.

Others, also following the LXX, have suggested יִבְזֻהוּ (Qal impf. 3 m.p. of בָּזָה, "despise") in place of יַזֶּה. This suggestion, however, has exactly the same problems that Moore's proposal of יַזֶּה does. Besides, it cannot be correct in that the alleged humiliation of "being despised" by "many nations" (vs. 15αα) does not match with the reaction of "kings" (vs. 15αβ). In light of the alleged parallelism of vs. 15αα with vs. 15αβ, is the kings shutting their mouths an expression of their despising the Servant or their reaction to many nations despising the Servant? Furthermore, in light of the alleged parallelism, how is the reaction of "kings" related to vs. 15b? Last but not least, in light of 53:3, where the verb בָּזָה occurs twice, the alleged occurrence of the same verb בָּזָה seems to make the pericope redundant.

---

86Ibid.

87Cf. ibid. Moore added here as the last sentence of the article: "It is also possible that the text before the Greek translators was already defective, and that θαμβησονται is itself conjectural" (ibid.).

88Koole rightly pointed out the problem of incongruity, arguing that "it is very questionable whether the sing. form יַזֶּה can be maintained in that case, for such an incongruence is very unusual with a personal subject" (273). Johannes Lindblom already called the incongruence in question: "Is it really probable that we have here the extremely rare construction where a verb in the singular is followed by a personal subject in the plural?" (40, italics his).


90Cf. BHS, 759.
Other scholars, who maintained that no textual emendation is necessary, have postulated a second root meaning for נזה, which derives from the Arabicnazā, "spring/leap," and thus translated "cause to spring/leap" or "startle." However, the problems of this Arabic hypothesis were clearly pointed out by Joseph Addison Alexander in 1847, Moore in 1890, and then Edward Joseph Young in 1941. Meticulously examining the usage of the alleged Arabic cognate, Moore pointed out the decisive facts not only that its etymological connection with נזה is illusory but also that they represent different roots. Thus, most significantly, the usage of the Arabic verb

---

91 BDB, 633; see, e.g., Delitzsch, 285; Driver, "Isaiah 52:13-53:12," 92; Milgrom and Wright, 303; Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 259; J.D.W. Watts, 225, n. 15.a; Oswalt, 374, n. 56; cf. Štefan Porubčan, Sin in the Old Testament, SS, vol. 3 (Rome: Herder, 1963), 497 (cf. n. 191). According to Moore, 217-18, the Arabic cognate hypothesis was put forth by N. W. Schroeder and Chr. D. A. Martini, and it was adopted and defended by Wilhelm Gesenius, and then almost universally accepted with an emotional content by those who gave up the traditional "sprinkle." Mentioning that "none of these explanations [including this view] is convincing," Milgrom and Wright, 303, argued: "The last [i.e., the Arabic root view] is the most satisfying, since it preserves the text and fits the context best." Westermann mentioned: "The exact meaning of the verb yazzeh in v. 15a is not known. Literally it means 'to leap', and several editors have taken this as the basis of a suitable meaning here. . . . But in the context it would be better to assume a verb with the meaning of 'startle', which is very often found parallel to 'to shut the mouth'" (Isaiah 40-66, 259). Very recently Oswalt, in his Isaiah 40-66, 374, n. 56, also contended: "The best [alternative] seems to be that this is the single occurrence in the OT of nzh II, which, on the basis of Arabic, means 'startle.' This meaning has the merit of good parallelism and does not require emending the MT consonantal text."


93 Moore, 217-21.

94 Young, "The Interpretation of נזה in Isaiah 52:15," 127-29; repr. in idem, Studies in Isaiah, 201-203.

95 Moore, 218-220, esp. 220; cf. Young, Studies in Isaiah, 202. Alexander, The Later Prophecies of Isaiah, 252, already argued: "The explanation of this word by the majority of modern writers . . . is . . . without any real ground even in Arabic analogy." Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 203, observed that "the use of words in Deutero-Isaiah does not show Arabic influence."
"affords little support to the prevailing exegetical hypothesis."\textsuperscript{96} There is also a weakness in this view that it introduces a \textit{hapax legomenon} into the Hebrew Bible, even though biblical Hebrew has plenty of other words for such expressions.\textsuperscript{97} Besides, there is by no means unanimity of opinion as to the exact force of \textit{יַזֶּה}, even if it is translated "cause to spring/leap" or "startle."\textsuperscript{98} Furthermore, "as many were appalled . . . so shall he startle . . ." does not give any progression of thought at all.\textsuperscript{99} In addition to that, the Arabic explanations of \textit{יַזֶּה}, instead of forming a connecting link between vs. 15aβ and vs. 14a, anticipate "the declaration of the next clause [i.e., vs. 15aβ]."\textsuperscript{100} As a warning against such an Arabic hypothesis, D. F. Payne's argument seems to be to the point:

There is ample evidence that obsolescence [of homonymous forms] has played a very real, and by no means insignificant, part in the development of the Hebrew language. It is therefore a hazardous procedure to 'invent' homonyms for Hebrew solely on the basis of Arabic . . . lexicon; and all the more so when metathesis and the like have to be assumed as well.\textsuperscript{101}

\textsuperscript{96}Moore, 220; cf. Young, \textit{Studies in Isaiah}, 202. So Moore concluded that "it is clear that the explanation and interpretation of \textit{יַזֶּה} in Isa 52:15 which has satisfied most recent scholars must be given up" (221). Over 115 years have passed since Moore cogently argued that the Arabic cognate hypothesis must be jettisoned, but it is regrettable that, even though no objection to his argument has been raised yet, the hypothesis is still prevalent today.

\textsuperscript{97}Moore, 221; Young, \textit{Studies in Isaiah}, 202. Moore argued here: "It has also very properly been urged against the prevailing view, that the Hebrew has words enough for 'leap,' 'leap up'; words proper and tropical enough for 'exult,' or 'be in dismay, anguish'; and that so isolated a \textit{αφαζειν}, even if better attested in the sister languages, would in this connection be highly suspicious" (221).

\textsuperscript{98}Cf. Young, \textit{Studies in Isaiah}, 202-203. Concurring with Moore in every point (except his conjectural emendation), Young classified the advocates of the Arabic cognate hypothesis into at least four different positions (ibid., 202), and finally concluded that "the fact remains that there is by no means unanimity of opinion as to the exact force of \textit{יַזֶּה}, if it be translated "to [cause to] spring up" (ibid., 203).


\textsuperscript{100}So Alexander, \textit{The Later Prophecies of Isaiah}, 253; idem, Commentary on the Prophecies of Isaiah, 288; cf. Young, \textit{Studies in Isaiah}, 205.

\textsuperscript{101}D. F. Payne, "Old Testament Exegesis and the Problem of Ambiguity," \textit{ASTI} 5 (1966-67): 63. Payne here continued: "There has been in the past far too much recourse, without adequate linguistic controls, to the Arabic dictionary. . . . But some controls can be applied. In view of the relatively late date of Arabic literature as compared with the
As a variation of the Arabic hypothesis, Godfrey R. Driver has revocalized the verb as יִזֶּה (Qal impf. 3 m.s. of נָזָה) and regarded the "many nations" as subject. Thus the resulting translation of vs. 15a is: "So now mighty nations shall be startled and kings shall purse their mouths in disgust at him." This proposal, however, suffers not only the weaknesses of the Arabic hypothesis but also the problem of incongruity in the textual emendations mainly based on the Septuagint.

The Septuagint rendered the verb יִזֶּה as θαυμάζουνται. This rendering casts "many nations" as the subject of the verb rather than the Servant, and thus translates "so

Old Testament, it is particularly unsafe to read back from Arabic into Hebrew secondary forms and secondary senses. Before assuming the presence of homonyms in Hebrew one should always attempt to discover the proto-Semitic form and the original meaning (and subsequent semantic development) of the root in question" (63-64). For a significant article on the analysis of the problems as Arabic dictionaries impinge upon the OT, see especially Lothar Kopf, "Das arabische Wörterbuch als Hilfsmittel für die hebräische Lexikographie," VT 6 (1956): 286-302; repr. in idem, Studies in Arabic and Hebrew Lexicography, ed. M. H. Goshen-Gottstein, with the ass. of S. Assif (Jerusalem: Magnes Press, 1976), 229-45; cf. also Barr, Comparative Philology and the Text of the Old Testament: With Additions and Corrections, 112-14, 116-19.

Driver's revocalization resulted from "the parallelism (the verb yiğb'zû is in the Qal) and the transitive and plural translation of the LXX," as indicated by Laato, 133. Laato wrongly ascribed Driver's suggestion to North. North's translation ("So shall many look upon him with amazement") "is based on the LXX, without attempting to decide what may have stood in the original" (North, The Suffering Servant, 123). North, Isaiah 40-55, 132, also mentioned: "Some such original as 'So shall many nations look upon him with amazement' has been suggested. This is based partly upon LXX, but there can be no certainty about it." Later, however, North, The Second Isaiah, 228-29, followed Nyberg's thesis of the nations' sprinkling as a hygienic measure against the repulsive Servant.

Driver's textual emendation, even if with the rendering of "sprinkle," could not be an acceptable proposal either. For in the OT נָזָה Qal always has blood as its subject, and that with a preposition, אֶל or עַל, as previously mentioned. So there must be not only the term for blood as the subject but also an accompanying preposition here in Isa 52:15. However, apart from the fact that no preposition is present in the verse, there is no attestation of the term for blood here or anywhere else in the pericope. Thus the repointing, even if with the rendering of "sprinkle," would present the same problems that the MT's pointing is alleged to have.

Isaias, 320; cf. BHS, 759.
many nations will be amazed at him" (ουτως θαυμαζονται εφη πολλα; εμφαντω).106

The Septuagint regarded 52:15 as the apodosis of 52:14a, establishing a clear parallelism between the word addressed to the Servant and the word addressed to the people about the Servant: "Just as many shall be astonished at you [i.e., the Servant]," "so many nations shall be amazed at him [i.e., the Servant]."107 As a result, different from Masoretic punctuation, the verb נזה is regarded as closely followed by עלי, which must be construed with the next stich in the MT. Besides, the LXX employs ϑαυμακω for various Hebrew words, but only here in the entire LXX would it match the MT's נזה.108

Based on the Arabic cognate hypothesis of נזה, coupled with the alleged parallelism with שמש in 52:14a, it has even been suggested that "the LXX possibly reflects a

106 According to Ekblad, 177 (cf. 178), the literary structure of the LXX's Isa 52:13-15 can be shown as follows:

A Behold (Ιδου) my servant will understand (συνησει) and be lifted up and glorified exceedingly.

B As many (πολλοι) shall be astonished (εκστησονται) at you (επισε)

C So will your appearance be deglorified (αδοξασει) from among men (απο; αφθονιουν)

C1 and your glory (δοξα) from among these men (απο; των αφθονιουν)

B1 So many (πολλα) nations shall be amazed (θαυμαζονται) at him (εμφαντο) and kings will shut their mouths.

A1 For they to whom [it] was not announced about him, they will see (οψινται) and they who have not heard, they will understand (συνησουσιν).

Now it is made clear that most scholars have considered, basically following the LXX, that, since the verb נזה in vs. 15a occurs in parallel with נזאם in vs. 14a, it can be properly rendered "cause to spring/leap" or "startle" (cf. Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 385; Ekblad, 187-88).

107 Ekblad, 188.

108 Cf. North, The Second Isaiah, 228; Ekblad, 187, nn. 50, 55. For the interesting usage of ϑαυμακω in the LXX, see, e.g., Lev 26:32 (for נזאם, "be appalled"); Jer 4:9 (for נזאם, "be astonished"). These cases clearly show that the LXX translated נזאם as a parallel with נזאם.
different Hebrew Vorlage with נזה [Qal impf. 3 m.p. of נזה]. But, it is less likely that the Septuagint reflects something other than the passage of the MT. Especially to be noted is that "the text seems to be transmitted quite rightly," which is clearly shown from the fact that 1QIs\(^a\) and 1QIs\(^b\) read נזה, supporting the MT. Besides, most ancient versions lend strong support to the rendering "sprinkle." Aquila's and Theodotion's Greek translation of the OT rendered ρηνοτα ("he will sprinkle"), the Syriac version of the OT, mdk ("he will purify"), and the Vulgate, asperget ("he will sprinkle"). Furthermore, the renderings of the Targum (דזר, "he will scatter") and

\(^{109}\)Ekblad, 187; cf. BHS, 759.

\(^{110}\)So Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 385.

\(^{111}\)Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 203.

\(^{112}\)For 1QIs\(^a\), see The Dead Sea Scrolls of St. Mark's Monastery; for 1QIs\(^b\), see אוצר המגילות הגנוזות.

\(^{113}\)Driver is not correct in arguing that the idea of sprinkling of the Servant "is not supported by any ancient Versions" ("Isaiah 52:13-53:12," 92). Neither is Payne in mentioning that "it is true that the ancient Versions support the rendering 'startle'" ("The Servant of the Lord," 136, n. 15).

\(^{114}\)Isaias, 320.

\(^{115}\)Isaiah, 96; cf. Brownlee, The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 294; Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 385. Brownlee considered the rendering of נזה into mdk as one valuable contribution of the Syriac version (The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 294).

\(^{116}\)Esaias, 1268.

\(^{117}\)The Bible in Aramaic, 322. It has been suggested that the Targum possibly reflects a different Hebrew Vorlage with נזר. Though not referring to the Targum, Vriezen, "The Term Hizza," 204, seems to have had a similar view in that he offered his interpretation based on נזר Qal ("spatter") as follows: the Servant's "scattering of the nations" (e.g., Ps 63:1-2 [H 1-3]; cf. Isa 40:15, 17), which is not a description of a defeat that the Servant inflicts upon the nations, but of the divine miracle shown in his unexpected absolute victory that terrifies the nations. However, Vriezen's view has "a substantial difficulty" in that "the task of the servant in the Servant Songs is not to scatter and terrify the nations, but to mediate to them righteousness and salvation," as pointed out by Lindblom, 41, n. 61.
Symmachus's Greek translation of the OT (αὐτοβολαντὶς, "he will scatter") also seem to support the rendering "sprinkle."

Therefore, any conjectural emendations of the term יַזֶּה, which are essentially based on the LXX, are not satisfactory and thus they are not to be recommended. The lack of agreement in the textual emendations of those who have appealed to the LXX makes it advisable to maintain the MT, all the more so because the LXX here is not supported by the other ancient versions, nor by 1QIsa and 1QIsb.

In fact, the alleged textual problem of the term seems to have largely resulted from the difficulty of the syntactical structure of Isa 52:14-15. According to the MT, the syntactical structure of these verses is: "... כֵּן ... כֵּן ... כַּאֲשֶׁר ...". As for the structure here, Barthélemy observed: "The most frequent construction among Jewish exegetes consists in making of what the first כֵּן introduces a citation of what the 'many' say to 'you' in their stupefaction that has been introduced by כַּאֲשֶׁר." Even though some Christian translators of the sixteenth century had the same view, the Geneva Bible translated the first כֵּן verse (Isa 52:14b) as a parenthesis. Then the parenthetical option has been

118Isaias, 320.

119Lindblom also observed that "in accordance with the LXX (θαυμάσονται) many assume an expression for amazement, either substituting a new word, or assuming an unknown sense of the verb, or basing the translation on the LXX without making an attempt to decide what may have stood in the original," and concluded in regard to such proposals: "None of the proposals offered is fully satisfactory... The translation 'will be amazed' or the like is pure guesswork based on the presumed meaning of the context" (40).

120Cf. Koole, 272.

121Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 385, italics his. He lists here many such Jewish exegetes, among whom are Rashi and Ibn Ezra (ibid., 385-86).

122Cf. ibid., 386. The Geneva Bible translates: "As manie were astonied at thee (his visage was so deformed of men, and his forme of the sonnes of men) so shal be sprinkle manie nations" (see The Geneva Bible: A Facsimile of the 1560 Edition, with an intro. by Lloyd E. Berry [Madison, WI: The University of Wisconsin Press, 1969], 301).
conserved in the KJV and survives in the RSV and several other modern versions. In reality, however, ancient versions, such as the Septuagint and the Targum, already took the first כֵּן verse as parenthetical.

This syntactical structural difficulty was also noticed by Duhm, and since then many scholars have struggled to deal with it. Some scholars went so far as to place vs. 14b between 53:2 and 3. Other scholars have taken the first כֵּן as an adverb modifying "marred"/"disfigured." Other scholars have emended the first כֵּן ("so")

---


125 Bernhard Duhm, *Das Buch Jesaia: Übersetzt und erklärt*, 5. Aufl., mit einem biographischen Geleitwort von Walter Baumgartner (Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1968), 394: "אהר is followed by two כֵּן's, of which only the second (vs. 15a) corresponds to this comparative particle. To admit that the first כֵּן introduces a parenthesis does not facilitate anything." However, he seems to have ascribed this difficult syntactic structure to the author of the Poem. The first edition of Duhm's *Jesaia* appeared in 1892 and his propositions on this syntactical structure have varied with re-editions of this commentary.

126 Karl Marti, *Das Buch Jesaja: Erklärt* (Tübingen: Mohr, 1900), 345, 347, suggested that vs. 14 has been misplaced from the end of 53:2. Marti's suggestion has been widely adopted by, e.g., Duhm, *Das Buch Jesaia: Übersetzt und erklärt*, 394, 396; Elliger, 6; Mowinckel, 196, n. 3, 197; North, *The Suffering Servant*, 123; idem, *Isaiah 40-55*, 132 (cf., however, idem, *The Second Isaiah*, 227-28); Driver, "Isaiah 52:13-53:12," 91-92, 103; Westermann, *Isaiah 40-66*, 253-54; Whybray, *Isaiah 40-66*, 169 (wrongly ascribing Marti's suggestion to Duhm's), 174; Gelston, 192, 199; Blenkinsopp, 345-46. Blenkinsopp mentioned that "14b appears to be out of place: it is unlikely that successive verses would begin with כֵּן; the word breaks into the contrast between the former humiliation and the future glorification of the servant (ךָאֶשֶר . . . כֵּן); and 14b fits better after 53:2, especially in view of the pair תֹּאֶר, מָרֶה, repeated in reverse order" (346). However, we have to be reminded that the chiastic, linguistic connection of 52:14b with 53:2 is one of the strong arguments for the unity of 52:13-15 and chap. 53. Besides, as Koole rightly pointed out, "in the context of the prologue this assertion [of vs. 14b] provides a good introduction to the confession of the middle section" (271). Furthermore, as Delitzsch mentioned, probably vs. 14b is also needed to provide a transition for the change from "direct address [in the second person]" (vs. 14a) to "objective statement in the third person" (vs. 15) (283). Most of all, "there is no evidence in text or versions for this transposition [of 52:14b after 53:2]," as Gelston admitted (199).


128 E.g., Muilenburg, 617; cf. KJV, ASV, RSV, NIV, NRSV, JPS, NJB, and YLT. Muilenburg argued that, "though precarious, [it] is the best solution to the difficulty"
to "for"), and thus produced a well-balanced structure of vss. 14-15: "As . . . For . . .
So . . . For . . ." The Targum might be claimed as full support for the emendation of
the first כֵּן to כִּי, since it translates the first Hebrew כֵּן with the Aramaic דּ
corresponding to the Hebrew כֵּן) and reproduces the second as the Aramaic כּין.

Against these trends, however, Barthélemy argued:

*It is yet allowed to wonder if one is held to admit it as a dogma that in the MT only
the second כֵּן is the correspondent to the initial כֵּן. We will suggest that a
general exegesis, which would permit to consider both of the two כֵּן's as
corresponding to the comparative particle כֵּּן, would deserve to be . . . taken into
consideration.*

This syntactical structure of the MT is clearly attested by 1QIsa, 1QIsb and the
Septuagint.

Barthélemy argued that the structure here in poetry corresponds to what
is in prose the structure  הָכָּשֵׁר . . . וְכֵן (Exod 1:12; Josh 11:15).\textsuperscript{135} Even if אֲשֶׁר is used, though much less frequently than כַּאֲשֶׁר, as comparative conjunction,\textsuperscript{136} כַּאֲשֶׁר, but not אֲשֶׁר, is employed here in Isa 52:14a. In this connection, especially interesting is the usage of כַּאֲשֶׁר in 54:9 (in the chapter next to that of the Suffering Servant Poem), and that in the syntactical structure of "... וְכֵן אֲשֶׁר" (as ... so ...). Besides, וְכֵן, but not כִּי אֲשֶׁר, is used in 52:14b.\textsuperscript{137} The employment of כַּאֲשֶׁר and וְכֵן in vs. 14 seems to be the prophet's purposeful intention, as is partly shown by the sound effect of alliteration in vss. 14-15: "כַּאֲשֶׁר ... וְכֵן ... וְכֵן ... כִּי אֲשֶׁר ... וְכֵן ... וְכֵן ...".\textsuperscript{138} So we have no good alternative but to retain the syntactical structure as it is in the MT.

Besides, in regard to the textual problem of the term יַזֶּה itself, Franz Delitzsch, in his fourth edition of the commentary on Isaiah in 1889, seems to have provided a solution by referring to the case of יַרְדִּים Hiphil.\textsuperscript{139} The Hiphil of יַרְדִּים is usually construed with the accusative of the arrow/weapon thrown (cf. 1 Sam 20:20, 36; 2 Kgs 19:32), whereas the

\textit{Scrolls}, 292-93.

\textsuperscript{135}Barthélemy, \textit{Critique textuelle}, 386.

\textsuperscript{136}See, e.g., Exod 10:6; 14:13b; 34:18; Ps 106:34; Isa 54:9; Jer 48:8; Obad 1:15. Cf. \textit{HALOT}, 1:99; 2:455, 483; GKC, 499.

\textsuperscript{137}Koole, 270-71, suggested a solution by arguing; "The lexicons distinguish כֵּן I = 'certainly, truly', Josh 2:4 etc., and כֵּן II = 'in accordance with ...'. These two meanings cannot always be clearly delimited ... but while the second is meant in vs. 15, the first seems to occur in this line [i.e., vs. 14b]. . . . The asseverative 'truly' says that there did in fact seem every reason to turn away from the Servant." However, Koole could not cite even two biblical passages for כֵּן I (see \textit{HALOT}, 2:482).

\textsuperscript{138}It is also noticed by Koole, 263. As regards the prophet's literary intention, also to be noted is the argument of Young, \textit{Studies in Isaiah}, 205, that "it is also possible that the הָכָּשֵׁר was intentionally omitted by the prophet in order not to weaken the correspondence of עָלָיו in verse 15αβ with עָלֶי in verse 14αβ."

\textsuperscript{139}Delitzsch, 285, n. 1; cf. Young, \textit{Studies in Isaiah}, 204-205, especially 205, n. 23; Barthélemy, \textit{Critique textuelle}, 387. However, Delitzsch, 285, following Chr. D. A. Martini, translated the term "exsilire faciet" in the sense of "a spring up caused by astonishment . . . and not so much an external as an internal motion: they will start up with astonishment within themselves . . . as if electrified by the surprising change that has taken place in the Servant of Jehovah."
goal aimed for is introduced by a preposition (cf. 2 Sam 11:24; 2 Chr 35:23). In certain cases, however, הָרֶה Hiphil (without any complement of arrow/weapon) is construed with the accusative of the goal aimed for, i.e., things (cf. Hos 6:3) or persons (cf. Ps 64:4 [H 5], 7 [H 8]). Thus Delitzsch concluded his remark on the construction of נזה Hiphil that one must not deny the possibility of a construction analogous to that of נזה Hiphil with the accusative of the person sprinkled. Therefore, we have to admit now that the construction of נזה Hiphil with the accusative of person is "certainly possible," even though the verb נזֵה in Isa 52:15 seems to be an

---

140 Cf. Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 205.
141 Cf. Young, Studies in Isaiah, 205, n. 23. Hosea 6:3 says, "וַיִּרֶה אָרֶץ" (lit., . . . [the latter rain] will water the earth).
142 Cf. ibid.; Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 387. Psalm 64:4 [H 5] says, "וַיַּרְּמֵהוּ חֵץְּנוֹ" (to shoot at . . . the blameless; suddenly they shoot at him); vs. 7 [H 8], "וַיִּרְּמֵם חֵץ (lit., and God has shot at them: an arrow . . .). In regard to Ps 64:7 [H 8], Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 387, rightly argued: "The fact that the accent, main divider of the verse, here separated the first two words from those that follows them, shows that those are understood as an explanatory addition, but not as a complement of the object." See also Num 2:30.

143 See Delitzsch, 285, n. 1; cf. Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 387. Young, Studies in Isaiah, 205, n. 23, mentioned Dillmann's study on the usage of נזה's Ethiopic cognate (nazexa), which, "used in the I:1 stem, has the meanings 'spargere, re-, con-, aspargere,' and is used with the accusative of the liquid which is sprinkled (or with partitive prepositions), with the accusative of the thing or place which is sprinkled, and with the accusative of the person who is sprinkled." Thus, against Driver, "Isaiah 52:13-53:12," 92, we have to admit the possibility of the verb's elliptic usage here with the idea of the Servant's sprinkling.

144 Delitzsch, 285, n. 1. By calling attention to such Hebrew proper names as Jeziel (1 Chr 12:3) and Izziah (Ezra 10:25), Lindblom (followed by Rignell, 89), 41, derived a hypothetical Hebrew cognate נזה from the root נזה (based on the fact that נ and י are closely cognate [e.g., נִבְּשֵׁב and יִבְּשֵׁב]), which must have the meaning of "besprinkle." The proper names נָזֶה and נָזָה, according to him, must mean "besprinkled by God [or, Yahweh]," whereas HALOT, 2:404, renders them into "besprinkled by El [i.e., God]" and "Yahweh besprinkles" respectively. Then, arbitrarily changing the vocalization of נזה to נזֵה or נזָה, Lindblom interpreted as follows: "He (i.e., the servant) will (at some time in the future) besprinkle many people, i.e., purify many peoples from their sins" (401). Apart from not only the hypothetical cognate but also the arbitrary repointing, however, Brownlee, The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 294, n. 7, rightly pointed out: "Lindblom distinguishes in his discussion between 'sprinkle' (employed of a liquid) and 'besprinkle' (employed of persons). Unfortunately, this serves to obscure his meaning, since the latter word is practically
irregularity. 145 This irregularity, however, might belong to the literary technique or idiosyncracy of the author of the Suffering Servant Song. The author appears to have the intention of arousing the sense of tension and thrill, and thus a great expectation in the readers/hearers who have ready hearts. In this connection Motyer argued:

We noted . . . how the central section of the Song (vss. 4-6) shares its vocabulary and teaching with the concluding section (vss. 10-12). The question, therefore, is prompted whether this opening section, which also has links with verses 10-12, begins to point towards the same cultic interpretation of the Servant's death. . . . Yet the usage is uncommon. Isaiah, however, could well have used it so, intending to increase the sense of enigma, which marks this stanza [52:13-15], about how the unique exaltation and unique suffering belong together. What is it that kings hear that dumbfounds them? So, the Servant 'shall sprinkle . . . many nations'; his work is priestly and many nations receive his priestly ministry. . . . The thought of the Servant's supreme exaltation (vs. 13) is elaborated by this picture of earth's rulers silent before him. . . . We must think, therefore, of the kings as overwhelmed by the Servant, but the precise cause of their silence is not explained. The ideas of 'see' and 'understand/discern' indicate that some truth about the Servant has dawned on them, but how and what we have yet to find out. The enigma is maintained to the end of the stanza; somehow the unique exaltation (vs. 13) and the unique suffering (vs. 14) are the subject of a unique truth (vs. 15). 146

The traditional view is not without difficulty, but the objections against it are of little weight as compared to those against the other views. 147 Therefore, we had better retain the traditional view of the verb under the present investigation.

Muilenburg maintained:

In view of the obvious meaning of the verb nāzāh in all these passages where it is used in reference to the sprinkling of water, blood, and oil, and especially in

unused in English and the former word is used in both senses." See also HALOT, 2:683; cf. Young, Studies in Isaiah, 203-204.

145Rodriguez, in his "Substitution," 288, argued: "Concerning the argument that the accusative of the thing sprinkled is not present here, we must be careful not to press it too far. We have a precedent for this in Exod 29:21." But there is no precedent for this in Exod 29:21 or anywhere else in the OT. Even though the accusative is not present in the sentence, it always appears in the immediate context, specifically in the preceding sentence (in the case of Lev 4:17 it appears again in the following sentence), and thus it is contextually implied.

146Motyer, 426.

147Cf. Young, Studies in Isaiah, 206.
view of the relation of the opening to the closing strophe (see vs. 10c), it is best to retain 'sprinkle' here, and this interpretation is supported by the Manual of Discipline (iv. 21; cf. iii. 10).148

In the same line Barthélemy contended:

The constructions of this verb with an accusative of liquid and the introduction by עָלָיו of the object sprinkled precisely means: to make sprinkle such liquid on such an object (or such a person), whereas the constructions without an accusative of liquid and only with an accusative of an object or of a person, will be able to mean: to accomplish the ritual of aspersion on such an object or such a person. 149

Edward J. Young rendered the term יַזֶּה into "he will sprinkle" and interpreted it in a priestly-sacrificial sense.150 "Just as in previous time, due to the terrible disfigurement of the Servant, many were shocked at Him, so now, because of His expiatory work, even kings will stop their mouths."151 In this connection Barry G. Webb's observation is to

---

148 Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 618; cf. Brownlee, The Meaning of the Qumrân Scrolls, 294-95. Lindblom also argued: "I think that the Massoretes regarded the verb יַזֶּה as a ritual terminus technicus in accordance with all the passages where it is employed in the Old Testament" (40).

149 Barthélemy, Critique textuelle, 387, italics his.

150 Young, Studies in Isaiah, 203-206; idem, The Book of Isaiah: The English Text, with Introduction, Exposition, and Notes, NICOT (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1972), 3:338-39; cf. von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:257. H. S. Nyberg (whom Oswalt, 374, n. 56, and 380, n. 84, mistakenly named Nygren) suggested that יַזֶּה Hiphil is used absolutely (i.e., without specified object) with the meaning of "carry out ritual cleansing" ("Smärtonas man. En studie till Jes. 52,13-53,12," SEÅ 7 [1942]: 47, cited by North, The Second Isaiah, 228). But, he interpreted it in terms of a decontamination ritual not of the Servant but of "many nations," and thus he went so far as to argue that the עָלָיו does not imply the sense of water or blood actually being poured on him but the sense of "on his account," i.e., "as a protection against him" (Nyberg, 47-48, cited by North, The Second Isaiah, 228-29). North, The Second Isaiah, 229, following Nyberg, translated: "Many nations shall sprinkle upon him," which is a description of their first reactions to the sight of him who seemed altogether disgusting. In line with this, thus, North interpreted the kings' shutting of their mouths, i.e., to avoid contamination or infection from him. However, this seems quite unlikely in the light of vss. 13 and 15b, which hint at a positive revelation of the Servant and thus a striking contrast with his appalling aspect of vs. 14. Furthermore, as both Nyberg and North admitted, their interpretation from the beginning showed the very weaknesses of those who have emended the verb יַזֶּה largely on the basis of the Septuagint: (1) disregarding the Masoretic punctuation, the יַזֶּה is included in 15aα; (2) thus, not he but "many nations" becomes the subject of יַזֶּה, notwithstanding that the verb is singular.

151 Young, Studies in Isaiah, 205. Young stated: "The protasis is found in 14a, with 14b serving as a parenthetical, explanatory clause. 15aα begins the apodosis which is concluded in 15aβ" (ibid., n. 25). But, in contradiction to this statement, his display
be noted:

Sprinkling, with blood, water or oil, had to do with cleansing, with making a person or thing fit to be in the presence of God. Elsewhere in the Old Testament it always has reference to Israel, but there is no such restriction here. The cleansing the Servant brings is for many nations (vs. 15a). The one that people regarded as unclean (they were appalled at him, vs. 14) will turn out to be the one who cleanses others. It is a paradox so astounding that it will dry up every accusation and cause every mouth to be stopped (vs. 15).  

In the same line Eva Hessler already argued:

The verb יַזֶּה is a crux interpretum, and it is proposed that we should translate it into "be amazed" on the analogy of the second half of the verse. However, a quite big variation arises with it, because יַזֶּה indicates an activity of the Servant, whereas "be amazed" indicates a condition or a concerned air (Betroffensein) of the nations, similar to the kings' falling silent, which is explained in 15b: Actually it must be a matter of something that has never been there, something absolutely unique, what is perceived on the Servant (cf. 49:7). Because what has never been told to them, they see, and what they have never heard, they understand.

of the construction of vss. 14-15a in his The Book of Isaiah, 3:336-37, is as follows:

Protasis: Even as many were astonished at thee 
Parenthesis: (so was his appearance/disfigurement from men, and his form from the sons of men) 
Second Parenthesis: (so shall he sprinkle many nations) 
Apodosis: kings shall shut their mouths at him.

However, it is more reasonable to state that vs. 14a begins the protasis, with vs. 14b serving as a parenthetical, explanatory clause, whereas vs. 15aβ concludes the apodosis, with vs. 15aa actually beginning it but serving also as a parenthetical, explanatory clause. Thus the construction of vss. 14-15a can be displayed as follows:

Protasis: "Just as many were appalled at you," 
("so his appearance was marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men,"")

Apodosis: "so (he will sprinkle many nations,) kings will shut their mouths on account of him."

As Young, Studies in Isaiah, 205, rightly pointed out, the principal contrast is not between יָתַם in vs. 14a and יֹמֶר in vs. 15aa, but between יָתַם in vs. 14a and יָקָפֹם in vs. 15aβ, as is shown by the עָלֶי of vs. 14a and the עָלָיו of vs. 15aβ, and thus יַזֶּה stands in relation to יָקָפֹם in vs. 15a as does יָתַם to יָתַם in vs. 14. That which produces the change in the attitude of men is the work of the Servant, expressed in the word יַזֶּה and this work is expressed as future.

How this change comes about is not said yet, unless it would be indicated by vs. 15a and attributed to an activity of the Servant. Thus the activity of the Servant is none other than his priestly activity of purification and expiation, which is succinctly depicted by a significant cultic term יַזֶּה. Thus the literary structure of Isa 52:13-15 can be displayed as follows:

A  success and exaltation of the Servant (vs. 13)

B  consternation of the "many" (vs. 14a)

C  disfigurement of the Servant (vs. 14b)

C1 priestly activity of the Servant for the "many nations" (vs. 15a)

B1 astonishment of "kings" (vs. 15a, β)

153 Heßler, 248-49. Heßler is right in mentioning that "נזה (= sprinkle) marks a ritual cleansing and expiation act (Lev; Num)" (249).

154 The mid-section (vss. 14a-15a, β) is antithetically chiastic in the MT, whereas it is synonymously chiastic in the LXX.

155 The expression "עַבְדִּי . . . הנָה" in vs. 13a, which is Yahweh's introduction of the Servant, corresponds to the similar expression "הֵן עַבְדִּי" in Isa 42:1a, and thus it puts the fourth Servant Song in close relation to the first Servant Song and plays a role of a bracket to hold the four Servant Songs. The term עַבְדִּי occurs chiastically in Isa 53:11, and thus makes the fourth Servant Song a unified whole. The verb יַשְׁכִּיל ("act wisely" or "prosper") in vs. 13a as a cause corresponds to its effect (exaltation of the Servant) in vs. 13b (cf. 6:1; 33:10; 57:15). The "how" of יַשְׁכִּיל seems to be briefly depicted in vss. 14b-15a, and more detailedly in Isa 53.

156 Verse 14b portrays the degradation of the Servant by his deep suffering, which seems to be emphasized by the double expressions in the verse and thus by its length. Besides, the verse counterbalances itself with the introductory verse (vs. 13), which announces the triumphant exaltation of the Servant, which is depicted by the triple expressions in vs. 13b, and thus which has a length similar to vs. 14b. Koole mentioned that "as a trio [in 52:13b] they correspond to the threefold humiliation of the Servant in 53:4b" (265). Koole also remarked: "The trio 'form, splendor, appearance' [in 53:2b] is reminiscent of the threefold description of the Servant's new glory in 52:13b. Its absence in his initial activity is indicated by the negation א" (282).

157 The highly negative attitude of dismay at the Servant (vs. 14b) turns into a highly positive one of speechless respect to him (vs. 15a, β). The reason for the change of the attitude (vs. 15α; cf. Isa 49:7; Job 29:8-9) is due to the reversal of the servant's fortunes (vs. 15αα), which forms a connecting link between vs. 15β and vs. 14a, instead of anticipating vs. 15αβ (cf. Alexander, Commentary on the Prophecies of Isaiah, 288; Young, Studies in Isaiah, 205). For the phrase of קָפַץ פֶּה ("shut [one's] mouth"), see Job 5:16; Ps 107:42; HALOT, 3:1118; Koole, 273-74. R. E. Watts argued that the phrase in Isa 52:15αβ "is first and foremost not indicative of surprise (although this may or may not be involved), but is instead a metonymy of effect signifying the subjugation of the
A successful response of "many nations"/"kings" (vs. 15b)\^158

As shown above, vs. 15b backs up vs. 13 in terms of content.\^159 Verse 15b "speaks explicitly about the nations coming to an understanding that heretofore they did not possess."\^160 Here we can surely see the completion of the work of the Servant in his action, not toward Israel, but toward the nations, to whom he is to be a light (42:6; 49:6).\^161 If the mission of the Servant as "Israel" (49:3) for the nations is fully accomplished here in 52:15b, then what about the mission of the Servant for the people Israel (cf. 49:5b, 6a-b\^162, 8d),\^162 for whom he is to be a covenant (42:6; 49:8)? The question quite naturally leads us to the confession of the "we" in Isa 53:1-11a,\^163 of which the first verse begins to depict a negative response of Israel, who will come to their arrogant kings to the servant" ("Isaiah 52:15," 335). However, we have to pay attention to the chiastic structure of Isa 52:13-15 as a whole.

\^158 Koole, 274, remarked: "Verse 15b emphasizes the unheard-of nature of what is now happening. This way in which God acts in his Servant was never 'told' 'to them' (לָהֶם). . . . This unheard-of event now becomes concrete reality, which is 'seen' (ראה) and 'understood' (בין)."

\^159 Seitz, 471, observed: "The Servant was to be 'exalted, lifted up, very high' (52:13)—signs of his exaltation, intended, among other things, to convict the nations (52:15)."

\^160 Ibid., 462.

\^161 Cf. ibid., 463. The successful response of the "kings" and "princes," anticipated in 49:7c, is shown here, and thus "in 52:13-15, the faithfulness of God toward the servant [cf. 49:7d] is confirmed," as Seitz mentioned (ibid.).

\^162 In this regard Bernd Janowski is correct in observing that, although Isa 44:21-22 speaks of Jacob/Israel as Yahweh's servant, "read in conjunction with 49:5-6, it sheds light on the special Servant figure who is differentiated from Jacob/Israel" ("He Bore Our Sins: Isaiah 53 and the Drama of Taking Another's Place," in The Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Sources, 58). According to 44:21-22 Yahweh makes an appeal to Jacob/Israel: "Turn back to me." "According to 49:5-6 the Servant's task is to 'bring back' Jacob to Yahweh and to 'gather' Israel to him (vs. 5a), or again to 'raise up' Jacob and to 'bring back' to him (vs. 6a)" (ibid.). Thus Yahweh's Servant "is supposed to 'bring back' Jacob/Israel to Yahweh (שׁוב polel, 49:5a; hiphil, 49:6a) by calling them to 'turn back' to Yahweh (שׁוֹח qal, 44:22)" (ibid.).

\^163 In this vein, Seitz, 464, is right in concluding that the confession of the "we" "has its own special character inside God's plans for Israel."
enlightenment later. Thus Isa 52:15b forms not only a striking contrast to, but also a close connection with 53:1.164

In this way Isa 52:13-15 functions as a kind of prologue, while summarizing the main themes of the Suffering Servant Song.165 "The strophe [52:13-15] as a whole is an excellent example of the motif of the great reversal especially common in eschatological contexts,"166 as Muilenburg rightly observed. The great reversal here is not only related to the fate of the Servant but also to the response and fate of the nations. The motif of the great reversal occurs again in Isa 53, where it is not only related to the response and fate of Israel but also the fate of the Servant. The motif of the great reversal in the Suffering Servant Song is inextricably bound up with the metaphor of the "arm of

---

164 Isa 53:1 (with an internal chiasm), just as 52:15b (with an internal parallelism), is composed of two parallel parts with a similar meaning. Besides, there is a close connection between 52:15b and 53:1: a chiasm in regard to the language, but a contrast in regard to the concept (cf. Koole, 259, 275-76; Childs, 413; Seitz, 465). Here is a verbal connection made with a chiastic device: רָאָה (52:15bα):ά/שָׁמַע (vs. 15bβ):ב/בִּין (Hithpolel, vs. 15bβ):ג/אָמַן (Hiphil, 53:1a):ג/שָׁמַע (n., vs. 1a):ב̣/גָּלָה (Niphal, vs. 1b):अ. A conceptual contrast, however, unnoticed by Childs, 413, is to be noted: heathens' seeing and understanding (52:15) versus Israel's unbelief and misapprehension (53:1), which results from their obduracy, i.e., their hardening of their own hearts (6:9-10; cf. 29:9-10; 42:18-20; 43:8; 44:18). See Craig A. Evans, To See and Not Perceive: Isaiah 6.9-10 in Early Jewish and Christian Interpretation, JSOTSup 64 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1989), 132-33; Bernard Gosse, "Isaïe 52,13-53,12 et Isaïe 6," RB 98 (1991): 542; K. T. Aitken, "Hearing and Seeing: Metamorphoses of a Motif in Isaiah 1-39," in Among the Prophets: Language, Image and Structure in the Prophetic Writings, ed. Philip R. Davies and David J. A. Clines, JSOTSup 144 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1993), 12-41. R. E. Watts is right in arguing: "A common theme uniting Isa 1-39 and 40-55 is Israel's persistent deafness and lack of understanding which is related to their refusal to recognize, and to live by, the truth of what they have seen and been told throughout their history. The content of this truth is the unquestionable sovereignty of Yahweh over history and the nations, and his utter superiority over the idols. It is against this 'lack of understanding' motif that vs. 15b is to be understood" ("Isaiah 52:15," 335).

165 Cf. Edward J. Young, Isaiah Fifty-Three: A Devotional and Expository Study (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1953), 9, 22-23; Rignell, 90. Norman H. Snaith is right in admitting that "it may well stand as a title and summary of chapter 53" ("Isaiah 40-66," 194).

166 Muilenburg, 618. Muilenburg regarded a major feature of Isaianic eschatology as "the reversal of fortunes of those who suffer and those who cause the suffering" (605).
Yahweh" (53:1), which is "a pervasive eschatological symbol," especially in Isa 40-55.167

In the light of such a significant position and role of Isa 52:13-15 in the Suffering Servant Poem, it is important for us to interpret the verb יַזֶּה in its original cultic sense. Nevertheless, in regard to the rendering "sprinkle," Brevard S. Childs argued that "it is an exegetical misconstrual in seeking to heighten the cultic context of the passage that never actually surfaces to the foreground."168 Childs already noticed cultic overtones in 52:11 (different from in vs. 1),170 but he maintained that "there is no contextual

167 Cf. ibid., 602-603.  "The emphatic reference to the arm of Yahweh at the beginning of the lament connects superbly with the central and crucial contexts of the foregoing poems (40:10-11; 48:14; 51:5; 52:10) and the impassioned cry of 51:9 ff," as remarked by Muilenburg (ibid., 619).

168 Childs, 412-13.  Childs seems to have trodden the steps of Driver, "Isaiah 52:13-53:12," 92: "[The idea of sprinkling] introduces a technical rite of the cult which is alien to the spirit of the poem."

169 Childs, 406-407.  Muilenburg seems to be correct in arguing, "The cultic emphasis is unusual, but must be understood in the light of the eschatological situation and historical reminiscence" (613).  But he did not do enough justice to it by adding: "The passage must be read in the light of the total event described in the preceding verses" (ibid., italics mine).  For more in detail on the cultic overtones in Isa 52:11, especially see Motyer, 421-22: "In contrast to the exodus, when they were commanded to load themselves with the treasures of Egypt (Exod 12:35f.), they are now commanded to touch no unclean thing.  The ideas of contagion through touching (Lev 5:2) and of 'carrying the vessels of the LORD' are characteristically priestly.  Num 1:50-51 is the only place where 'carry' and 'the vessels of the LORD' are found together.  It refers to the Levitical duty of porterage of the tabernacle and its accoutrements.  This was the 'burden' of the Levites (Num 4:6, 14-15, 24-25) and could be shared with no other (3:5-9).  In this way Isa 52:11 matches vss. 1-2.  The people who wear the priestly garments of beauty perform priestly duties before the Lord, and all who go out in this greater exodus are priests." Particularly impressive is the observation of Motyer, 422: "The imagery comes from Joshua 6:9 [and 13].  Only there and in Num 10:25 [and Isa 58:8] does מִסָּכֶג [Piel ptc. m.s. ofPNG as substantive; see BDB, 62; HALOT, 1:74] have the meaning 'rearguard'.  The Joshua picture is exact, with guards marching before and behind the priests bearing the holy vessels [more precisely, the trumpets of rams' horns and the ark of the LORD].  Even so does the Lord guard his priestly people."

170 Childs, 405, did not pay any attention to cultic overtones in 52:1.  Almost the same is Muilenburg, 607.  For cultic overtones here in 52:1, especially see Motyer, 416: "Notwithstanding the priestly house of Aaron and the royal house of David, the ideal of a royal, priestly people (Exod 19:4-6) had never been realized, but while Zion slept (Isa 52:1a) a marvel occurred so that on waking she finds new garments laid out (vs. 1bc), expressive of a new status of holiness (vs. 1d).  And this is no delusion, for as she rises, fetters fall and a throne awaits (vs. 2). . . . The expression your garments [PNG] of splendour/beauty' [PNG] is found only here but the background is Exod 28:2, where the
preparation in chapter 53 to alert the reader to a cultic interpretation,"\textsuperscript{171} and that "indeed, the lack of a cultic context in the chapter is apparent."\textsuperscript{172} Thus it seems that Childs neither seriously paid attention to the cultic terms in the Suffering Servant poem nor personally engaged in a lexical investigation of them.\textsuperscript{173} To the contrary, however, Geoffrey W. Grogan observed: "The word 'sprinkle' has priestly-sacrificial [\textit{sic}] overtones . . . , preparing us for further sacrificial language later in the passage."\textsuperscript{174}

Christopher R. Seitz asserted that "it should be questioned whether such cultic associations can be read \textit{from a single verb} [\textit{נזה}] within what is arguably a wisdom context."\textsuperscript{175} As the evidence of the alleged wisdom context, Seitz referred to "esp. the verbs 'prosper' or 'make wise' and 'to see' and 'to understand.'"\textsuperscript{176} However, the high priestly garments are for 'glory and beauty'. The Lord's people are at last the priestly people of divine intention (Exod 19:6). . . . He [the Lord] now performs for his people that they may be the royal people of his desire, kings (Isa 52:2) and priests (vs. 1)."

\textsuperscript{171}Childs, 418.

\textsuperscript{172}Ibid.

\textsuperscript{173}Cf. ibid., 412-13, 417-18. In this regard Payne, "The Servant of the Lord," 132, already asserted that not all scholars proceed from the language to the interpretation, and that "it is all too easy to make a predetermined interpretation a Procrustean bed for the language." Thus, Laato, 156, is right in observing that most scholars are so influenced by the plethora of interpretations of the Suffering Servant Song that they seem to be severely restrained from reading it on its own terms. "The burden of proof, then, surely rests with those who would reject 'sprinkle'," as is argued by Henri Blocher, \textit{Songs of the Servant} (London: Intervarsity, 1975), 61.

\textsuperscript{174}Grogan, 301. Laato argued that "the MT reading can be interpreted as technical term for the purificatory rites," that "52:15 portrays the servant performing purificatory rites on behalf of the nations," and thus that "this interpretation fits well with Isa 52:13-53:12 because 53:11-12 refers to the benefit that the servant's sufferings will confer upon the nations" (133).

\textsuperscript{175}Seitz, 463, italics mine.

existence or nonexistence of these verbs in a pericope cannot alone determine whether their context is sapiential or not. Seitz again argued: "To move directly from a single word [אשׁם] into the full-orbed universe of Leviticus . . . is pushing things too far." Right here, however, the problem of his argumentation clearly shows up, since he seems to have explained a cultic context away by employing in his argument the stereotyped phrases "from a single verb" and "from a single word," and that in relation to two different words (נזה and אָשָׁם). Seitz needs to pay special attention to Robert Alter's observation on the significance of a single word in intrabiblical allusion: "The marker for the allusion may be as economical as a single unusual or strategically placed word." Significantly, even such a single-word allusion has "direct contextual moorings in particular texts" of antecedent biblical literature, and even "a single word or phrase . . . may easily carry rumors of its resounding cave [or valley] . . . if given originally a charge of significance." Furthermore, just as "the corpus of ancient Hebrew literature that has come down to us in the Bible exhibits a remarkable density of . . . allusions [to

177See, e.g., especially Aitken, 12-41.
178Seitz, 467, italics mine.
181John Hollander's remarkable observation, though on modern secular literature, in his work The Figure of Echo: A Mode of Allusion in Milton and After (Berkeley, CA: University of California Press, 1981), 95. Hollander also argued: "The reader of texts, in order to overhear echoes, must have some kind of access to an earlier voice, and to its cave [or valley] of resonant signification, analogous to that of the author of the later text. When such access is lost in a community of reading, what may have been an allusion may fade in prominence; and yet a scholarly recovery of the context would restore the allusion, by revealing an intent as well as by showing means" (65). However, as Hollander mentioned, "in the case of outright allusion . . . the text alluded to is not totally absent, but is part of the portable library shared by the author and his ideal audience" (64).
so does the Suffering Servant Poem, precisely because it is poetry. In this Poem a remarkably high density of cultic allusions arrests our attention, which are also, to use Alter's expression, "highly specific, textually microscopic." Thus, we have to find out the specific, ultimate loci of the allusive words and phrases/clauses, that is, their original cultic contexts, to show their functions and concepts in those contexts, and then to reveal their meanings in the Suffering Servant Poem as the author's intentions to allude.

182Ibid., 110, italics mine. Mentioning that "allusion was a natural means of reinforcing ideological continuity across schools and eras," Alter went so far as to argue: "Allusion, then, becomes an index of the degree to which ancient Hebrew literature was on its way from corpus to canon. . . . For the prominent play of allusion requires that the sundry texts be put together, taken together, seen, even in their sharp variety, as an overarching unity" (ibid., 129). For an evaluation of the quality of an allusion, see Hollander, 63.

183Alter remarked: "Poetry may have a generic predisposition to remember literary antecedents in a more minutely textual way than prose usually does" (109). Alter continued to argue that "possibilities of allusive technique in biblical narrative" "scarcely intimate the densely allusive character of biblical poetry, which often depends on a minute phrasal recall of earlier poems and narrative texts" (128).

184As perceptively pointed out by Alter, the place of allusion in the Bible can be partially clarified by the question of dating, an endless source of perplexity and hot debates in Biblical studies, because "allusion, of course, presupposes the temporal priority of one text to another" (111-12). In this light, it is extremely unlikely that the Pentateuchal ritual law was written later than Isa 40-55, since the latter (esp. Isa 53) alludes to the former, and not the other way around.


186Alter observed that "the Bible offers rich and varied evidence of the most purposeful literary allusions—not the recurrence of fixed formula or conventional stereotype but a pointed activation of one text by another, conveying a connection in difference or difference in connection through some conspicuous similarity in phrasing, in motif, or in narrative situation" (110, italics mine). Hollander also asserted that "it should be stated that one cannot . . . allude unintentionally—an inadvertent allusion is a kind of solecism" (64). Paulien correctly remarked: "An 'outright [or direct] allusion' assumes the author's intention to point the reader to a previous work as a means of expanding the reader's horizons. The portion of the text alluded to can only be fully understood in the light of its context within the original work" (39, italics mine; cf. 40, 51, n. 34). Thus, "it is only by identifying the antecedent of an allusion that we are enabled to say what it meant to the author, and what he intended it to his readers and hearers" (ibid., 39, italics mine).
Differing from Childs and Seitz, John F. A. Sawyer argued that "the Hebrew word [נזה] normally means 'sprinkle' . . . , and in view of the consistently unconventional language and imagery of this passage, is by no means to be rejected." Furthermore, Sawyer confirmed his argument by his correct observation: "Ritual imagery appears later in the poem (e.g., 53:4, 6, 7, 10). . . . Note also the thematic link with 52:11, the close of the preceding passage."  

As investigated thus far, the verb נזה Hiphil is a cultic technical term of priestly sprinkling activities. Most ancient versions (except the LXX, which essentially provides the basis not only for conjectural textual emendations of the verb but also for its Arabic cognate hypothesis) lend support to the rendering "sprinkle" for נזה Hiphil in Isa 52:15. Besides, the syntactic structure of Isa 52:14-15 in the MT, the difficulty of which largely brought about the alleged textual problem of the term, is not only attested by Qumran Isaiah Scrolls and the LXX, but it also seems to be the prophet's purposeful intention. Furthermore, the alleged textual problem of the term יזֶה itself is due to an irregular construction of נזה Hiphil with the accusative of person sprinkled, but the irregular construction is now to be regarded as "certainly possible." Significantly, the Servant's priestly activity of purification and expiation, which is succinctly portrayed by the cultic term יזֶה, is also supported by the chiastic structure of Isa 52:13-15, which has the two parenthetical, כן clauses as its center. In the light of a significant position and role of Isa 52:13-15 in the Suffering Servant Poem, it is natural that the verb יזֶה should be regarded as a cultic terminus technicus in accordance with all the passages where it is used in the OT, and that it should be interpreted in its proper cultic sense, that is, "sprinkle."

\footnote{John F. A. Sawyer, *Prophecy and the Biblical Prophets*, rev. ed., ed. P. R. Ackroyd and G. N. Stanton, OBS (New York: Oxford University Press, 1993), 93. Sawyer, however, seems to have followed the leprosy hypothesis (cf. ibid., 93-94, 148). For a critique against the leprosy hypothesis, see Koole, 286-87, 291.}
The term שֶׂה in Isa 53:7 refers to a cultic animal. The term occurs 47 times in the OT: 188 28 times in the Pentateuch, 189 6 times in the Historical Books, 190 once in the Psalm and Wisdom Literature, 191 and 12 times in the Prophets. 192 It is the young or kid of either sheep or goats and of either gender, as Exod 12:5 clearly shows. 193 The juxtaposition of נאֹצ and בָּקָר in many passages, 194 the contrast of נאֹצ with בָּקָר in Exod 22:1 and Num 15:3, and the contrasting expressions like נאֹצ עֶדְרֵי and בָּקָר עֶדְרֵי in Joel 1:18, indicate that נאֹצ is the generic term for "small cattle/livestock" whereas בָּקָר is

188See Mandelkern, 1115-16; Lisowsky, 1366; Even-Shoshan, 1117; VOT, 235.
For its attestations in other Semitic languages, see C. Dohmen, "כֶּבֶשׂ, "TDOT, 7:44; E.-J. Waschke, "שֶׂה, "TDOT, 14:46.

189Four times in Genesis, 13x in Exodus, 5x in Leviticus, 1x in Numbers, and 5x in Deuteronomy.

190One time in Joshua, 1x in Judges, and 4x in 1 Samuel.

191One time in Psalms.

192Four times in Isaiah, 1x in Jeremiah, and 7x in Ezekiel.

193Cf. Jacob Milgrom, Numbers, ed. Nahum M. Sarna and Chaim Potok, JPSTC (New York: Jewish Publication Society, 1990), 120; see also Gen 30:32; Lev 5:6, 7; Num 15:11; Deut 14:4. For כֶּבֶשׂ/כֶּשֶׂב, see Dohmen, 43; for עֶז, see H.-J. Zobel, "עֶז, "TDOT, 10:578. However, to be noted is E.-J. Waschke's argument in his "שֶׂה, "46-47: "As a rule, seh refers to the individual animal within a small livestock herd... The noun itself does not indicate whether its meaning is to be restricted to young animals ('the young of sheep [lamb] and goats [kid]') as presupposed by various sacrificial laws" (see also Dohmen, 44).


195See also נאֹצ-עֶדְרֵי in Gen 29:2 (cf. vs. 8).  

196Cf. Dohmen, 44; John E. Hartley, "ןאֹצ (s.d) Flock, Sheep," TWOT, 2:749. E.-J. Waschke, however, regarded it as a collective term ("ןאֹצ s.d, "TDOT, 12:198). See also Gen 30:31-33.
the generic term for "big cattle/large livestock." \(^{197}\) They also show that רֶם is the collective noun for both רַבַּי and רַבֵּי. \(^{198}\) Such expressions as רֶם (Ezek 45:15) and רַבֵּי רֶם (1 Sam 17:34) show that רֶם is the representative animal of "small cattle." \(^{199}\) The term רֶם appears quite often in word chains with רַשׁ ("ox"), \(^{200}\) and they, as individual terms for "small cattle" and "big cattle" respectively, \(^{201}\) represent possessions, \(^{202}\) permissible diet, \(^{203}\) and even cultic animals. \(^{204}\)

In the OT the term רֶם occurs 25 times (out of 47) in cultic contexts. \(^{205}\) The רֶם

---

\(^{197}\) Cf. Beck, 211.

\(^{198}\) See Gen 32:16 [H 17] (4x), 19 [H 20] (pl.); cf. vss. 14 [H 15], 15 [H 16]; Job 24:2 (cf. vs. 3); Waschke, "רֶם šeh," 47.


\(^{202}\) Exod 22:1 [H 21:37], 4 [H 3], 9 [H 8], 10 [H 9]; 34:19; Deut 22:1; Josh 6:21; Judg 6:4; 1 Sam 15:3; 22:19; cf. Gen 12:16; 24:35; 26:14; 30:40; 43; 32:7; 33:13; 34:28; 45:10; 46:32; 47:1, 17; 50:8; Exod 9:3; 10:9, 24; 12:32, 38; Num 31:28, 30; Deut 8:13; 1 Sam 25:2; 27:9; 30:20; 2 Sam 12:2; 1 Chr 5:21; 2 Chr 32:29; Eccl 2:7; Job 1:2; 42:12. Oxen, sheep, camels, and donkeys, which were among domestic animals, were significant possessions, since oxen and sheep were main sources of food whereas camels and donkeys were major means of transportation.

\(^{203}\) Deut 14:4 (2x); 1 Sam 14:34; cf. Num 11:22; Isa 22:13.

\(^{204}\) See Lev 22:23, 28; 27:26; Deut 17:1; Isa 66:3; the passages for several offerings related to רֶם in the text of this study. See also Neh 10:36 and Hos 5:6 for the "flocks and herds" associated with the cult. For רֶם as a sacrificial animal, see Dohmen, 50-52; Waschke, "רֶם šeh," 48-49; for רַשׁ as a sacrificial animal, especially see Zobel, "רַשׁ šôr," 550-51.

\(^{205}\) Cf. Waschke, "רֶם šeh," 46; Dohmen, 48. For the usage in cultic contexts, see Gen 22:7, 8; Exod 12:3 (2x), 4 (2x), 5; 13:13; 34:19, 20; Lev 5:7; 12:8; 22:23; 28; 27:26; Num 15:11; Deut 14:4 (2x); 17:1; 18:3; 1 Sam 14:34; Isa 43:23; 66:3; Ezek 45:15; cf. Ps 119:176.
is used for sacrificial categories of "sacrifice" (Num 15:11; Deut 18:3; cf. Isa 66:3), "burnt offering" (Gen 22:7, 8; Lev 12:8; Num 15:11; Isa 43:23; Ezek 45:15), "Passover sacrifice" (Exod 12:3 [2x], 4 [2x], 5), "well-being offering" (Num 15:11 [cf. vss. 3, 5]; Ezek 45:15; cf. Lev 22:23), and "purification offering" (Lev 5:7). Besides, the term נָשִׁים, which occurs four times in

206 Gane pointed out: "This category differs from burnt and purification offerings in that those who offer zebah sacrifices eat the meat, thereby materially benefiting from their own sacrifices. In English Bibles zebah is usually translated simply 'sacrifice' because it is a slaughtered (verb zbh) offering, but it does not cover all kinds of sacrifices (unlike qorban)" (Leviticus, Numbers, 87; cf. 620). See Lev 3:1-17; 7:11-36.

207 According to HALOT, 3:1311, Ludwig Koehler and Walter Baumgartner saw it as חַטָּאת, but the context clearly shows that it is לָהעֺ (cf. vs. 6; see also Gordon J. Wenham, The Book of Leviticus, NICOT [Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1979], 187; John E. Hartley, "Neill [sheh] Lamb, Sheep," TWOT, 2:871; Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 761).

208 See also vss. 3, 5.

209 Cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 623-24. The term is mentioned here as the animal victim for the Passover, i.e., the "paschal lamb." Rignell, 89, n. 2, remarked: "The word [נָשִׁים] in 53:7 has the definite article, possibly with specific reference to the paschal lamb."

210 So-called "peace offering" or "fellowship offering" (Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 87).

211 The term נָשִׁים in Num 15:3, 5, 8 is actually_SB2א_ם_ם_ם, as in the parallel verse Lev 22:21 (see Milgrom, Numbers, 118-20). The term נָשִׁים is mentioned as the redemption price of the first-born animals (Exod 13:13; 34:20; cf. Num 18:15) or as a portion of the first-born (Exod 34:19; Lev 27:26), belonging to Yahweh, and it is as such also used for נַעֲשֵׂי נָשִׁים (cf. Exod 13:15; Num 18:17; see Milgrom, Numbers, 118, 311). The main text for נַעֲשֵׂי נָשִׁים appears in Lev 3:1-17 (see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 204, 217-25). See also Lev 22:23: "In respect to an ox or a lamb (נָשִׁים) which has an overgrown or stunted member, you may present it for a freewill offering, but for a vow it shall not be accepted." The term נָשִׁים, "freewill offering," is assumed to be the most usual kind of נָשִׁים, "well-being offering" (Num 15:3, 8; see Milgrom, Numbers, 119-20). נָשִׁים seems to be used also for the thanksgiving offering (cf. Lev 22:27-29). Milgrom, Numbers, 120, asserted in regard to the thanksgiving offering: "The thanksgiving offering is also subsumed under the title shelamim (Lev 7:11-12), but it was originally a discrete sacrifice known as zevah: todah (Lev 7:12; 22:29). It was eaten in one day [Lev 22:30] in distinction to the zevah: shelamim (i.e., the votive or freewill offering), which may be eaten over the course of two days (Lev 19:5-6). Its expanded name zevah: todah shelamav (Lev 7:13-15) also indicates that its incorporation into the shelamim was a later development."

212 The context clearly shows that it is מֵאָשָׁם (see vss. 6-7, 11-12). For the interpretation of מֵאָשָׁם in Lev 5:6 as 'penalty,' without labelling it as an מְנָשִׁים category of
the Book of Isaiah, is clearly used twice (apart from Isa 53:7) as a sacrifice in cultic contexts (Isa 43:23; 66:3).  

"In Israel and Mesopotamia," as C. Dohmen observed, "sheep (esp. young males) were by far the most common sacrificial animals."  

"Besides lambs (kebeš), both rams (ayil) and, more rarely, female lambs (kibšā) are mentioned as sacrificial offerings."  

E.-J. Waschke argued that "the šeh [as part of the šēhōn] belongs in an unspoken fashion to the oldest sacrificial materials (cf. Gen 22:7-8)," and thus that "any cultic instructions and sacrificial regulations involving šēhōn or kebeš and šēh can basically be applied to šeh as well."  

Thus, whenever such other terms for small cattle/livestock occur in cultic passages, šēh itself can be included among those cultic animals, even if not mentioned by name.

As the above investigation clearly shows, šēh is used as a cultic animal in the OT. Therefore, according to Isa 53:7-8a, we gain the impression that the Servant of Yahweh "was taken away"(pināy; Qal pass. pf. of pināy) "like a lamb" or "like a ewe," that is, sacrifice, see Jacob Milgrom, Cult and Conscience: The Asham and the Priestly Doctrine of Repentance, ed. Jacob Neusner, SJLA 18 (Leiden: Brill, 1976), 6; as 'reparation,' see Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 118-19.

213The other one in Isa 7:25 is used together with ṣōr as an animal on the pastureland.

214Dohmen, 50.

215Ibid.

216Waschke, "piy šeh," 48. For more detailed discussions on the relationship between ṣēh and piy, see Dohmen, 44; Waschke, "piy šeh," 46-47.


218The verb pināy Qal occurs in cultic contexts (see, e.g., Gen 15:9-10; Lev 8:12; 9:2-3; 12:8; 14:12, 14; Judg 13:23; 1 Sam 16:2; Ps 50:9; cf. Herbert H. Schmid, "πιγ̄ lqy to Take," TLOT, 2:649-50). Strictly speaking, however, it is not a cultic term, while its passive form may belong to the language of suffering (cf. Hermann Spieckermann, "The Conception and Prehistory of the Idea of Vicarious Suffering in the Old Testament," in The Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Sources, 5-6). Thus, used together with other cultic terms in the Suffering Servant Poem, its passive verbal form
that he was killed innocent just like an innocent, sacrificial animal. The reason is that Isa 53:7 clearly stands in parallel with vs. 8a, while the latter shows more progression of the thought or of the event than the former. To be noted is the parallelism in Isa 53:7-8aa:

A "oppressed/afflicted" (vs. 7a)
B "like a lamb/like a ewe" (vs. 7b)
A1 "oppression/judgment" (vs. 8a)
B1 "taken away" (vs. 8a)

The expressions "like a lamb (נְדִיב) that is led to the slaughter (נָבַט)" (vs. 7a) and "like a ewe (רַחֲלָה) that is silent/dumb before her shearsers (נָ➽) (Qal act. ptcp. m. p. of נָ➽)" (vs. 7b) vividly portray not only the Servant's "passive attitude" to the worst condition of the oppression and affliction (vs. 7a) but also his "willing and hopeful may have some cultic overtones.

The term רַחֲלָה, which parallels with נְדִיב in vs. 7, means "ewe" as female for אַיִל ("ram"), and it occurs only three times elsewhere in the OT (Gen 31:38; 32:14 [H 15]; Song 6:6). See HALOT, 3:1216 (cf. 1:40).

In the Suffering Servant Poem the Servant's נֵפֶך ("mouth") occurs elsewhere in 53:9b, where 'no deceit/fraud (נָאוֹרָה) in his mouth' (vs. 9b; cf. the case of Job in Job 27:4) is mentioned in parallel with 'no violence (חָמָס) done by him' (vs. 9a), and thus the Poem makes it clear that, though utterly innocent, he vicariously suffered. Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," properly commented: "The servant suffered all these ignominies and injustices although he was absolutely innocent. Neither in deed nor in word did he merit such treatment." Cf. BDB, 329, 941; HALOT, 2:329, 636.

It seems that there is a stark contrast between the Israelite people of unclean lips as well as Isaiah of unclean (טָמֵא) lips in 6:5 (cf. the parallel of "mouth" and "lips" in vs. 7; cf. 11:4) and Yahweh's Suffering Servant of clean (טָהֵר) lips here. For the parallel of "lips" and "tongue," see, e.g., Isa 28:11; 30:27; 59:3.

Cf. Harold H. Rowley, From Moses to Qumran: Studies in the Old Testament (New York: Association Press, 1963), 101: "He is likened to a lamb that is led to the slaughter, and it is clear that his death is thought of in terms of sacrifice."

submission" to the will of God for his mission (cf. 42:4a; 49:4b; 50:5-10). This fact is even confirmed and emphasized by the double mention of the fact that "He did not open His mouth" (vs. 7αβ, c). The Servant's silence was "eloquent silence" that speaks not only his total submission to God's will but also his full trust in God. In this connection Ps 38, which is a prayer of David as a suffering penitent, is enlightening in that silence under persecution can be an expression of full trust in God:

But I, like a deaf man, do not hear, and [I am] like a dumb man who does not open his mouth. Yes, I am like a man who does not hear, and in whose mouth are no arguments. For in You, Yahweh, do I hope (יָחַל Hiphil). You (אַתָּה) will answer (עָנָה), O Lord my God.  

The Servant's willing and waiting submission forms a striking contrast to the iniquitous disobedience of the Israelites, whether individually or corporately, to the

---

223 Cf. Mowinckel, 210: "He has voluntarily accepted suffering, not only in the certainty of ultimate triumph, as in the third Song, but because . . . he has known or surmised something of the purpose of the suffering" (italics his). See also Henning Graf Reventlow, "Basic Issues in the Interpretation of Isaiah 53," in Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins, ed. William H. Bellinger, Jr., and William R. Farmer (Harrisburg, PA: Trinity Press International, 1998), 30-31: "His accomplishment is congruent with the commission the Servant received in the first two Songs . . . , although this was an active mission to be effected by the word, whereas in the fourth Song it is the passion that is efficient, an attitude seemingly without any activity of its own. But exactly in its passivity the Servant's attitude does signify the deepest intensity of readiness, of obedience to the plans of God: For the Servant willingly took the punishment of the sinners upon him and 'did not open his mouth' (53:7α), though personally innocent (vs. 9β). This idea is continued by the two pictures of the lamb carried to the slaughter . . . and the sheep silent before its shearers (vs. 7β)."

224 Verse 7αβ-c has a chiastic structure:

A  "He did not open His mouth"
   B  "like a lamb that is led to the slaughter."
   B1 "Like a ewe that is silent before her shearers"
A1 "He did not open His mouth."


226 Note the chiastic structure of vss. 6-7:

A  our iniquitous disobedience like sheep (vs. 6α)
   B  YHWH's activeness in Servant's vicarious suffering (vs. 6β)
   B1 Servant's suffering (vs. 7α)
A1 Servant's silent obedience like a lamb/ewe (vs. 7β)
will of God (Isa 53:6a): "All we like sheep (אָשָׁם) have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way."\textsuperscript{228} Mentioning that "it is interesting to notice that in vs. 6 the 'we' refer to themselves as sheep that went astray. They were not taken to the slaughter," Rodríguez asked, "Could this be suggesting that the Servant took their place?"\textsuperscript{229} The answer can be given in the affirmative, in light of Jer 12:1-3, especially vs. 3b: "Drag them off like sheep (אָשָׁם) for the slaughter (טִבְחָה), and set them apart for the day of slaughter (חֲרֵגָה)."\textsuperscript{230} The Servant, "not as an ethical model but simply as a quite incomparable redeemer figure,"\textsuperscript{231} must have taken the place of the iniquitous, disobedient people,\textsuperscript{232} who otherwise would have suffered this fate.

The term אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is a very significant cultic term. The root of the term is אָשָׁם, the derivatives of which, like other Hebrew sin terms, refer not only to sinful

\textsuperscript{227}In Hebrew Isa 53:6 starts and ends with רַבָּנָה (cf. pron. pl. sf.), and thus the \textit{inclusio} seems to underline the corporate disobedience of the Israelites as a whole. Besides, the verse has the expressions "to his own way" (cf. pron. sg. sf.; i.e., each of the Israelites) and "on him" (cf. pron. sg. sf.; i.e., the Servant) in the center, and thus the literary structure seems to show not only the individual disobedience of the Israelites but also their individual responsibility for the sufferings of Yahweh's Servant. Thus, the verse makes an internal chiasm in terms of the pronominal suffix:

\begin{align*}
A & \text{ "All of us (pl.)"} \\
B & \text{ "to his (sg.) own way"} \\
B^1 & \text{ "on him (sg.)"} \\
A^1 & \text{ "of us (pl.) all"}
\end{align*}

\textsuperscript{228}\textit{KJV, RSV; cf. JPS, NKJV.}

\textsuperscript{229}Rodriguez, "Substitution," 297, n. 2.

\textsuperscript{230}Cf. Isa 65:11-12 (cf. רַבָּנָה in vs. 12).


actions themselves but also to punishment for wrongdoing. Such consequences are differentiated into parts of the process that moves from committing a wrong to suffering punishment for it or making reparation."

The term אָשָׁם occurs 46 times in the OT, predominantly (27x) in Leviticus, 5 times in Numbers, each in 1 Samuel and in Ezekiel, and only once each in Genesis (26:10), 2 Kings (12:17), Psalms (68:21 [H 22]), Proverbs (14:9), Isaiah (53:10), and Jeremiah (51:5). Thus, אָשָׁם mostly (36x out of 46) appears in the so-called cultic writings, Leviticus (27x), Numbers (5x), and Ezekiel (4x).

According to Gane, the term can mean "sinful act" (2x), "punishment for...

---

233 Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 339; cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 119; Rolf P. Knierim, "אָשָׁם Guilt," TLOT, 1:191-94; G. Herbert Livingston, "אָשָׁם (זֹּאָשָׁם) Be Desolate, Be Guilty, to Offend, to Acknowledge Offense, to Trespass," TWOT, 1:78-79. The verb and its derivatives occur 103 times in the OT (v. אָשָׁם [35x]; m.n. אָשָׁם [46x]; f.n. אָשָׁם [19x]; adj. אָשָׁם [3x]), and more than half of the occurrences are in the so-called cultic writings, that is, Leviticus (v. [11x]; m.n. [27x]; f.n. [4x]), Numbers (v. [2x]; m.n. [5x]), and Ezekiel (v. [4x]; m.n. [4x]). The verb occurs 33 times in the Qal and once each in the Niphal (Joel 1:18) and in the Hiphil (Ps 5:10 [H 11]). See Mandelkern, 157-58; Lisowsky, 170-71; Even-Shoshan, 126; VOT, 54, 285; BDB, 79-80; HALOT, 1:95-96.

234 Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 120; cf. Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 339-45, especially 345.

235 Cf. Mandelkern, 157; Lisowsky, 171; Even-Shoshan, 126; VOT, 54.

236 Lev 5:6, 7, 15 (2x), 16, 18, 19, 25 (2x); 6:10; 7:1, 2, 5, 7, 37; 14:12, 13, 14, 17, 21, 24, 25 (2x), 28; 19:21 (2x), 22.

237 Num 5:7, 8 (2x); 6:12; 18:9.

238 1 Sam 6:3, 4, 8, 17.


240 Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 120 (As for the table here, the passage Ps 34:21-22 is to be placed in the column 'verb מִזְמוֹר' instead of the column 'noun מִזְמָר'); pace Knierim, 192-93; cf. BDB, 79; HALOT, 1:96.

241 Ps 68:21 [H 22]; Prov 14:9. D. Kellermann, "זֹּאָשָׁם," TDOT, 1:435, argued that it is not clear how מִזְמוֹר is to be understood in Prov 14:9, but that the parallel מִזְמָר could indicate that it means a "guilt offering" (see also NRSV, NJB, YLT). However, the overall flow of thought in its immediate context seems to be for the rendering "sinful act."
liability" (2x), "reparation" (12x), and "reparation offering" (30x). Thus, in 29 occurrences (apart from the one in Isa 53:10) out of the 46, אָשָׁם is employed as a *terminus technicus* for an offering, i.e., reparation offering (so-called "guilt offering"). Besides, all the usages of אָשָׁם for "reparation" occur in cultic contexts.

The expiatory sacrifices are primarily the חַטָּאת and the אָשָׁם, at times the עוֹלָה and the מִנְחָה, and, in several cases, the שלם. Thus the אָשָׁם is one of the two main exclusively expiatory sacrifices.

In Lev 1-5 the reparation offering concludes the list of the five sacrifices in the Israelite sacrificial system. The situations requiring the reparation offering are set out in Lev 5:14-6:7 [H 5:26], and the instructions for its ritual procedure appear later in Lev 2

---

242 Gen 26:10; Jer 51:5.

243 Lev 5:6, 7, 15; 6:6 [H 5:25]; Num 5:7, 8 [2x]; 19:21; 1 Sam 6:3, 4, 8, 17.


245 Also Eugene Carpenter and Michael A. Grisanti, "אשׁם," *NIDOTTE*, 1:554: "In 30x of its 46 occurrences, אָשָׁם serves as a technical term for an offering . . . called the reparation offering." Milgrom, *Cult and Conscience*, 7, 13-14, noted the peculiarity of the אָשָׁם offering in its unique accompanying verbs הֵשִׁיב, "restore" (Lev 6:4 [H 5:23]; Num 5:7-8; 18:9; 1 Sam 6:3-4, 8, 17) and שִׁלֵּם, "repay" (Lev 6:5 [H 5:24]) as well as in its unique commutability to currency (Lev 5:15, 18; 6:6 [H 5:25]). He maintained from those observations that fundamentally the אָשָׁם offering has to do with restitution or reparation, and thus that it should be rendered "reparation offering." He added that the אָשָׁם offering must be explained by the consequential אָשָׁם: not the sin itself but its effect, and thus that "the usual translation of 'guilt offering' is erroneous prima facie because it focuses on man's sinful condition and not upon its punitive consequence" (*Cult and Conscience*, 7). See also Jacob Milgrom, "Sacrifices and Offerings, OT," *IDBSup*, ed. K. Crim (Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1976), 768; idem, *Leviticus 1-16*, 327. Also, other sacrifices also deal with guilt.

246 Cf. Milgrom, "Sacrifices and Offerings, OT," 766. Milgrom cited Lev 17:11 as the only case of such a שלם, but 1 Sam 3:14 and Ezek 45:15, 17 can be cited as well (cf. Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 304; idem, *Cult and Character*, 171).

247 For the שלם, see the meticulous studies of Milgrom, *Cult and Conscience*; idem, *Leviticus 1-16*, 319-78; for the difference between the שלם and the חטאת, especially see Milgrom, *Cult and Conscience*, 1, 7, 13-14, 16-17, 127-28.

248 For additional cases of Lev 14:12, 21, 19:20-22; 22:14-16, Num 6:1-12, and

The reparation offering is required for inadvertent misappropriation of Yahweh's holy things (Lev 5:14-16), suspected inadvertent misappropriation of Yahweh's holy things (vss. 17-19), and intentional oath violation coupled with deliberate misappropriation of another human being's property (6:1-7 [H 5:20-26]).


It seems that, dealing with the אשׁם concept in Isa 53:10, Heike Henning-Hess, "Bemerkungen zum Ascham-Begriff in Jes 53,10," ZAW 109 (1997): 621 (cf. 622), was mistaken in regarding this suspected מעלה case as a representative, inclusive one for the offering אשׁם. Even though he cited the passage Lev 5:14-26 [H] (pp. 620, 624), his understanding of it is quite different from Milgrom's, as shown in his argument: "The starting point is always the 'unintentional and unconscious violation of one of Yahweh's commandments, which one is not permitted to do' and only 'through אשׁם the moment of the consciousness of this offense [comes] along,' that is, this consciousness is expressed in the offering of the אשׁם offering" (621).

251 Cf. Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 84-127; idem, "The Priestly Doctrine of Repentance," RB 82 (1975): 186-205 = idem, Studies in Cultic Theology and Terminology, 47-66; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 335-38, 365-72. Henning-Hess has not included this intentional/deliberate case of שגאה, as he mentioned: "The most precise formulation of the שגאה offering is found inside of the sacrificial law in Lev 5:14-26 [H]. An שגאה offering is required for unintentional offenses or such ones, whose character was not known to the offender in the moment of the act" (620). Thus Henning-Hess had no alternative but to argue with regard to Isa 53, "If it is assumed that an action demanding an שגאה offering is not a sin-conscious action when it happens, then it is asked whether God's Servant, if he really sacrifices his life in the sense of an שגאה offering, can carry only a limited kind of sin, namely, only unconscious sin" (622).
The key word, which is found in cultic texts only with the reparation offering, is מַעַל (5:15; 6:2 [H 5:21]), and it refers to violation of a "legally definable relationship of trust." In the OT it is an offense against Yahweh (cf. Num 5:6) involving the covenant unfaithfulness of sacrilege, that is, desecration of something sacred (e.g., Josh 7:1; 2 Chr 26:16, 18; 28:19, 22).

---

252 Cf. Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 93; Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 16; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 345; John Hartley, Leviticus, WBC, vol. 4 (Dallas, TX: Word Books, 1992), 77; Samuel Eugene Balentine, Leviticus, IBC (Louisville, KY: John Knox, 2002), 46; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 132. In the OT the verb מָעַל ("be unfaithful") occurs only in the Qal (35x), and its noun מַעַל ("unfaithfulness") occurs 29 times (cf. Mandelkern, 697; Lisowsky, 839-40; Even-Shoshan, 688-89; VOT, 153, 363). The verb in tandem with the noun (מָעַל מַעַל) occurs 20 times (Lev 5:15; 6:2 [H 5:21]; 26:40; Num 5:6, 12, 27; Josh 7:1; 22:16, 20, 31; 1 Chr 10:13; 2 Chr 28:19; 36:14; Ezek 14:13; 15:8; 17:20; 18:24; 20:27; 39:26; Dan 9:7), and thus the verb occurs alone 15 times (Deut 32:51; 1 Chr 2:7; 5:25; 2 Chr 12:2; 26:16, 18; 28:22; 29:6; 30:7; Ezra 10:2, 10; Neh 1:8; 13:27; Prov 16:10; Ezek 39:23), and the noun alone 9 times (Num 31:16; Josh 22:22; 1 Chr 9:1; 2 Chr 29:19; 33:19; Ezra 9:2, 4; 10:6; Job 21:34).

253 Rolf Knierim, "מעל m⊂l to Be Unfaithful," TLOT, 2:681. The term מַעַל is a legal term (see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 345; Knierim, "מעל," 681-82) with a strong connotation of the breaking of the covenant (see, e.g., 1 Chr 10:13; 2 Chr 12:2; 29:6; Ezek 14:13; cf. Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 21, 133, 135-37; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 363; Knierim, "מעל," 682; Hartley, Leviticus, 80-81; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 132-33). But, it is also a cultic term, as Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 72, defined a מַעַל as "a cultic sin against God." Thus especially idolatry is also mentioned as מַעַל (see, e.g., Num 31:16; 1 Chr 5:25; 2 Chr 28:23, 25; 33:19; 36:14; Ezek 20:27).

254 Cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 132. As Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 345, pointed out, the fact that it refers to sacrilege is demonstrated by its antonym 'sanctify' (קדש), as in Deut 32:51 (see also its synonym 'blaspheme' (Resizable) in Ezek 20:27). Sacrilege includes violation of an oath (e.g., 2 Chr 36:13, 17-20; Ezek 17:18-20), which misuses God's holy name (Lev 19:12; cf. 20:3; Ezek 36:20-22). Thus "the holy things of Yahweh" (Lev 5:15) essentially mean "the sanctuary and its sancta (including God's personal sanctum—his name)" (Milgrom, Further on the Expiatory Sacrifices, 514). However, given the contexts in which מַעַל occurs, the description is sufficiently broad to include material objects (Josh 7:1), the temple (2 Chr 26:16-18), Yahweh's chosen people (Ezra 9:2), or the loyalty which was his due (Num 31:16; Ezek 20:27) (see Jacob Milgrom, "The Book of Leviticus," The Interpreter's One-Volume Commentary on the Bible: Introduction and Commentary for Each Book of the Bible Including the Apocrypha, with General Articles, ed. Charles M. Laymon [Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1971], 72; cf. Robin Wakely, "מעל," NIDOTTE, 2:1021). Sacrilege is a grave offense that carries severe penalties, as shown not only by the stoning of Achan for misappropriating property devoted to Yahweh for destruction (Josh 7) but also by the national exile resulted from King Zedekiah's violation of an oath (Ezek 17:18-21). See also the case of Ananias and Sapphira in Acts 5:1-11 (Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 133, 138, 365).
The offender must first make restitution to the wronged person, plus a penalty (i.e., one-fifth of the payment), before offering the sacrifice as the reparation offering to receive forgiveness from God (see Lev 5:16; 6:4-7 [H 5:23-26]).\textsuperscript{255} Besides, according to Num 5:7, the "restitution must be preceded by confession."\textsuperscript{256}

The questions that need to be answered at this juncture are: "Why does the author of the Suffering Servant Poem refer to the offering אָשָׁם, but not to the other offerings?"; "What is the particular cultic significance of the word אָשָׁם?"; "What is the function of the אָשָׁם here?" The answers, to which there might be many dimensions, seem to depend not only on the understanding of the reparation offering itself but particularly also on the context of Isaiah.\textsuperscript{257} I will cite and critique several possibilities.

First, we need to take notice not only of the highly emphasized holiness/sanctity of Yahweh in Isaiah,\textsuperscript{258} but also of the way Yahweh designates the Servant as "My

\textsuperscript{255}Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 132, pointed out: "Whereas the graduated purification offering serves as an $\text{אָשָׁם}$ ('reparation,' 5:6-7) for cases of omission/neglect that require action, the reparation offering serves as an $\text{אָשָׁם}$ ('reparation,' 5:15; 6:6; NIV 'penalty') for situations in which property belonging to God or to another human being has been misappropriated and therefore must be restored with a 20 percent (one fifth) penalty before the reparation offering is performed" (italics his). In the case of the suspected מַעַל, no restitution but a reparation offering is required, since no prior reparation is possible without any certainty that sacrilege is involved (see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 335; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 135).

\textsuperscript{256}As Milgrom rightly pointed out, Num 5:6-8 supplements Lev 6:2-7 [H 5:21-26] in three ways: (1) "it generalizes whereas Leviticus also cites specific cases, thus confirming that ma'\textsuperscript{c}al applies to all cases of defrauding man by means of oath"; (2) "it adds the stipulation that in the case wherein the defrauded man dies and leaves no kin, the reparation belongs to the officiating priest"; (3) most significantly, "restitution must be preceded by confession" (Cult and Conscience, 106; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 368).

\textsuperscript{257}Cf. Averbeck, 564.

\textsuperscript{258}Isaiah frequently used the distinctive epithet of Yahweh as "the Holy One of Israel" and its variants in the book of Isaiah. The phrase "the Holy One of Israel" occurs 25 times in the book of Isaiah (1:4; 5:19, 24; 10:20; 12:6; 17:7; 29:19; 30:11, 12, 15; 31:1; 37:23; 41:14, 16, 20; 43:3, 14; 45:11; 47:4; 48:17; 49:7; 54:5; 55:5; 60:9, 14), whereas it occurs only 6 times in all the rest of the OT (2 Kgs 19:22; Ps 71:22; 78:41; 89:18 [H 19]; Jer 50:29; 51:5), of which an occurrence is in 2 Kgs 19, a parallel section to Isa 37. Thus, the phrase "the Holy One of Israel" as a title for God is almost exclusively used by Isaiah. As shown, the title "the Holy One of Israel" occurs 12 times in Isa 1-39 and 13 times in Isa 40-66 (i.e., 11 times in Isa 40-55, and 2 times in Isa 56-66). Therefore, as a
Thus, apart from Israel's desecration of Yahweh as the Holy One of Israel, we can possibly consider אָשָׁם as a reparation offering for their desecration of the Servant as belonging to Yahweh. On the analogy of the Yahweh's ark narrative in 1 Sam 5 and 6, however, Adrian Schenker asserted that many nations and kings "confess as אָשָׁם their infringement on the Servant, that is, a holy property of Yahweh, which they despised and for which they are called to account" and thus that for the expiation of their אָשָׁם sin they offer as a "votive offering" an אָשָׁם. In this vein, especially 1 Sam 6:20 and Jer 51:5b seem to be relevant. Philistine priests and diviners must have realized that distinctive leading idea or motif throughout the book, it is most clearly a very strong internal evidence of the unity of the book as a whole. Furthermore, its variants occur 6 times in the book of Isaiah: "the Holy God" (5:16), "his Holy One" (10:17; 49:7), "the Holy One of Jacob" (29:23), "the Holy One" (40:25), and "your Holy One" (43:15).

259 Isa 42:1; 49:3, 6; 52:13; 53:11; cf. "His Servant" in 49:5 and 50:10; "My chosen one" in 42:1; italics added.


261 See Adrian Schenker, "Die Anlässe zum Schuldopfer Ascham," in Studien zu Opfer und Kult im Alten Testament: mit einer Bibliographie 1969-1991 zum Opfer in der Bible, ed. Adrian Schenker (Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1992), 63-64, esp. 64. As for the question "Why does Yahweh's Suffering Servant Song compare his activities and sufferings to אָשָׁם," Schenker's argument runs as follows (p. 64): The Philistines had to confess their אָשָׁם, their infringement on the inviolable sanctity of the ark in order to be free from their liability and guilt. In a similar way, the many people and kings (Isa 52:13-15; 53:12) confess as אָשָׁם their infringement on the Servant, that is, a holy property of Yahweh, which they despised and for which they are called to account. At the same time, אָשָׁם is used in its second sense as cultic compensation for the infringed holy thing. Yahweh or the Servant himself gives the price with the life of the Servant, which abrogates the liability and guilt of the people and kings, just as the Philistines did with אָשָׁם. The people commit an אָשָׁם sin by killing the Servant, whereas the Servant, willingly assuming the loss of his life, surrenders his life as an אָשָׁם offering, which abrogates the sin. This double meaning of אָשָׁם clarifies the meaning of אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10.

As for the question "Why אָשָׁם, but not חַטָּאת, that is, sin and sin offering?," Schenker contended that the many people and kings, just like the Philistines in 1 Sam 6, can not present a "sacrificial offering" (Opfer) since they do not belong to the cult community of Yahweh so that there is left to them only the possibility of a "votive offering" (Votivgabe) for the expiation of sin, which is described as אָשָׁם (64; cf. 65-66). Thus Schenker concluded: "The life of Yahweh's Servant is a 'votive offering' for the benefit of 'the many,' and at the same time it is the offense, the sin of 'the many,' who have laid hands on a holy thing, a property which belongs to Yahweh, that is, the 'Servant of Yahweh'" (66).
the plague had resulted from their הִנְעָה of humiliating the ark of Yahweh, even though they couldn't openly confess it (1 Sam 6:3, 9). On the contrary, struck with a great slaughter due to the desecration of their looking into the ark of Yahweh, the people of Beth-shemesh openly confessed in 1 Sam 6:20, "Who is able to stand before Yahweh, this holy God?" Jeremiah 51:5b mentions that the land of the Chaldeans "is full of אָשָׁם ("punishment for liability") against 'the Holy One of Israel.'"

Schenker's answers, totally based on such an analogy, however, have several problems. First, the Philistines' reparation or reparation offering as a monetary equivalent is for their sacrilege (1 Sam 6:3, 9; cf. vss. 12, 16), but they did not confess their infringement on the sanctity of Yahweh's ark. Second, אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 as well as in 1 Sam 6 is not a "votive offering" (נֶדֶר; see, e.g., Lev 7:16, 22:18, and 23:8) but a reparation offering, since בָּשׁ Hiphil, "return" accompanies אָשָׁם 4 times in 1 Sam 6 (vss. 3, 4, 8, 17). Third, אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 as well as 1 Sam 6 is not used as a term of double entendre (i.e., אָשָׁם sin and offering), even though it can lexically include such meanings. Fourth, in regard to אָשָׁם the narrative of Yahweh's ark in 1 Sam 5 and 6 is not a perfect parallel with the Suffering Servant Poem. The speaker in Isa 53:10 is the "we," but not the "many," and thus the offering אָשָׁם is first of all for Israel and then for the nations. Besides, the sin of the "we" as well as of the "many" is not limited to the desecration of the Servant as a holy property of Yahweh.

Second, as Gordon J. Wenham contended, the reparation offering draws attention to the fact that sin has both a social and spiritual dimension, that is, it affects our relationship not only horizontally with our fellow man but also vertically with our Creator God.263 Just as we must put ourselves right with others by paying them back for

---

262 Unlike this rendering of Gane (in his Leviticus, Numbers, 120), NASB, RSV, NIV, NRSV, JPS, and YLT render "guilt," whereas KJV, NKJV and NJB translate "sin." The LXX renders οὔπικος.

263 Wenham, 111.
the wrongs we have committed against them, so we must compensate God for the debts that we have incurred against him.264  This comprehensiveness of the reparation offering may be the reason why the term שׁאָם is employed in Isa 53:10.  However, this answer does not seem to be enough, since it takes into account only Pentateuchal ritual texts, and that partially, but it does not fully consider the Isaianic prophetic text (Isa 53:10) with its proper context.  So, although Wenham's contention sounds good as part of the answer, at least, it does not account for everything.

Third, as John E. Hartley asserted, the employment of אָשָׁם to describe the Servant's sacrificial death may be twofold; not only does it compensate God fully for the damages sinners have incurred to him by their sinning, but it also "provides expiation for every kind of sin, inadvertent and intentional."265  As for the former, in light of the fact that the reparation offering was preceded by prior reparation (payment), what would be the equivalent of this reparation in Isa 53 or in the book of Isaiah?266  Can we understand that, according to Isa 40:2, they have paid enough reparation for their sins?267

264Ibid.; cf. Ps 51:6α, "Against you . . . I have sinned."  Wenham, 110, argued: "The earliest interpretation of the significance of the reparation offering is found in Isa 53, where the suffering servant's death is described. . . . In these words the idea of substitutionary atonement is clearly set out. . . . The death of the suffering servant compensates for the sins of the people and makes many to be accounted righteous."  Wenham, 111, continued to argue that the reparation offering demonstrates that there is another aspect of sin not covered by the other sacrifices, namely, that of satisfaction or compensation, and thus that the Levitical sacrificial system presents different models or analogies to describe the effects of sin and the way of remedying them.  As for אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10, Grogan, "Isaiah," 304, suggested that it "may have special overtones of completeness for it involved restitution as well as an offering to God (cf. Lev 5)."  Webb, 213, n. 29, also mentioned: "It involved the sacrificial slaughter of an animal, and restitution. . . . It was the most comprehensive type of offering for personal sin, overlapping with other kinds of offerings, but going beyond them.  It is this comprehensiveness which is the point here."

265Hartley, Leviticus, 80.

266Roy E. Gane, personal communication, April 2007, Berrien Springs, MI.

267Gane, Isaiah, 122: "Now we can understand Isaiah 40:2, where God comforts His exiled people by telling them they have paid enough reparation for their sins.  But following the reparation, there must be a sacrifice.  Here it is in Isaiah 53: God's Servant, instead of a ram, is led like a sheep to the slaughter (Isa 53:7) on behalf of people who
As for the latter, it is to be remembered that the purification offering also expiates some deliberate sins as well as inadvertent sins.268

Fourth, one of the answers may be found elsewhere, that is, in the Messianic passage Ps 40:6-8 [H 7-9], which seems to cast some light on the understanding of Isa 53:10. The passage runs:269

Sacrifice (זֶבַח) and meal offering (מִנְחָה) You have not desired (חָפֵץ). My ears you have opened.270 Burnt offering (עֹלָה) and sin offering (חֲטָאָה) You have not required. Then I said, "Behold, I come. In the scroll of the book it is written of me. I delight (חָפֵץ) to do Thy will (רוּצָן), O my God. The law is in my inmost parts.271

The offering אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is not mentioned here in Ps 40:6 [H 7] as an offering that God has not desired/required. Besides, the root חָפֵץ, which occurs once each as a verb and as a noun in Isa 53:10, appears twice as a verb in Ps 40:6, 8 [H 7, 9]. Furthermore, the term חָפֵץ in Isa 53:10 occurs as the term רָצוֹן in Ps 40:8 [H 9].272

Both the authors of Ps 40 and the Suffering Servant Poem must have probably understood have gone astray (vs. 6)." The clause נִרְצָה עֲוֹנָהּ in Isa 40:2b is to be understood particularly in light of Lev 26:40-45 (cf. the term נַעֲשִׂי Hiphil ["confess"] and the expression נִרְצָה עֲוֹנָהּ in vs. 40), esp. its corresponding clause מָעַל מַעַל (vss. 41, 43). See BDB, 953; HALOT, 3:1281-82.

268 Cf. Gane, Cult and Character, 292-93, 299-300; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 97, 280-83.

269 See also Heb 10:5-10.

270 Lit., "Ears hast thou dug [I כָּרָה Qal] (with an allusion to the cavity of the ear) for me" (BDB, 500; italics original); cf. also HALOT, 2:496.

271 Cf. JPS. For נַעֲשִׂי pl., see BDB, 588; HALOT, 609-10.

272 In the sense of the "will" of God as the accusative of the verb נִרְצָה (see also Pss 103:21; 143:10; Ezra 10:11; cf. BDB, 953; HALOT, 3:1282-83). The noun נִרְצָה is derived from the more cultic-oriented verb חָפֵץ than חָפֵץ, which is shown by the comparison between their usages (see נִרְצָה Qal in Ps 51:16 [H 18], 119:108, Amos 5:22, and Mal 1:10, 13; נַעֲשִׂי Niphal in Lev 1:4, 7:18, 19:7, 22:23, 25, 27; רָצוֹן Qal in Ps 40:6 [H 7], 51:16 [H 18], 19 [H 20], Isa 1:11, 66:3; Hos 6:6; cf. BDB, 342-43, 953; HALOT, 1:339-340; 3:1280-81).

273 For the parallels of חָפֵץ with נָשָׁם, see Ps 51:16 [H 18] and 147:10; for the parallel of חָפֵץ with נַעֲשִׂי, see Mal 1:10.
that ultimately God desires none of the offerings (cf. Dan 9:27). Is it possible, however, that the author of the Suffering Servant Poem must have known the passage Ps 40:6-8 [H 7-9] very well, and that thus he has referred to the offering אָשָׁם, which the passage does not say God has not desired/required?

Fifth, although the root מעל does not occur at all in the book of Isaiah, to be noted is its usage in relation to three Judahite kings (i.e., Uzziah, Ahaz, and Hezekiah), each of whom is significantly mentioned in the narratives of the book of Isaiah (chaps. 6, 7, and 36-39). Uzziah was charged with מעל for assuming priestly prerogatives by entering the Temple to burn incense (2 Chr 26:16, 18). Ahaz was also charged with מעל for having discarded the Temple sancta (2 Chr 28:19, 22; 29:19; cf. 28:24; 2 Kgs 16:10-18) and suspending their use (cf. 2 Chr 28:24; 29:18). Hezekiah exhorted not only his people of Judah and Jerusalem but also the remnant of the northern tribes not to commit מעל (2 Chr 29:6; 30:7).

In addition, we have to consider that מעל was the direct cause not only of the Assyrian exile of the northern kingdom Israel (1 Chr 5:25 [cf. vs. 26]; 2 Chr 30:7; cf. vs.

---

274 The root מעל is a key term in the theology of immediate retribution in Chronicles, where it is used particularly of religious infidelity (see Wakely, 1022; cf. Milgrom, *Cult and Conscience*, 17; idem, *Leviticus 1-16*, 346).

275 Isa 1:1 mentions Jotham as a king of Judah after Uzziah during Isaiah's prophetic activities, but he is not mentioned anywhere else in the book of Isaiah.

276 Milgrom, "Further on the Expiatory Sacrifices," 512, contended that "אשׁם is prescribed for a scale-diseased person (Lev 14:12, 24) because of suspected מעל, a supposition supported by the מעל of King Uzziah (2 Chr 26:16-19)." For a detailed discussion, see Milgrom, *Cult and Conscience*, 80-82; idem, *Leviticus 1-16*, 856-57. From the larger framework and nature of the Sinaitic covenant, however, Averbeck, 563, interpreted the reparation offering of a scale-diseased person in association with his/her desecration of something sacred, namely, the desecration of his/her past existential status as part of the "kingdom of priests and a holy nation" (Exod 19:6). Gane countered: "How would he/she desecrate? Wouldn't all be guilty of this to some degree? This interpretation sounds abstract and weak" (personal communication, February 20, 2008, Berrien Springs, MI).

6), but also of the destruction of Jerusalem and the subsequent Babylonian exile of the southern kingdom Judah (1 Chr 9:1; 2 Chr 36:14; cf. vss. 17-20). Such tragic consequences of מַעַל had been already warned by Yahweh (Lev 26:40; Ezek 14:13; 15:8; 17:20; cf. 39:23), and then later acknowledged by Nehemiah (Neh 1:8) and Daniel (Dan 9:7). It is highly possible, therefore, that the term אָשָׁם is used in Isa 53:10 from the perspective of Judah's Babylonian captivity, which is the historical context of Isa 40-55.

Sixth, socioeconomic injustice, which was as a main issue for the prophet Isaiah

Averbeck, 564 (cf. 563), argued in light of the cultic ritual for a person healed from scaly skin disease: "It might be especially significant that this section of Isaiah speaks from the perspective of the entire nation being in Babylonian captivity. Could it be that the term ḥasām was used here precisely because the holy nation had been expelled (i.e., desecrated) from the land. If so, in this context the purpose of the expiatory sacrifice of the Suffering Servant was to restore the people to the land and to their God. It is parallel to the restoration of the leper in Lev 14. . . . Furthermore, Isa 53 is replete with references to disease and illness, again suggesting a connection between the Suffering Servant and the dreaded disease(s) that could cause a person's expulsion from the community of faith" (italics mine).

Averbeck's argument is not correct in that Israel's sacrilege מַעַל itself is a reason for their Babylonian captivity, and that their Babylonian captivity is not a sacrilege, that is, their desecration of themselves as the holy people of God. Before their captivity to Babylon they were impure (טָמֵא, Isa 6:5) due to their moral faults (חַטָּאת/עֹן, vs. 7), and their moral impurity resulted in their captivity to Babylon (vss. 11-12). The captivity itself did not make them morally or physically/ritually impure or put them into a dangerous realm of moral or physical ritual impurity. For R. E. Clement's similar thesis (apart from his fluctuation theory in regard to the identity of the Servant), see "Isaiah 53 and the Restoration of Israel," in Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins, ed. William H. Bellinger, Jr., and William R. Farmer (Harrisburg, PA: TPI, 1998), 52 (cf. 50-54): "Plunged into the uncleanness of living among the nations, Israel could do little to escape the threat posed by disease and guilt. . . . Guilt-ridden and threatened by disease, it had no avenue through which to secure atonement. . . . Now in this remarkable prophetic insight, Isaiah 53 asserts God's unique solution. Until the regular sin-offerings could be restored, the Servant-Israel's own suffering among the nations would be the sin-offering by which that nation's guilt would be cleansed and its diseases carried away."

As for the historical setting of Isa 40-55, we can say for sure that, though Isa 1-39 predicts Judah's exile to Babylon (cf. 39:6-7), Isa 40-55 presupposes the exiled Judah in Babylon and predicts not only the destruction of Babylon (cf. 46:1-7; 47:11; 48:14, 20) but also Judah's deliverance (from Babylonian captivity) and restoration (cf. 44:26, 28), specifically through Cyrus (cf. 44:28-45:5). From chap. 49 onward neither the name Cyrus nor the name Babylon occurs again, which suggests that more sublime reality, that is, the greater deliverance (from the spiritual captivity to sin) through the Servant is in Yahweh's plan.
"The social evil condemned most frequently and most vociferously by Isaiah," as Andrew Davies rightly observed, "is probably that of oppression." Just as Israel has been unjustly oppressed by other nations (cf. 14:4; 52:4), so it has been unjustly oppressing its own people (cf. 30:12). The practical means of its oppression are primarily the manipulation of the corrupt judicial system (cf. 1:23; 3:4, 12; 5:20, 23; 10:1-2; 32:7) and, more specifically, the judicial theft of the lands of the poor (cf. 3:14; 5:8-10) through

---


281Also implied by Gane, *Isaiah*, 122: "The Hebrew word [אָשָׁם] refers to a 'guilt/reparation offering' (Lev 5:14-6:7; 7:1-7), which could atone for deliberate wrongs against other people (Lev 6:2, 3). Such sins were singled out by Isaiah (Isaiah 1-3; 10:1, 2; 59)."

282Davies, 38; see, e.g, Isa 3:5, 15; 10:1-2; 30:12; cf. 59:13. Davies, 38-39, continued: 'The word 'oppress' in its various forms appears some 24 times [in the book of Isaiah] in the NRSV, translating a number of different Hebrew roots. Most significant among these are the verbs יגָּנָא ('to exact' payment, or 'to drive, force or pressurize') and שָּדָד ('to devastate', 'to overpower'), whereas the root which properly means 'to oppress [or extort]', אָשָּׁק, occurs some seven times in either verbal, participial or nominal forms. Our examination would however be incomplete without remembering that a number of other terms are used with the same or very similar import, including terms such as 'trample', 'crush', 'put down' and 'plunder.'" The root נָשָׁק, which is significantly associated with אָשָׁמ (see כָּשָׁק Qal, Lev 6:2, 4 [H 5:21, 23]; כָּשָׁק, vs. 4 [H 5:23]), actually occurs 6 times in Isaiah (כָּשָׁק Qal, 52:4; כָּשָׁק Pual ptcp., 23:12; כָּשָׁק, 30:12, 54:14 and 59:13; כָּשָׁק, 38:14; cf. BDB, 798-99; HALOT, 3:895-97). Davies, 39, rightly pointed out: "It is significant to notice that . . . oppression was continuing within the very structures (perhaps strictures would be a better word) of Israelite society. Israel has relied on 'oppression and deceit' [NRSV], says the Holy One of Israel (30:12), in the process of rejecting his word."

283Cf. Davies, 39.

284Ibid., 44-45, 48-51; cf. also Milgrom, *Cult and Conscience*, 94-95, 98-99, 101-102, especially 99; idem, *Leviticus 1-16*, 337. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1-16*, 337 (cf. idem, *Cult and Conscience*, 99), observed: "כתוב and כָּשָׁק . . . are alike in that both are the product of open force (see Deut 28:29, 31; 1 Sam 12:3-4; Ps 35:10; Job 35:9; Qoh 4:1). Perhaps the best illustration that open force is common to כָּשָׁק and גָּזָל is Mic 2:1-2, where these two verbs describe the action of those who confiscate houses, lands, and persons. . . . But the two verbs differ from each other in this respect: in כָּשָׁק the acquisition is legal whereas in גָּזָל it is illegal. There are two concrete cases of כָּשָׁק in the Bible. One is withholding the wages of a hired laborer (Deut 24:14-15; cf. Mal 3:5). The other . . . is the confiscation, in cases of default, of property, which, however,
"latifundialization." "Concepts associated with oppression feature prominently in . . . the servant songs," and that with the significant term מִשְׁפָּט (42:1, 3, 4; 49:4; 50:8; 53:8). Can we conclude in this light that Yahweh's Servant gave his life as מִשְׁפָּט not only to expiate the deliberate sin of oppressions/extortions but also to "bring forth" (מִשְׁפָּט; Hiphil; 42:1, 3) and "establish" (מִשְׁפָּט Qal; vs. 4) מִשְׁפָּט?

Seventh, to be noted is that Lev 14 prescribes an מִשְׁפָּט sacrifice for a case of a physical ritual impurity, that is, for the cleansing of the one who has been healed from scaly skin disease (vs. 3). This seems to be another reason to employ this term in Isa 53 because it also deals here with "sicknesses" and "pains" (vs. 4a; cf. vs. 3aβ), that is, the state of mortality resulting from sin, which underlies the various physical ritual must be returned (i.e., cannot be withheld) upon repayment of the loan (Deut 24:6-11; Ezek 18:7, 12, 16, 18; 22:29; 33:19)." Milgrom continued: "There can hardly be any cause for wonder that the terms קָאָשָׁם and קָאָזָל are used synonymously by the prophets (e.g., Jer 21:12; 22:3), for the violation of life essentials is a violation of pentateuchal law and hence equivalent to robbery. Although the law only specifies garments and millstones in its prohibitions (Exod 22:25-26; Deut 24:6), they may serve as metonyms standing for all essentials such as land, farm animals, and persons (e.g., Mic 2:1-2; cf. 1 Sam 12:3-4). Thus the outcry of the prophets can now be seen in its full dimension: Amos 2:8 (cf. Job 22:6) condemns the confiscation of clothing . . . Ezekiel condemns the withholding of all pledges (and in one verse, 18:16, even this particular seizure), thereby contesting the very legality of distraint."

D. N. Premnath has recently done brilliant social-scientific studies on "latifundialization" (derived from the Latin term latifundia [adj. latus plus pl. of n. fundus], meaning large estates), which is technically defined as "the process of land accumulation in the hands of a few wealthy landowners to the deprivation of the peasantry." For the process of latifundialization in general and the role of the judicial system in that process in particular, see Premnath, "Latifundialization and Isaiah 5:8-10," JSOT 40 (1988): 49-60; idem, Eighth Century Prophets: A Social Analysis (St. Louis, MO: Chalice Press, 2003).

Davies, 17; cf. also Isa 61:1-3. For a more detailed discussion, see Davies, 17-18.

מִשְׁפָּט (9x; Lev 14:12, 13, 14, 17, 21, 24, 25 [2x], 28).

Roy E. Gane, personal communication, May 14, 2007, Berrien Springs, MI. He added: "But I would agree with Milgrom that the reason for the מִשְׁפָּט in this context of purification [Lev 14] is likely because of suspected sacrilege" (idem, personal communication, February 20, 2008; for Milgrom's argument, see Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 80-82; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 363-64). However, Milgrom and Gane need to take notice of these points: (1) The one who offers the מִשְׁפָּט here in Lev 14 does it in
impurities. For the cleansing of physical ritual impurities the בַּעַת offering was mainly prescribed (see, e.g., Lev 5:6-7 [cf. vss. 2-3]; 12:6-8; 14:19-20, 31; 15:15, 30; Num 8:12; cf. vs. 21). Thus the expiatory system provided for the physically, ritually impure the healing aspect of restoration to the covenant community and Yahweh, but not healing itself for them. Neither בַּעַת offerings nor אָשָׁם offerings nor the Hebrew cultic system itself could provide healing even for the wounds or sicknesses/diseases that speak of the mortality of human beings resulting from sin. On the contrary, the vicarious suffering and death of Yahweh’s Servant as an אָשָׁם provides healing not only for the wounds but also for the sicknesses/diseases (cf. Isa 53:3aβ, 4-5, 8bβ, 10αα; cf. 30:26b; 33:24a). This includes spiritual restoration (e.g., Ps 103:3-4a; Isa 33:24b; cf. 53:11). In this respect also Yahweh’s Servant far surpasses the Hebrew cult.

Last but not least, Milgrom’s cogent argument is to be noted that the philological and psychological findings in regard to the root אָשָׁם significantly bear theological implications.

Milgrom significantly concluded: if the cause, the verb נָשָׁם ‘feel guilt’, leads to the consequence, the noun נָשָׁמ ‘reparation, reparation offering’, then the feeling of guilt can only be the first step in seeking reconciliation with God. He also demands "reparation" both to him and to the defrauded person before his expiation can be won. In the Priestly

order to be cleansed after he is healed (see vs. 3), but not to be healed before he is healed; (2) The reason for the אָשָׁם here might be likely because of suspected sacrilege, but it is not for the sin’s being forgiven but for the physical ritual impurity being cleansed, which is made clear by the fact that נָשָׁם Niphal occurs in Lev 5-6 (see 5:16b, 18b; 6:7 [H 5:26]), but not here (see 14:20); (3) The sacrificial victim here is different (i.e., a male lamb, but not a ram; see vs. 12); (4) The context here is that of cleansing from the physical ritual impurity and thus restoration to the cultic community (see Lev 13-14; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 246-49).


290 For more in detail, see Gane, Cult and Character, 112-23. It appears that אָשָׁם in Isa 53 can also allude to the usage of this term in the context of the בַּעַת offering, e.g., in Lev 5:6-7, which deals with physical ritual impurities that signify mortality.

291 Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 3-12, 104-14; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 342-45.
demand for remorse and rectification, we see the genesis of repentance, the doctrine that will flower into full bloom with Israel's prophets.  

Sinners have incurred damages to God by their sinning, but Yahweh's Servant, by giving his life as Reparation Offering, makes full compensation to God for the damages. Thus Yahweh's Servant also provided for sinners a legal aspect of restoration to the right relationship with God. What has been left for Israel and the nations to do now is only their confession and repentance (even though, in Pentateuchal ritual texts, these precede the sacrifice), which is depicted not only in the confession of the "we" in the Suffering Servant Poem (esp. vss. 4-6) but also in the prophetic appeal for repentance (בושׁ) along with God's promise of forgiveness (סלוח) in 55:7. The successful/fruitful results of the vicarious sacrifice of Yahweh's Servant as Reparation Offering are mentioned in Isa 53:10b-11, which is clearly shown in the parallel structure

292Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 345; for a more detailed discussion, see ibid., 373-78; idem, Cult and Conscience, 114-24. To be noted in this connection is Milgrom's remark in his "The Book of Leviticus," 72: "The sacrificial laws here reach their ethical summit. The same reparation due for damage to God's property is specified for one's neighbor—with the significant priority that only after rectification has been made with man can it be sought from God." Also to be noted is Milgrom's argument in his "Further on the Expiatory Sacrifices," 514 (cf. 511), that the verb אָשָׁם ("feel guilt") "emphasizes the action of conscience in the expiation of sin." The priestly doctrine of repentance is reinforced by the element of "confession" (יָדָה Hithpael) in Num 5:7.

293Wenham, 111, argued: "The reparation offering presents a commercial picture of sin. Sin is a debt which man incurs against God." Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 135, remarked: "If the Israelite reparation offering reveals a role of Christ's sacrifice, it encapsulates a mystery. When sinners commit wrong against God, it is God who pays the reparation by giving his Servant [Isa 53:10aβ]. What kind of sense does that make? This grace is the profoundly wise 'foolishness' of the gospel (1 Cor 1:18, 21, 23, 25), so paradoxical that it is best expressed with oxymorons."

294Cf. Eichrodt, 2:469-70; Mowinckel, 211, 213; Rowley, The Unity of the Bible, 56, 58; idem, From Moses to Qumran, 101-102, 106-107; idem, Worship in Israel: Its Form and Meaning (Philadelphia, PA: Fortress, 1967), 142-43. Rowley correctly mentioned: "It does not speak of a sacrifice that merely ex opere operato achieves something independently of the spirit of the worshippers, and it is not therefore like the sacrifices that the pre-exilic prophets so freely condemned. It conforms to the pattern of sacrifice as conceived in the Law, in that it is the organ of the spirit of man before it becomes the organ of blessing unto him, yet its blessing is not achieved by the spirit he brings, but is achieved in and for him as the act of God, who lays his iniquity on the Servant in the moment of his confession [and repentance]" (The Unity of the Bible, 58).
of vss. 10-11 as follows:

A  Yahweh's pleasure: Servant's suffering
    Servant's obedience: נפשו as אשא reparation offering (Protasis)

B  Servant will see (נואים) seed/prolong days (Apodosis a)

C  Yahweh's pleasure will prosper in Servant's hand (Apodosis b)

A¹  Servant's suffering: עמל, travail of נפשו

---

As shown in the parallel structure, the two verses are connected with each other terminologically (נואים and נפשו), thematically, and logically (i.e., in the sense of thought progression). The whole of the Servant's life, which has been described in vss. 2-10, is characterized by a single word נפשו in vs. 11 (see Klaus Baltzer, Deutero-Isaiah: A Commentary on Isaiah 40-55, trans. Margaret Kohl, ed. Peter Machinist, HCHC [Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001], 424; cf. Ps 90:10; Eccl 5:18 [H 19]; 8:15; 9:9), whereas his entire task of suffering is summarized in its corresponding word נפשו in vs. 10 (see Janowski, 66). Besides, the two words are closely related here with a leitmotif נפשו "(his life)". Most of all, the conditional "if" (אִם) in vs. 10a is answered in the affirmative in vs. 11a ("For the travail of his soul", see Koole, 330), and thus the Servant accomplishes Yahweh's will: "Negatively, in the bearing of iniquity; positively, in the provision of righteousness" (Motyer, 442).

These observations seem to offer us a solution to the alleged textual problem of יראה in vs. 11a. There are five significant verbs in the Suffering Servant Poem, each of which occurs twice exactly in the same form (i.e., ניבזה, vs. 3; הוחשב, vss. 3-4; יפתח, vs. 7; נואים, vss. 10-11; נפשו, vss. 4 and 12). From the usage of the other four verbs here we learn to realize that repetition for repetition's sake does not exist, especially in the biblical poetry (cf. James Muilenburg, "A Study in Hebrew Rhetoric: Repetition and Style," in Congress Volume: Copenhagen, 1953, VTSup 1 [Leiden: Brill, 1953], 99, 109; idem, "Form Criticism and Beyond," JBL 88 [1969]: 17). If we supply the verb נואים (in vs. 11a) with the noun זרע (in vs. 10bα) as its object, then the clause almost becomes a mere repetition of the corresponding part in vs. 10bα. Thus there is a possibility that the author may have dropped the object for poetic variations in expression. However, considering the following asyndetical נפשו, which seems to make a perfect parallelism with the asyndetical יveal (in vs. 10bα), the object can be more generally taken to be the progress or realization of Yahweh's plan of salvation (cf. Koole, 329-30). Probably in consideration of these, therefore, the author seems to have intentionally deleted the object of נואים from vs. 11a. For a more detailed discussion on this textual problem, see Koole, 328-29; for a similar relation between נפשו and יveal, see Pss 22:29-30 [H 30-31] and 25:13, as pointed out by Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 628 (cf. also Grogan, 304).

Motyer, 440, correctly observed: "Those who become the Servant's beneficiaries through the reparation offering become his children (his offspring/seed'). In 49:21 Zion asked 'Who bore me these?' Here is the answer (cf. 54:1-3, 13ff.). . . . We stray as sheep (vs. 6), we return as children."

Horst Seebass, "נפש נפה," TDOT, 9:511, rightly asserted that "Isa 53:11 speaks of 'the anguish of his נפה' ['not simply his anguish']—consider the context describing his torments!" Besides, it is "not his soul but his whole being" that suffered the torments.
Servant will see (יִרְאֶה) be satisfied
Servant will justify the many (Yahweh's pleasure accomplished positively)
Servant will bear their iniquities (Yahweh's pleasure accomplished negatively)

With regard to the sacrificial death of the Servant as Reparation Offering, especially to be noted is Motyer's observation on interrelationships between vss. 10-12 and between them and 52:13-15:

The verbal link . . . is the Servant's 'soul' (nepeš) in verses 10αβ, 11αα, 12βα (the first and last, translated life). The unifying . . . theme is the understanding of the Servant's death as a guilt offering (vs. 10αβ), a sin-bearing sacrifice which removes sin and imputes righteousness (vss. 11-12α), and as a voluntary self-identification and interposition (vs. 12β-c). Thus, finally the enigma posed by verses 13-15 [in Isa 52, i.e., how the unique exaltation (vs. 13) and the unique suffering (vs. 14) belong together,) is solved.298

As for the Leitmotiv or Leitwort נפשׁ ("his life/self") in vss. 10-12, Gane pointed out that "interestingly, the most basic, concrete meaning of נפשׁ is 'throat' [of humans or animals],"299 and that "in a sacrifice, it is an animal's throat that was slit [cf. נפש', 'slit the

298 Motyer, 437, italics his. Laato, 133, mentioned: "52:15 portrays the servant performing purificatory rites on behalf of the nations. The kings of the nations are depicted as remaining 'tight-lipped before him' as the servant once was when he performed the ָּעֶשׁ sacrifice (53:7 [sic 10])." For a more detailed discussion on the enigma, see Motyer, 424-26; for more detailed discussions on the interrelationships between 52:13-15 and 53:10-12, see Motyer, 423-24; particularly the literary structure of the Suffering Servant Poem in the next chapter of this research.

throat')."³⁰⁰ Besides, the Servant's נפשׁ here is to be considered, in light of Lev 17:11, as "ransom for life, i.e., a compensatory payment consisting of a life."³⁰¹ David Volgger, regarding the term נֶפֶשׁ in Isa 53:10 as a guilt offering, understood the expression נֶפֶשׁ הָרָע ("because he poured out himself/his life to death")³⁰² in vs. 12 in association with Lev 17:11.³⁰³ According to Volgger, the Servant's life (נֶפֶשׁ) here is compared to a fluid (see Gen 24:20; Lev 20:18-19; Isa 32:15).³⁰⁴ Hans Walter Wolff already pointed out:

This secondary assignment of the nepeš as the life to the blood instead of to the throat makes some phrases comprehensible . . . — the phrase which speaks about the emptying out of the nepeš (ךrh hiph. and piel, Ps 141:8; Isa 53:12: to death) as if it were a liquid (cf. Gen 24:20) or of the pouring out of the nepeš (שpk hithpael, Lam 2:12 . . . ; cf. Job 30:16).³⁰⁵

³⁰⁰Gane, personal communication, May 14, 2007. See Snaith, "The Verbs zābah and šāh at," 242-46, esp. 244; Milgrom, "Profane Slaughter and a Formulaic Key to the Composition of Deuteronomy," 14-15, 17; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 154-55. For the נָפָשׁ ritual slaughter, see נֵפָשׁ (2x) in Lev 7:2.

³⁰¹Gane, personal communication, February 20, 2008.

³⁰²Cf. NASB, NIV, and NRSV.


³⁰⁴Ibid., 495. See BDB, 788; HALOT, 2:881-82.

Horst Seebass concurred with him, arguing:

As Wolff suggests, the pouring out of the servant's nepeš to death (Isa 53:12; cf. Ps 141:8) may be related to the blood ritual, especially since vs. 10 incorporates another sacrificial image: 'when his nepeš makes an offering for sin («āšām).'

The text clearly speaks of bearing the guilt of others vicariously. 306

As investigated thus far, the term אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is to be regarded as a technical term for a reparation offering, 307 carrying all its cultic significance for an expiatory sacrifice. 308 However, it is different from the אָשָׁם as prescribed for the Hebrew cult not only in that it is a "human sacrifice," 309 but also in that the אָשָׁם sacrifice here is

---

306 Seebass, 514.

307 Even though the context of the אָשָׁם is a legal situation (cf. Lev 5:15, 17; 6:2-5 [H 5:21-24]), אָשָׁם is clearly a cultic term. Motyer, 439, observed that not only the term אָשָׁם but also two other terms in Isa 53:10aβ derived from the vocabulary of the offering אָשָׁם in Lev 5:17, where the individual making the offering is depicted as נֶפֶשׁ and the occasion is introduced by אִם.

308 Cf. Rodríguez, "Substitution," 294. North, The Second Isaiah, 243, remarked: "It is not necessary to assume that it [«āšām] is used here in its full technical meaning, but there is reason to think that the word was chosen deliberately." However, North's argument for the reason is mistaken at least at two points. First, even the purification offering expiates some deliberate sins (see Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 97, 118-126), but North thought that only the reparation offering expiates deliberate sins, by mentioning, "Even the sin-offering only availed for sins committed in ignorance" (The Second Isaiah, 243). Second, the Israelites have committed the deliberate offenses requiring the «āšām, the benefits of which extend to the heathen in the Suffering Servant Poem, but North argued: "The guilt-offering is said to cover such deliberate offenses as breach of faith and robbery with extortion. . . . These are such crimes as the heathen may have committed and this is probably the reason for the choice of «āšām here" (ibid., 243). It is to be remembered that these sacrifices were for Israel.

309 As Laato, 149, correctly argued, "it should be noted that there is a clear difference between the actual practice of the human sacrifice and the use of the sacrificial language in order to explain theologically the innocent suffering of the righteous."

The usage of the verb נָשָׁה here in Isa 53:10 for the sacrifice is strange (Koole, 321), since the verb is not used elsewhere in connection with sacrifices (Motyer, 439; cf. "أش" in Lev 17:11 of Yahweh, appointing sacrificial blood on the altar" [Gane, personal communication, May 14, 2007]). Koole, 321, mentioned that Isa 53:1αβ "refrains from using a common sacrificial term because there is now no question of a material compensation but of someone who offers himself." Motyer, 439, remarked: "Possibly, Isaiah found the customary verb 'to bring' (hophel of בֹּֽא) unacceptable as the Lord is not 'bringing' the sacrifice, for it is being made to him. (He is providing but not bringing). The Servant is not 'bringing' the sacrifice for he is the sacrifice. We are not 'bringing' the sacrifice but coming to that which has been provided on our behalf. Was it for this reason that Isaiah found a different word and, being fully aware of the ambiguities inherent in what he was saying, was nevertheless happy to leave it so?"
heightened to a corporate offering, whereas elsewhere in the OT this particular animal sacrifice is only for the individual, never part of the corporate offerings (e.g., Num 28-29).310 Thus Arvid S. Kapelrud is right in observing:

In the Servant Songs it is spoken about 'an offering for sin' [Isa 53:10] of a really uncommon kind. It is no question of goat or lamb, to erase the sin of which a single person was guilty. Here is an offering of great dimensions. It is the Chosen Servant of Yahweh who had taken upon himself the sins of the 'many' and had given himself as an offering for sin, in order to have all this sin erased. Here are old ideas about offerings and expiation taken up into a new, greater context with overnational, cosmic dimensions. It was not a question of the sin of the individual, but of the sin and violence of the 'many'. It was a heavy burden which the Servant carried, and his offering was a complete one.311

Most scholars have concurred regarding אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 as a technical cultic term.312 However, some have refused to accept this interpretation.313 Bernd Janowski is remarkable," however, as Koole, 322 (see also Motyer, 439-40), pointed out, "how the verb [םֶשַׁ יֶנֶשַׁ] is unfolded in the 'Songs of the Servant': Yahweh imposed on the Servant the task of 'establishing' justice in the world (42:4), Yahweh 'equipped' his Servant for the task (2x: 49:2), the Servant 'set' his face like a flint amidst mockery to the grim task of obedience (50:7), and finally his soul 'lay itself down' to the completion of the task (53:10). Motyer, 439, even cited Num 21:9, where the same verb is used of Moses' 'setting' the bronze serpent upon the standard (תָּשִׂים).

For debates on the issue of the subject of תָּשִׂים and the translation of 53:10aβ, see, e.g., Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:354-55; Rodríguez, "Substitution," 294; Koole, 322-23. For the translation, "When/If his life makes an אָשָׁם" in the sense of "When/If the Servant places his life as an הָשָׁם," see, e.g., Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:353-55; Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 628; Rodríguez, "Substitution," 294: Koole, 323. Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:354, following Alexander, Later Prophecies of Isaiah, 18, maintained: "His soul is not a mere substitution for himself, but shows that the very life is to be the oblation" (italics his). Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:355, added: "The thought of the protasis is that the very life of the servant will be made an expiatory sacrifice."

310 Gane, personal communication, May 14, 2007; cf. Rowley, The Unity of the Bible, 57-58, 104. Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 98, is correct in observing: "The ḥāšām never served as part of the public, temple cult, nor was it ever prescribed for rectifying the offenses of the entire people or of its priesthood, as was true of some varieties of ḥat.tā talli. . . . The ḥāšām, on the other hand, bore no relationship to the purity of the altar or temple."


312 See, e.g., Alexander, Later Prophecies of Isaiah, 271-72; Delitzsch, 305-307; Torrey, 421; Mowinckel, 203, 209; H. C. Thomson, "The Significance of the Term ḥasham in the Old Testament," TGUOS 14 (1953): 20-26, esp. 20, 26; Rowley, The Unity of the Bible, 55; idem, From Moses to Qumran, 101; idem, Worship in Israel, 142; Rignell, 89, 91; Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:354-55; Eichrodt, 2:452; McKenzie, Second Isaiah, 132, 135; Rowley, Worship in Ancient Israel, 127-28, 142-43; Karl

313See, e.g., Julius Wellhausen, Prolegomena to the History of Israel, with a reprint of the article Israel from the Encyclopaedia Britannica, trans. J. Sutherland Black and Allan Menzies, with pref. by W. Robertson Smith (Edinburgh: A. & C. Black, 1885), 73; Duhm, Das Buch Jesaia: Übersetzt und erklärt, 403; Marti, 351; W.O.E. Oesterley, Sacrifices in Ancient Israel: Their Origin, Purposes and Development (New York: Macmillan, 1937), 76, 232, 237-38, 287; Isaiah Sonne, "Isaiah 53:10-12," JBL 78 (1959): 335-42, especially 337; von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:257, n. 31; Hans-Peter Müller, "Ein Vorschlag zu Jes 53, 10f.," ZAW 81 (1969): 377-80; Snaith, "Isaiah 40-66," 196; Whybray, Thanksgiving, 63-66; idem, Isaiah 40-66, 179; Janowski, 67-70; Hermisson, 37; Spieckermann, 3; Reventlow, 28-29, 33; Childs, 417-18; Seitz, 467; Henning-Hess, 624-26. Wellhausen, 73, asserted that "in Isa 53:10, a passage which is certainly late, asham must not be taken in the technical sense of the ritual legislation, but simply . . . in the sense of guilt, borne by the innocent for the guilty." Thomson, 26, is right in observing: "Wellhausen agrees that the idea of guilt borne by the innocent for the guilty is present, although curiously he denies that "āšām is to be taken in the technical sense of the ritual legislation." Mentioning that some scholars (e.g., Marti and Müller) regarded the statement (i.e., the Servant as "āšām) as a later interpolation and that others (e.g., Duhm and Sonne) eliminated the term "āšām altogether in their conjectural reconstructions of the text, Whybray, Isaiah 40-66, 179, argued: "Nowhere else in the OT is it stated that a man's life can be a guilt-offering, whether in a literal or a metaphorical sense, and the idea would appear to be entirely foreign to OT thought. If the author had intended to introduce such a novel and astonishing idea, we should expect him to have stated it more clearly. It should also be noted that even if the verse did speak of the Servant as having in fact made himself an offering for sin this would not necessarily imply more than that he was ready to die" (italics his). Whybray seems to have had great difficulty in accepting the "unique" idea of the Servant as guilt-offering, as we find out that he frequently employed the word "unique(ness)" (see Thanksgiving, esp. 64-66). But, in light of the unique messages in the book of Isaiah, don't we have to accept the uniqueness of Isaiah's messages as they are?
secular contexts in which reparations for guilt-incurring encroachments are demanded (cf. Gen 26:10; 1 Sam 6:3-4, 8, 17), and that the term made its way from there, through several intermediate stages and after the completion of Isa 53, into the priestly sacrificial text (cf. Lev 4-5, 7).\textsuperscript{314} Considering the basic meaning of אָשָׁם as "the obligation to discharge guilt that arises from a situation of guilt,"\textsuperscript{315} Janowski has applied the meaning to the term פֶּשֶׁן in Isa 53:10a, and thus he has understood the verse in the sense of the "surrender of [the Servant's own] life as a means of 'wiping out guilt'."\textsuperscript{316} Then Janowski has argued that "'surrender of one's own life as a means of wiping out guilt' is ... identical with 'taking over the consequences of other's actions,'" and that "the expression about the vicarious 'bearing' of the guilt of others (vs. 4a; cf. vss. 11b, 12b) means to say nothing other than this."\textsuperscript{317} Thus in Isa 53:10a and its key term פֶּשֶׁן Janowski has found out the same aspects of vicarious suffering that are evident in the fourth Servant Song as a whole.\textsuperscript{318}

Janowski's position,\textsuperscript{319} however, has several critical problems. First, in regard

---

\textsuperscript{314}Janowski, 68-69 (italics his). Almost in the same vein Karl Elliger, \textit{Leviticus}, HAT 4 (Tübingen: Mohr, 1966), 78, already argued in regard to פֶּשֶׁן that "along with the restitution which originated in the civil law ... the sacrificial demand forced its way into the law of restitution, and thus a cultic law was produced out of a piece of civil law." Apart from the issue of origin, Jacob Milgrom has also stressed the ethical/legal dimension of the cult in general as well as that of the reparation offering in particular (\textit{Leviticus 23-27: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary} [New York: Doubleday, 2001], 2440-46), against Israel Knohl, who has argued for their exclusive ritual dimension ("The Priestly Torah versus the Holiness School: Ideological Aspects," in \textit{Proceedings of the Tenth World Congress of Jewish Studies, Division A: The Bible and Its World} [Jerusalem: Magnes Press, 1990], 52; idem, \textit{The Sanctuary of Silence: The Priestly Torah and the Holiness School} [Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1995], 175). For a more detailed discussion on their views, see Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 203, n. 21.

\textsuperscript{315}Cf. Knierim, "פֶּשֶׁן," 193.

\textsuperscript{316}Janowski, 69.

\textsuperscript{317}Ibid., italics his.

\textsuperscript{318}Ibid.

\textsuperscript{319}Followed by some scholars, e.g., Spieckermann, 3; Hermisson, 37; Otfried Hofius, "The Fourth Servant Song in the New Testament Letters," in \textit{The Suffering
to the origin of the term אָשָׁם, which is closely related to its basic meaning, Janowski has considered אָשָׁם primarily as a legal term, just as Karl Elliger already argued from 1 Sam 6 that the אָשָׁם was originally a Schadenersatz ("restitution of damages"). However, as Milgrom correctly asserted, "1 Sam 6 does not concern a civil crime and cannot be used as a basis for claiming a civil origin for the אָשָׁם." Second, though

Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Sources, 167-68; Reventlow, 28-29 (cf. 33, 37); Childs, 418. Janowski's position is further clarified by Daniel P. Bailey, "Translator's Preface," in The Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Sources, xii, n. 5: "Janowski goes on to explain that in Isa 53:10, the asham involves only the obligation to discharge guilt that arises from occasions of human guilt. Therefore, the fact that the Servant makes his life an asham to nullify this guilt does not necessarily imply that the Servant is to be compared to the animal asham-victim or 'guilt offering' in the sense in which asham appears in Leviticus. Janowski proposes the term Schuldgabe, as distinct from the traditional Schuldopfer to explain how the Servant voluntarily surrenders his innocent life to eliminate the guilt of others—something a typical asham-victim cannot be said to have done." Janowski's influence can be felt even in the cultic interpretation of Baltzer, 421: "The Servant has thus put his life in pledge so that the guilt might be 'paid off.' A legal interpretation of this kind is consistent with the rest of the text. But it is impossible to overlook the fact that אָשָׁם as 'guilt offering' is a technical term for a special form of sacrifice. This is at least true for the postexilic period with which we have to do in DtIsa [i.e., Deutero-Isaiah]. . . . In DtIsa it is only in this one important passage that a sacrificial term is definitely used."

Following Kellermann, "דָּשָׁם," 430-31, and Knierim, "דָּשָׁם," 192-93. Von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:257, n. 31, already took such a legal interpretation: "It is perhaps best to understand דָּשָׁם [Isa 53:10] in the more general legal sense of 'substitute,' 'compensation' (1 Sam 6:3). The reason for von Rad's position was that the cultic interpretation of דָּשָׁם "perhaps . . . contradicts Deutero-Isaiah himself (Isa 43:22f.)," which is not based on a proper contextual understanding of the passage (see the "Theological Reflection" section of the final chapter of this research). Excluding this problem, von Rad's observation is remarkable: "The statement that the Servant gave his life as 'an offering for sin' (דָּשָׁם vs. 10) is another of the variations played on the theme of vicarious suffering. If this alludes specifically to the sacrifices offered in the cult, a special importance would accrue to the expression from the theological point of view; for the suggestion that the Servant's sacrifice surpassed the sacrificial system would certainly be unparalleled in the Old Testament" (ibid.).

Elliger, Leviticus, 76.

Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 327; idem, Cult and Conscience, 14, n. 47. Janowski dated not only the term דָּשָׁם but also the priestly sacrificial legislation to the post-exilic period. Knierim observed that "in the legal sections of Exod and Deut, the root [דָּשָׁם] does not occur at all," that the historical books, the wisdom literature, and the prophets used the root rarely, and thus that "around 70% of the corpus [where the root occurs] belongs to the cultico-theologically stamped texts" (idem, "דָּשָׁם," 191). Knierim, "דָּשָׁם," 191 (as well as Kellermann, 431, 435), dated those texts to the exilic or post-exilic period. Snaith, "Isaiah 40-66," 196, also asserted: "Here [in Isa 53:10] דָּשָׁם means
recognizing the Servant's vicarious "bearing" of others' guilt, Janowski made the mistake of not acknowledging the existence of any cultic terms (esp. אָשָׁם) in the Suffering Servant Poem.\(^{323}\) How is it possible for Janowski to consider not only the surrender of the Servant's own life as a means of wiping out of others' guilt as identical with his taking over the consequences of other's actions but also his vicarious bearing of others' guilt as nothing other than that, but to detect a cultic allusion neither in the term אָשָׁם nor in the expressions of "bearing sin" (יִשָּׂא, Isa 53:11bβ; אָשָׁם אָשָׁם, vs. 12ca)? How is it possible to find out in Isa 53:10a and the key term אָשָׁם the same evident aspects of the vicarious suffering in the Poem as a whole, but not to acknowledge the existence of any cultic terms in it? Especially the expressions of "bearing sin" (יִשָּׂא, Isa 53:11bβ; אָשָׁם אָשָׁם, vs. 12ca) themselves are closely associated with the Hebrew sacrificial cult. These will be investigated later in this chapter.

Heike Henning-Hess also argued that "the use of the אָשָׁם concept in Isa 53:10 neither terminologically nor content-wise points to an understanding of the אָשָׁם idea as a term for a sacrificial offering."\(^{324}\) But, his thesis has a fundamental problem of forced compensation, substitution. The so-called 'guilt-offering' . . . was presented in the Second Temple. . . . There is no record of this particular sacrifice before the post-exilic period, and we therefore see no reference here to any ritual sacrifice." Most significantly, however, Milgrom, based on his comparative study of the verbs אָשָׁם and שׁוּב, convincingly argued for the pre-exilic dating of the verb אָשָׁם and thus of the priestly legislation on sacrificial expiation (Milgrom, Cult and Conscience, 119-23; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 373-78). As Milgrom asserted in his Cult and Conscience, 14 (see also idem, Leviticus 1-16, 327), even the commutability of the אָשָׁם supports its antiquity, since it occurs only twice in the early biblical narratives and in both texts it occurs not as an animal sacrifice but as a monetary payment (see 1 Sam 6:3, 4, 8, 17; 2 Kgs 12:17).\(^{323}\)

Janowski, 67-68, argued that the Suffering Servant Song makes mention neither of cultic procedures nor of cultic vocabulary. Totally in line with Janowski, Childs, 418, argued: "The servant did not ritually obliterate the sin . . . rather the terminology is that he 'bore' or 'carried it' (יִשָּׂא, sbl)." However, Childs is right in maintaining that the vicarious role of the Servant lies as the exegetical key to the mystery of Isa 40-55 at the very heart of the prophetic message. Even though acknowledging the Servant's vicarious role in bearing the sins of others, unfortunately he did not notice that the expression of "bearing sin" is closely associated with the Hebrew sacrificial cult, and thus he came to make the same mistakes that Janowski did.\(^{324}\)

\(^{323}\)Janowski, 67-68.

\(^{324}\)Henning-Hess, 626.
reasoning in that he compared the use of the term אָשָׁם in a cultic text (Lev 5:14-6:7 [H 5:26]) and its use in a prophetic text (Isa 53:10) as if the two texts should be an exact parallel.325 Strictly speaking, they cannot precisely parallel each other, not only because their contexts are quite different but also because the term אָשָׁם in the Isaianic prophetic text is only an allusion to the one in the Hebrew cultic text.326

Concurring with Janowski’s correct observation that as "the central statement of the fourth Servant Song" Isa 53:10a "summarizes the Servant's entire task of suffering and explains it by the terms כָּפַר [cf. כָּפַר, vs. 10b] . . . and אָשָׁם,"327 we would ask a question, "Are there any other better terms than sacrificial cultic ones to describe the

325See ibid., 621-24. Henning-Hess pointed out that remarkably an expiation effect as the purpose of the sacrifice is not spoken of in the sense to be expressed with the key word כָּפַר (624). However, Koole, 321, rightly argued that, though the word כָּפַר is not employed, "the context talks clearly about the positive effect of the Servant's vicarious self-sacrifice." Besides, its parallel expression (כָּפַר/אָשָׁם + sin terms) significantly occurs in the Poem. Henning-Hess, 623-24, argued that the animals (נְדָשִׁים and אַיִל), with which the Servant is compared, are not offered for the reparation offering, that the situations in which these animals are mentioned (shearing and slaughtering) are not in connection with a sacrificial ritual, and thus that the animal comparison does not admit of Yahweh's Servant as a sacrificial animal for the reparation offering. In a sense his argument seems to be correct, but to be noted is that not only אַיִל ("ram": Lev 5:15, 16, 18; 6:6 [H 5:25]) but also כֶּבֶשׂ ("male lamb": Lev 14:10, 13 [for the cleansing of scaly skin disease]; Num 6:12 [for the renewing of an interrupted Nazarite vow]) is used for the reparation offering (cf. Averbeck, "אָשָׁם," 565). Furthermore, we are to be reminded of the following remark: "In vs. 7 it becomes clear that the prophet is thinking in sacrificial terms: the servant is 'like a lamb that is led to the slaughter.' The word used here (שֶׂה) is less precise than that used for lamb [or ram] in Leviticus, and may in fact refer to sheep or goats. An allusion to any type of animal sacrifice is therefore possible and may be intended. Nevertheless vs. 10 is more specific" (Wenham, 110, italics mine). However, Henning-Hess went so far as to mention that "the details about the actual ritual of the execution of the sacrifice are lacking [in Isa 53]" (624). See also Clines, 418: "The analogy between a slain animal and the suffering servant is far from obvious, and the ritual of sprinkling blood on the altar is without parallel [sic]."

326Simply put, they belong to "two different literary genres" (Gane, personal communication, May 14, 2007). To be noted in this vein is Dan 8, in which sacrificial animals (a ram and a male goat) appear not only as symbolic animals for two great empires but also as a preparation for the significant cultic theme of נִצְדַּק קֹדֶשׁ (vs. 14). In regard to the latter, however, for instance, neither of them is slaughtered (cf. זָחַב or שָחַט), but rather the male goat struck and killed the ram. Nevertheless, we cannot argue that they are not allusions to the Hebrew sacrificial cult.

substitutionary suffering and death of the Servant, which ultimately have the effect of vicarious expiation of sins not only of Israel but also of the nations?"

I would agree with Ronald E. Clements in that he emphasized the cultic dimension of the language in the Suffering Servant Poem, especially in regard to אָשָׁם in vs. 10.® Also in this connection, Joseph Blenkinsopp has argued:

It seems that it was the vocabulary of sacrifice that provided the prophetic author with the means for expressing this discovery about the significance of the Servant's suffering. The most explicit statement is that he served a function analogous to a reparation- or trespass-offering (אָשָׁם 53:10a).®

Therefore, the term אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is to be interpreted as a cultic technical term, which succinctly and significantly reveals the Servant's vicarious expiatory suffering and death.

Isaiah 53:11 has a term that seems to have legal-cultic connotations. The term

328Clements, 41-42, 47-48, 50-54. Clements asserted: "The language employed in the fourth [Servant] Song draws heavily upon cultic rites . . . (so especially vs. 10). . . . The surrendered life of the Servant may serve as a 'sin-offering' (Heb. אָשָׁם)" (47).

329Blenkinsopp, 351 (cf. 354); cf. also Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 268; Knight, 176-78. Blenkinsopp, 351, continued: "The Isaian poet does not state the analogy in formal terms or explore it at length, but it is hinted at elsewhere in the poem in the image of a sheep being led to the slaughter (53:7b) and the pouring out of the life-blood ([vs. 12b]; cf. Ps 141:8, the same verb [אֶרֶץ], also with nepeš)." Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 268, already argued almost the same: "The first part [of Isa 53:12b] could also be translated, 'because he poured out his blood (nepeš) to death'. This suggests a sacrifice of expiation, corresponding to the sacrificial term אָשָׁם (guilt offering) in vs. 10. These two clear pointers to an expiatory sacrifice as the explanation of the meaning of the Servant's suffering and death deserve to have particular attention given them."

Westermann went so far as to contend: "Since the suffering and death of the Servant is absolutely once for all in its character, the same holds true of the expiatory sacrifice which he offered—because it is a once for all act, it takes the place of the recurrent expiatory sacrifice, and so abolishes this. Here, of course, this is not carried to its logical conclusion. But the αποκλίσεως of the Epistle to the Hebrews and its logical conclusions are already implicit here" (ibid.). Note also Kellermann's argument in his "אָשָׁם," 435: "Not only does this song [Isa 52:13-53:12] compare the Servant with a lamb that is led to the slaughter (53:7), but it also says that he makes his soul an אָשָׁם 'offering for sin.' The vicarious suffering of the righteous is the guilt-offering for the many. Like a guilt-offering, the death of the Servant results in atonement, the salvation of sinners from death."
The verb יַצְדִּיק, which is a Hiphil form of the verb צָדַק, not only as a denominative verb but also as a Qal stative verb, means "be in the right, be justified, be just/righteous." Thus the Hiphil form is taken to mean "do justly, declare or make righteous, justify, vindicate." The verb צָדַק occurs 41 times in the OT: 22 times in the Qal, 5 in the Piel, 12 in the Hiphil, and only once each in the Niphal and the Hithpael. In the Pentateuch צָדַק Qal and Hithpael occur once each in Gen 38:26 and 44:16, and that in a legal context. In the Prophets צָדַק Qal occurs four times and the Piel three, but only in forensic settings. In Isaiah צָדַק Qal occurs only in the so-called trial speech (Isa 43:9, 26; 45:25), whereas in Jeremiah the Piel occurs just once (Jer 3:11) with a legal connotation. In Ezekiel, צָדַק Qal occurs just once (Ezek 16:52) and the Piel twice (vss. 51-52), all in legal contexts. In the Wisdom literature צָדַק Qal occurs 17 times and the Piel twice, but only in legal contexts. In the book of Psalms (19:9 [H 10]; 51:4 [H 6]; 143:2]), צָדַק Qal occurs with a legal connotation. The forensic connotation of the verb צָדַק seems to be most clearly shown in its frequent occurrences in the book of Job (Qal [14x]; Piel [2x]; Hiphil [1x]), which is, among other things, about justice, both the possibility of righteous

---

330BDB, 842; contra HALOT, 3:1004.


333Cf. BDB, 842; Waltke and O'Connor, 438-39.

334Cf. Mandelkern, 984-85; Lisowsky, 1206-207; Even-Shoshan, 750; VOT, 208-209.

335For צָדַק Qal, see Job 4:17; 9:2, 15, 20; 10:15; 11:2; 13:18; 15:14; 22:3; 25:4; 33:12; 34:5; 35:7; 40:8; for צָדַק Piel, see 32:2; 33:32; For צָדַק Hiphil, see 27:5.
humans before God and the nature of divine justice.336

The Hiphil of דַּקְצָ of under this investigation, like all the other verbal forms, is primarily forensic.337 It never occurs in the so-called cultic writings (i.e., Leviticus, Numbers, and Ezekiel), and all the other verbal forms, as already observed, never occur in the Pentateuch except Genesis. Its forensic aspect is more clearly shown by its contrasting parallel רָשַׁע Hiphil (Deut 25:1; 1 Kgs 8:32; Prov 17:15; Isa 50:8-9) as well as the juxtaposition of the two contrasting legal parties צַדִּיק and רָשַׁע (Exod 23:7; Deut 25:1; 1 Kgs 8:32; 2 Chr 6:23; Prov 17:15; Isa 5:23).338 As Helmer Ringgren remarked, Deut 25:1 "inculcates the universal principle" that in a legal dispute one should acquit (דַּקְצָ Hiphil, "declare righteous") the innocent (the "righteous," צַדִּיק) and condemn (רָשַׁע Hiphil, "declare guilty") the guilty (the "wicked," רָשָׁע).339 In regard to the forensic aspect of דַּקְצָ, Harold G. Stigers mentioned: "In the OT law, to be innocent and to be righteous were one and the same. The maintenance of righteousness is frequently expressed by

---

336Cf. Reimer, 754-57, especially 754. Eric Murray Livingston also noted the strikingly frequent use of verbal דַּקְצָ in his "A Study of דַּקְצָ (s·dq) in Daniel 8:14, Its Relation to the 'Cleanse' Semantic Field, and Its Importance for Seventh-day Adventism's Concept of Investigative Judgment" (Ph.D. dissertation, University of New England, 2007), 157-59. According to Sylvia Huberman Scholnick, "Lawsuit Drama in the Book of Job" (Ph.D. dissertation, Brandeis University, 1976), the book of Job is "a drama portraying a lawsuit between Job and his opponent God for which the friends are judges and witnesses" (p. vi), where Job finds in God's explanation of דַּקְצָ the solution to his lawsuit (p. 265), the form of which becomes the vehicle for exploring its meaning/nature (p. 266). In the Joban lawsuit drama, as E. M. Livingston rightly observed, "verbal דַּקְצָ [as a Leitwort] is fairly evenly distributed through the speeches and employed by every disputant after the initial introduction," and "the 42 chapters of Job are one long, integrated account, tightly structured about the twin themes of anthropodicy and theodicy that consistently call for דַּקְצָ to express those themes" ("A Study of דַּקְצָ (s·dq) in Daniel 8:14," 159).

337Also Koole, 332-33; Martin Pröbstle, "Truth and Terror: A Text-oriented Analysis of Daniel 8:9-14" (Ph.D. dissertation, Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, Andrews University, 2006), 394, 397, 399.


the Hiphil stem. This construction refers to . . . declaring righteous.²³⁴ The forensic connotation of צָדַק Hiphil is also confirmed by its related terms בָּרָה ("dispute/strife"; n. in Deut 25:1; vb. in Isa 50:8), בָּשָׁל ("judge"; 1 Kgs 8:32; 2 Chr 6:23; Ps 82:3), בָּשָׁל ("judgment"; Isa 50:8), and פָּדֹּ֖ף ("righteousness"; 1 Kgs 8:32; 2 Chr 6:23; Isa 5:23).

Therefore, as shown so far, the verb צָדַק is definitely a legal/forensic term.³⁴¹ Nevertheless, a few scholars have maintained that צָדַק belongs to cultic terminology.³⁴² Von Rad contended that צָדַק is a cultic term,³⁴³ since "the term 'righteous' (צדק)
was scarcely predicable of anyone in ancient Israel apart from cultic considerations."³⁴⁴
Thus, for von Rad righteousness is "something prescribed by the cultus as a means of
obtaining the favour God has offered to Israel,"³⁴⁵ and that "which the worshipper
appropriates to himself as he stands before Yahweh."³⁴⁶ On the basis of his alleged
cultic reasoning, von Rad further argued in relation to Gen 15:6 that, just as בֵּשֶׁם,
"reckon," is a cultic term, so is the term יְזָכָר.³⁴⁷

However, in the light of the overall usage of the verb בֵּשֶׁם and its nouns in the
OT,³⁴⁸ the usage of בֵּשֶׁם Niphal (cf. Lev 7:18b; 17:4; Num 18:27) is not enough to
support von Rad's cultic "reckoning" (בֵּשֶׁם) allegedly pronounced by a priest on Yahweh's
behalf as a response to a worshipper's offering.³⁴⁹ Besides, there have been no cultic
attestations of the root חָשַׁב in the other Semitic languages.³⁵⁰ Furthermore, Hartley
argued against von Rad that "the occurrence of this vb. [חָשַׁב] with סֵדָאָגא, 'righteousness' [in Gen 15:6], is distinctive, being without parallel in a cultic text,"³⁵¹ and
thus that "this fact is definitive evidence that the cult is not the setting for interpreting this

³⁴⁴Ibid., 249; cf. Rodríguez, "Significance of the Cultic Language in Daniel
8:9-14," 539.
³⁴⁵Von Rad, "'Righteousness' and 'Life','" 250.
³⁴⁶Ibid., 251; cf. Rodríguez, "Significance of the Cultic Language," 540-41.
³⁴⁸Cf. BDB, 362-64; HALOT, 1:359-61; 2:572. The nouns are בֵּשֶׁם ("fabric
worker/embroiderer" or "technician"), בֵּשֶׁם ("reckoning"), בֵּשֶׁם ("plan/invention"), and מַחֲשָׁבָה/מַחֲשֶׁבֶת ("thought/intent," or "plan/invention"). For the nouns, see also K. Seybold,
"חָשַׁב" TDOT, 5:228-29; W. Schottroff, "חָשַׁב" To Think," TLOT, 2:479-80;
³⁴⁹See Seybold, "חָשַׁב," 240-44; Hartley, "חָשַׁב," 305-306; pace Schottroff,
481.
³⁵⁰Cf. Seybold, "חָשַׁב," 229-30; Schottroff, 479; Hartley, "חָשַׁב," 304.
³⁵¹Hartley, "חָשַׁב," 306.
Also against von Rad's thesis, David J. Reimer succinctly criticized: "As is often the case in form-critical investigation, von Rad's conclusions rest on a reconstructed *Sitz im Leben* that draws its inspiration from loosely related texts, in this case especially Lev 7:18b and Ezek 18:5-9; but the former does not refer to ṣḏq, and the latter does not use ḥšb!" Von Rad seems to have gone too far in his allegation for ḥšq and ḥḏq, and thus we have to conclude that the term ḥḏq is no more a cultic term than ḥšq.  

It is true that among the many responsibilities of the priest was the one of giving decisions in questions that involve social laws (Deut 17:8-13; cf. 19:15-21). However, Rodríguez speculated when he contended that the term ṣḏq under our investigation "could be one of those cases," and that, "more specifically, it could be a priestly declaratory formula." As for certain cases, by pronouncing such formulae distinctly and solemnly the priest as Yahweh's mouthpiece, "acting with Yahweh's full authority, declared the result of a cultic investigation." However, there is no evidence that ṣḏq has anything to do with such cases and thus there is no textual evidence for its association with priestly cultic declarations.

---


353 Reimer, 753; cf. Seybold, "Ḥšq ḥāšab," 242-43. For more discussions on the *Sitz im Leben* of Gen 15:6, see Seybold, "Ḥšq ḥāšab," 242-44; Hartley, "Ḥšp," 306. In regard to Ezek 18:5, Snaith mentioned: "G. von Rad is doubtless right in saying that here 'the righteous man' (ṣ̄ ṣḏq) is the man who observes the correct ritual, and it may well be that this is the meaning in those psalms which are clearly cultic in origin and purpose, but this cannot be made into a general rule for every occurrence of the word. This would be *culticism* gone mad" ("The Verbs ṣāḇaḥ and ṣāḥaṭ," 244, n. 3, italics mine).


355 Rodríguez, "Substitution," 298.

Rodríguez, following von Rad, argued, "The expression 'by his knowledge' suggests that after the cultic investigation the Servant is fully aware of the situation, and he can, therefore, declare the many as righteous." Then Rodríguez concluded that the term יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 denotes "a judicial function or, better, a priestly function of judicial character." Therefore, in light of the problems of von Rad's thesis on the alleged cultic terms of חָשַׁב and צָדק, it is clear that Rodríguez's argument in regard to the term יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 is just another conjecture and no more. Such a priestly/cultic declaration in association with צָדק is not to be found even in the Psalms, the so-called hymns of the Hebrew cult. In addition, the usage of the verbal forms of the root צָדק in the Psalms does not show any cultic associations.

Rodríguez is not correct even in contending that "what in Leviticus was a declaration of purity or cleanliness is in the Psalms a declaration of righteousness," and thus that "to be pronounced pure (ritually) was the same as to be declared righteous (morally)." Even though he asserted, in line with von Rad, that quite a few such

Rodrettably E. M. Livingston also seems to support von Rad's thesis on צָדק and thus to follow in Rodríguez's foes (31-33, 170-71, 176-77, 229-33).

Rodríguez, "Substitution," 298; idem, "Significance of the Cultic Language," 542.

Rodríguez, "Substitution," 298.

For Rodríguez's full-fledged speculation in regard to the root צָדק, see his "Significance of the Cultic Language," 537-43. After his lengthy argument for the alleged cultic term צָדק, we surprisingly come to confront his contradictory statement: "The verb used by Daniel [in 8:14] to refer to the purification of the sanctuary (םdq) is a legal term" (549). In that way he seems to have regarded צָדק as a legal term in a cultic context.

See צָדק Qal in Ps 19:9 [H 10], 51:4 [H 6], and 143:2, and the Hiphil in Ps 82:3. Thus, Rodríguez is not correct in concluding, "The book of Psalms reveals the significant fact that the root שdq was at the heart of the cultus. The cultus in its entirety seems to revolve around the concept of שdq" (ibid., 543).

Ibid., 541.

Ibid. As Gane also pointed out through personal communication, it seems that Rodríguez did not fully understand the difference between cleansing from physical
formulae are to be found in the cultus, the priest could pronounce his cultic declarations only in certain cases of physical ritual cleanness or uncleanness. Furthermore, as for the cases of moral cleanliness, there is not a single case for the priestly/cultic declaration of cleanness or forgiveness in the OT.

Cultic associations of the legal term צָדַק seem to be possible only because of the wide semantic range of the root יִצָּדַק, which is shown by its parallel occurrences with terms for cleanness/purity. The terms are יִצָּדַה ("be pure, clean") and יִצָּדַב ("pronounce clean") (Lev 13:6, 13, 17, 23, 28, 34, 37, 59; 14:7, 11, 48) and "pronounce unclean" (Lev 13:3, 8, 11, 15, 20, 22, 25, 27, 30, 44, 59; cf. 20:25) respectively. Thus the speech act in regard to each verb is clearly documented in the priestly laws on the cases of both the scaly skin disease and the scale disease in a house resulting from fungus. The Pual of יִצָּדַב is also declarative, and thus it means "be pronounced clean" (Ezek 22:24). See Waltke and O'Connor, 402-403, 419; cf. BDB, 372, 379-80; HALOT, 2:369-70, 375-76.

Especially to be noted are the two verbs יִצָּדַב and יִצָּדַב, which are opposite in meaning. The verbs in the Piel can be declarative, and they mean "pronounce clean" (Lev 13:6, 13, 17, 23, 28, 34, 37, 59; 14:7, 11, 48) and "pronounce unclean" (Lev 13:3, 8, 11, 15, 20, 22, 25, 27, 30, 44, 59; cf. 20:25) respectively. Thus the speech act in regard to each verb is clearly documented in the priestly laws on the cases of both the scaly skin disease and the scale disease in a house resulting from fungus. The Pual of יִצָּדַב is also declarative, and thus it means "be pronounced clean" (Ezek 22:24). See Waltke and O'Connor, 402-403, 419; cf. BDB, 372, 379-80; HALOT, 2:369-70, 375-76.

As particularly the descriptions of Yahweh's word in Ps 19:8-9 [H 9-10] and three variations on the same question of human צָדַק before God in Job (4:17; 15:14; 25:4) show, the roots יִצָּדַב, יִצָּדַב, יִצָּדַב, and צָדַק are closely related in meaning (cf. Ringgren, "ץָדַק", 294-95). Especially E. M. Livingston has noted the associations of the root יִצָּדַק with the "cleanse" semantic field not only in the book of Job but also throughout the OT and correctly argued that "the semantic fields of צָדַק and the 'cleanse' vocabulary have significant conceptual interrelation, particularly in the context of conflict and judicial enquiry" (163; see also Scholnick, 3). However, Rodríguez seems to have gone too far in arguing that "the association of the root s dq with cultic terms and concepts is a clear indication that it played a significant role in the cultus" ("Significance of the Cultic Language," 542-43).

Job 15:14; 25:4; Ps 51:4 [H 6]; cf. Job 8:6. See also the usage of its by-form יִצָּדַב ("keep clean/pure, cleanse") in Ps 73:13 and 119:9 and the Hithpael ("make oneself clean, cleanse oneself") in Isa 1:16, and יִצָּדַב Hiphil ("make clean, cleanse") in Job 9:30. See BDB, 269; HALOT, 1:269. As for the adjective צָדַק, Negoitā and Ringgren mentioned that in its literal usage with reference to cultic products (oil for the golden lampstand [Exod 27:20; Lev 24:2] and frankincense [Exod 30:34; Lev 24:7]), "the reference could be to pure, unadulterated material; since, however, we are dealing with products used in the cult, the notion of cultic purity has probably also infiltrated" (62; cf.
and purifier (קְצָקָה "key to the basic sense of the verb נָקָה", 10:14 (Qal contrast to Israel's unsatisfactory offerings in 1:7-10, 12-14 [דֹּאָה (370Gen 20:4-5; Exod 23:7; Job 22:19; 27:17; Ps 94:21; cf. Gen 44:10 (369Job 4:17 (368Ps 18:20 [H 21], 24 [H 25] (//2 Sam 22:21, 25) cf. Ps 19:8-9 [H 9-10] (ִּתְרַב Qal//רַב). Note also the Qal of the verb רָכְב ("purify/purge out, select") in Ezek 20:38, the Niphal ("purify oneself, keep clean") in Isa 52:11 (in a cultic context), the Piel ("purify") in Dan 11:35, the Hithpael ("purify oneself, show oneself pure") in Ps 18:26 [H 27] (//2 Sam 22:27) and Dan 12:10, and the Hiphil ("cleanse") in Jer 4:11. In connection with Isa 6:5 (שָׁפָה בְּּרוּרָה "unclean lips"), note Zeph 3:9 (הַרְפָּא "a clean lip"; cf. another Qal pass. ptc. of רַב in Job 33:3) for the usage of the adj. רַב, note especially Job 11:4 (cf. שָׁפָה בְּרוּרָה in 33:9). See BDB, 101, 141; HALOT, 1:153, 162-63. With ethical purity in the foreground, as Hamp, 310-11, argued, the "noncultic root נָקַק/זָכָה exhibits a certain semantic duality: on the one hand, the religious and ethical meaning "(cleanness)," and in its metaphorical usage "the religious and ethical meaning predominates" (Negoită and Ringgren, 63; see Job 11:4 [//2]; 16:17; 33:9 [//ן]; Prov 16:2; cf. its combination with רַב in Job 8:6, Prov 20:11 and 21:8). Besides, with ethical force in the foreground, as Negoită and Ringgren observed, "the word [צֶדָק/זָכָה] exhibits a certain semantic duality: on the one hand, צָדַק/זָכָה/זַקָּק "be free of claims" (62, referring to זהכ א"מ Livingston, discussion on the usage of Semitic equivalents of metals), or 'be free of claims'" (Negoită and Ringgren also noted that the Akkadian equivalent zakû "can mean 'be clear' (water, sky, etc.), 'be pure, clean' (clothes, persons, metals), or 'be free of claims'" (62, referring to CAD, 21:23-32; cf. Scholnick, 6). For a discussion on the usage of Semitic equivalents of נְבֵר/נְבָר see Scholnick, 5-8; for the forensic usage of the Hebrew root נְבֵר/נְבָר, see ibid., 9-10. Especially in the book of Job, as E. M. Livingston as well as Scholnick correctly observed, the usage of the root נְבֵר/נְבָר shows a notable penetration into the judicial semantic range (see E. M. Livingston, 160-63; Scholnick, 10-23).

("cleanness"), הָעָמ ("be clean/pure, cleanse"), and רָכְב ("clean, innocent/free from guilt or obligation"). It is to be noted that the verb נָקַק and its derivatives are the

366 Ps 18:20 [H 21], 24 [H 25] (//2 Sam 22:21, 25) cf. Ps 19:8-9 [H 9-10] (קְצָק Qal//רַב). Note also the Qal of the verb רָכְב ("purify/purge out, select") in Ezek 20:38, the Niphal ("purify oneself, keep clean") in Isa 52:11 (in a cultic context), the Piel ("purify") in Dan 11:35, the Hithpael ("purify oneself, show oneself pure") in Ps 18:26 [H 27] (//2 Sam 22:27) and Dan 12:10, and the Hiphil ("cleanse") in Jer 4:11. In connection with Isa 6:5 (שָׁפָה בְּּרוּרָה "unclean lips"), note Zeph 3:9 (הַרְפָּא "a clean lip"; cf. another Qal pass. ptc. of רַב in Job 33:3) for the usage of the adj. רַב, note especially Job 11:4 (cf. שָׁפָה בְּּרוּרָה in 33:9). See BDB, 101, 141; HALOT, 1:153, 162-63. With ethical purity in the foreground, as Hamp, 310-11, argued, the "noncultic root נָקַק/זָכָה exhibits a certain semantic duality: on the one hand, the religious and ethical meaning "(cleanness)," and in its metaphorical usage "the religious and ethical meaning predominates" (Negoită and Ringgren, 63; see Job 11:4 [//2]; 16:17; 33:9 [//ן]; Prov 16:2; cf. its combination with רַב in Job 8:6, Prov 20:11 and 21:8). Besides, with ethical force in the foreground, as Negoită and Ringgren observed, "the word [צֶדָק/זָכָה] exhibits a certain semantic duality: on the one hand, צָדַק/זָכָה/זַקָּק "be free of claims" (62, referring toζוח א"מ Livingston, discussion on the usage of Semitic equivalents of metals), or 'be free of claims'" (Negoită and Ringgren also noted that the Akkadian equivalent zakû "can mean 'be clear' (water, sky, etc.), 'be pure, clean' (clothes, persons, metals), or 'be free of claims'" (62, referring to CAD, 21:23-32; cf. Scholnick, 6). For a discussion on the usage of Semitic equivalents of נְבֵר/נְבָר see Scholnick, 5-8; for the forensic usage of the Hebrew root נְבֵר/נְבָר, see ibid., 9-10. Especially in the book of Job, as E. M. Livingston as well as Scholnick correctly observed, the usage of the root נְבֵר/נְבָר shows a notable penetration into the judicial semantic range (see E. M. Livingston, 160-63; Scholnick, 10-23).

369Job 4:17 (צֶדָק Qal//רַב Qal; 17:9 (רַב//זֶכֶר זֶכֶר); Ps 19:9 [H 10] (רַב//זֶכֶר זֶכֶר Qal); cf. Mal 3:3. See BDB, 372; HALOT, 2:369-70. Mal 3:3 predicts of "the Lord" (יהוה) and the messenger of the covenant (cf. 2:1) to be as a refiner (יִתְרַב Piel ptcp.) and purifier (יִתְרַב Piel ptcp.) of silver [and gold] will purify (יִתְרַב Piel) and refine (יִתְרַב Piel) the sons of Levi, so that they shall offer to Yahweh offerings in righteousness (יִתְרַב; cf. the prophecy on the nations' "pure" [יִתְרַב] offerings in 1:11, which makes a striking contrast to Israel's unsatisfactory offerings in 1:7-10, 12-14 [יִתְרַב, "what is blemished"]).

370Gen 20:4-5; Exod 23:7; Job 22:19; 27:17; Ps 94:21; cf. Gen 44:10 (בר), 16 (יהוה Hithpael); Job 4:7 (בר//בר; cf. vs. 17); 9:23 (בר; cf. vs. 20); 28 (בר Piel; cf. vs. 20); 10:14 (בר Piel; cf. בְּר Qal in vs. 15); 17:8 (בר//בר; cf. vs. 9); 22:30 (בר//בר; Ps 73:13. See BDB, 667; HALOT, 2:603, 720-21. If the Hebrew נָקַק is etymologically related to Akkadian naqû(m) "pour out (a libation), sacrifice" (AHw, 2:744-45; Edouard P. Dhorme, Les Religions de Babylone et d'Assyrie [Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1949], 224-25]; CAD, 11, Part 1:336-41; CDA, 241), then "we can assume its original meaning to be 'empty,' be emptied," since 'it is quite possible to connect Akk. 'pour out a libation' with this meaning [cf. Isa 3:26; Amos 4:6; Joel 3:21 (H 4:21)]" (G. Warmuth, נָקַק נַגָּד, TDOT, 9:553). The Hebrew derivative נָקַק ("sacrificial cup") may provide the key to the basic sense of the verb נַגָּד (Milton C. Fisher and Bruce K. Waltke, נָקַק

127
typical, technical OT terms for cultic-ritual cleanness or cleansing, although they are


However, the extended juridical meaning ("be acquitted," or "be free from punishment") is exclusively found in the OT (cf. Fisher and Waltke, 596; Olivier, 152). Scholnick mentioned: "Words from the root נקָע in the Hebrew Bible, with very few exceptions, are found in a forensic context. It is apparent, however, from a close study of the vocabulary that it follows the same pattern as זכָע, זכָה and בָּטָה, as well as Akkadian zakû. Its core meaning is 'clean,' referring to a physical attribute [cf. Isa 3:26; Amos 4:6]" (65). Scholnick continued: "The root נקָע in the Hebrew Bible is infrequently used in a cultic context. However, the feminine noun מַנְקִיָה, meaning some kind of 'sacrificial bowl' is found on four occasions in a list of cult items: Exod 25:29; 37:16, Num 4:7 and Jer 52:19. This container was used in the ritual to offer libation. Although the meaning of מַנְקִיָה is clearly uncertain, its association with the cult indicates the possibility that נקָע has a cultic usage, perhaps 'to cleanse (cultically)'" (ibid., 65-66). However, Scholnick asserted: "Although the core physical sense and the cultic meaning of נקָע are still evident in the Hebrew Bible, it is apparent that the juridical usage of the root had gained dominance" (ibid., 66; cf. 3-4).

Although "it is not possible to know at what point these zakû-type verbs made the transaction from being used in the sphere of the cult to that of the court" (Scholnick, 92, n. 3; cf. Delbert R. Hillers, "Bĕrît cbâm: Emancipation of the People," JBL 97 [1978]: 179-80), "unlike the related רָטָה . . . the root נקָע has already undergone this process of transaction" (Scholnick, 66; cf. E. M. Livingston, 233). Thus, "נָקָע in contrast to tāhar 'to be pure' is not a cultic term; e.g. it is never found in the book of Leviticus" (Fisher and Waltke, 598; cf. Olivier, 153). Van Leeuwen rightly observed: "Nqû is at home in OT legal language. . . . Although it appears occasionally in cultic contexts . . . the word still has no inherent Levitical-cultic connotations, as does e.g., → tāhr 'to be clean.' It is certainly no accident that qnq does not occur in Lev at all" (766).

Scholnick suggested specifically from Exod 23:7 (cf. Gen 20:5-6) a significant distinction between נָקִי and צַדִּיק: נָקִי refers to "a status of legal equilibrium" (68), i.e., "the legal status of a person who is clear or clean of any charge, claim, liability or punishment," who "is not entangled in judicial procedure" (ibid., 74; cf. 78, 90), and thus it refers to "one who is assumed innocent" (ibid., 75); צַדִּיק refers to a status of legal acquittal, i.e., the legal status of a person who is acquitted as a result of judicial procedure (ibid., 74-75), and thus it refers to "one who has been proven innocent" (ibid., 75). In this regard she seems to have rightly observed: "It may be well to point out . . . that Job never uses the term צדיק to refer to himself possibly because he has not been proven innocent through litigation" (ibid., 95, n. 19; for her contradictory remark on Job 9:15, 20 and 10:15, however, see ibid., 18).

371See Hans-Jürgen Hermisson, Sprache und Ritus im altisraelitischen Kult: Zur "Spiritualisierung" der Kultbegriffe im Alten Testament (Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1965), 84-99; Ringgren, "רָטָה," 291-94; Edwin Yamauchi, "רָטָה (tāhēr) Be Pure, Clean," TWOT, 1:343; cf. Hamp, 311; Hasel, 451; Davidson, 112. Yamauchi observed: "All told tāhēr and its derivatives occur 204 times. In the great majority of cases they appear in the priestly literature: about forty-four percent in Lev and Num, about sixteen percent in Exod (especially of the pure gold for the cult), and about fourteen percent in Chr and Ezek" ("רָטָה," 343). Thus, as Ringgren rightly observed,
also used more broadly for material/physical or ethical/moral cleanness.\(^{372}\) "Cleanse," as Helmer Ringgren correctly observed, "can also refer to forgiveness of sins in general."\(^{373}\) Significantly, the verb הָנַּחַת is employed not only of the cleansing of the sanctuary (specifically the outer altar, Lev 16:19) but also of the resultant communal moral cleansing/purification of the Israelite people on the Day of Atonement (vs. 30).\(^{374}\)

most occurrences of the root הָנַּחַת in the OT refer to cultic purity, and it belongs to cultic terminology, with נָחַת as its antonym ("טָהַר," 291).

\(^{372}\) F. Maass, "וֹתִי לְכָלֹת," TLOT, 2:483; Ringgren, "טָהַר," 291, 294-95; Yamauchi, "טָהַר," 343-44; cf. Hamp, 311; Hasel, 451; Davidson, 112. In a material sense the adjective טָהוֹר is mainly used of the "pure" gold (see the regulations for the making of the tabernacle [Exod 25; 30:3; 31:8] and of priestly garments and their adornments [Exod 28 and 39] and the account of the construction of the tabernacle [Exod 37]; 1 Chr 28:17; 2 Chr 3:4; cf. "pure" incense [Exod 30:35] and a "clean" turban [Zech 3:5]). Ringgren concluded: "The phrase [zāhā b tāhôr] refers to pure, unalloyed gold. Since, however, almost all the passages deal with cultic objects, it is undeniable that there may be overtones of 'cultic purity.'" ("טָהַר," 291).

\(^{373}\) Ringgren, "טָהַר," 295; cf. Maass, 485. Especially in Ps 51 washing (лись Piel, vss. 2, 7 [H 4, 9]; cf. "from ṣיק," vs. 2 [H 4]), purging (ןָחַת Piel "with בָּזָא," vs. 7 [H 9]), cleansing (טָהַת Piel "from חָטָאת," vs. 2 [H 4]), and the resultant cleanness/purity (טָהַת Qal and נַחַת ["be white"] Hiphil, vs. 7 [H 9]; נָחַת, vs. 10 [H 12]) are mentioned in association with God's forgiveness (rysler ["blot out"] נָחַת [pl.]; vs. 1; אני ["blot out"] נָחַת [pl.] and hiding of his face from עִשָּׁת [pl.], vs. 9 [H 11]). As Ringgren rightly argued (just like Maass, 485), Ps 51 clearly alludes to cultic purification rituals with hyssop (אֵזוֹב) as a means of purification ("טָהַה," 295; for the case of scaly skin disease, see Lev 14:4 [טָהַת Hithpael], 6; for the case of scale disease resulting from fungus in houses, see Lev 14:49 [瘊 Reid], 51, 52 [瘊 Piel]; cf. קָדַשׁ Piel in vs. 53; for the case of corpse contamination, see Num 19:18; cf. וֹתִי in vs. 6; קָדַשׁ Piel, יִבֵּשׁ Piel, and נָחַת Qal in vs. 19). Jer 33:8 (cf. vs. 6) promises Yahweh's forgiveness in such a way that "cleanse (טָת Piel) from (sg.) stands in parallel with "forgive (טָת Qal) (pl.)," whereas Yahweh's promise of forgiveness in Ezek 36:33 only mentions "cleanse (טָת Piel) from (pl.)" (cf. vss. 25, 29; 37:23).

\(^{374}\) Cf. Niels-Erik Andreasen, "Translation of Nis daq/Katharisthēsetai in Daniel 8:14," in Symposium on Daniel: Introductory and Exegetical Studies, 483; Hasel, 451; Davidson, 112. Hasel remarked, "It [throat] is used of the cleansing of the sanctuary in Leviticus 16:9 [sic 19], 30" (451; cf. Davidson, 112). Leviticus 16:30, however, refers to the moral cleansing of the Israelite people (טָת Piel) and their subsequent moral cleanness/purity (טָת Qal) as a result of the cleansing of the sanctuary.

The usage of the verb הָנַּחַת in connection with the sacrificial altar as well as the Israelite people on the Day of Atonement seems to be significant and intentional. Just as at the beginning of the sanctuary's ritual function the sacrificial altar needed to be purified (טָת Piel in Exod 29:36-37, Lev 8:15, and Ezek 43:20; רָחַת Piel in Ezek 43:26) for its initial consecration (טָת Piel in Exod 29:36-37 and Lev 8:15; cf. רָחַת Piel in Ezek 43:26), so on the Day of Atonement it needs to be purified (טָת Piel in Lev 16:19) for its re-consecration (טָת Piel) to prepare it for the sanctuary's ritual function of the next year.
The priest pronounced his cultic declarations in regard to some cases of ceremonial, physical cleanness or uncleanness only. However, the Servant of Yahweh, beyond such priestly cultic declarations, is portrayed in the Suffering Servant Poem as pronouncing his declaration in regard to the moral cleanness of the "many" resulting from his moral cleansing of them. Thus Yahweh's Servant seems to far transcend the priest of the Hebrew cultus.

The Servant's act in regard to יַצְדִּיק cannot be an acknowledgment that the "many" are righteous by themselves, because the poem, by mentioning their iniquities (53:11bβ) and sin (vs. 12α), makes it clear that they have been guilty. If the Servant, even though they are truly guilty, were to acknowledge that they are righteous, he would commit "a heinous sin"\(^{375}\) (see Exod 23:7; Prov 17:15; Isa 5:23, a stark contrast with vs. 16). Thus, if the Servant's act were such an acknowledgment, the Servant would not be vindicated as "the righteous one" by Yahweh (vs. 11bα; cf. 50:8-9). From a purely legal perspective, the "many" should be acknowledged and declared guilty/unrighteous, since the priest's declaring/pronouncing someone righteous in a judicial case is a legal acknowledgment of someone's innocence, but not making someone righteous.\(^{376}\) On the contrary, in the case of Isa 53:11bα, that is, of a legal-cultic context, the Servant's declaring someone righteous involves making someone righteous.\(^{377}\) Thus, D. Paul

Through the communal moral cleansing (נָדַם Piel) of the Israelite people and their resultant moral cleanness (נָדַם Qal) on the Day of Atonement (Lev 16:30), the divine-human relationship was fully restored. Thus all preparations are made for a new cultic year: the sanctuary and the people.


\(^{376}\)That is, the priest's declaring is "always declaring an existing state, never declaring something that is not so," as Gane correctly remarked (personal communication, February 20, 2008). Pröbstle also argued that צָדָק Hiphil designates a declarative idea, declaring righteous "a person who by means of the context is already characterized as righteous" (393).

Volz does not seem to be correct in arguing: "The term [טֶרֶם in Isa 53:11bα] must be understood in a forensic-religious sense. The Ebed effects not uprightness but acquittal, justification." \(^{378}\) Such a dichotomous understanding of righteousness is nowhere to be found in the OT, especially in relation to עָבֹד Hiphil. \(^{379}\) The Servant declares the many righteous because, although they have been unrighteous, now they are righteous through the Servant. \(^{380}\)

As mentioned just above, here in the Suffering Servant Poem, another perspective, that is, a cultic perspective, should be also taken into consideration. Such a fact seems to be hinted at even in the literary features of vs. 11b, not only by the parallelism of vs. 11bα and vs. 11bβ but also by the internal chiasm of vs. 11b:

| C | עָבֹד צַדִּיק (A) | צַדִּיק (B) | עָבֹד (C) |

fiction. Rather, He makes us righteous and declares us what He makes us. We cannot separate His declaration from the transformation He accomplishes" (108). E. M. Livingston went so far as to contend that "on an existential level here in Isa 53 justification and sanctification can both be included" (175). For a very recent discussion on the issue of justification, especially see Michael S. Horton, *Covenant and Salvation: Union with Christ* (Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox Press, 2007), 243-66.


\(^{379}\)Cf. E. M. Livingston, 174-75, 200-201, 242-44.

\(^{380}\)See especially Rowley, *The Unity of the Bible*, 56-57; idem, *From Moses to Qumran*, 103.

\(^{381}\)Considering the Hiphil of עָבֹד with its cognate accusative עָבֹד in Isa 53:11 as a unit (just as in Deut 25:1; 1 Kgs 8:32, etc., where a just judge including Yahweh should vindicate the innocent and condemn the guilty), Gane proposed a new interpretation: "My Servant will justify the just (referring to the one justified) for the many" (personal communication, May 14, 2007; cf. idem, *Who's Afraid of the Judgment?*, 108-109). According to Gane, '"justify the just' means vindicate a person according to his character, and the Servant does that for the many" (personal communication, February 20, 2008; cf. idem, *Who's Afraid of the Judgment?*, 108). The Servant vindicates many people, and it is based on his bearing their iniquities (Gane, *Who's Afraid of the Judgment?*, 108). His sacrifice, if accepted, "makes a person righteous so that he or she can justly be judged righteous" (ibid., 109). This is not legal fiction but instead transformation of both character and standing by divine grace. Not that newly 'righteous' people are instantly perfect, but that they now pledge allegiance to the Lord" (ibid.). However, grammatically, syntactically, contextually, and theologically, Gane's proposal does not seem to be correct for a few reasons. First, "where an adjectival attribute appears to stand before its substantive (according to the usual explanation, for the sake of special
emphasis) the relation is really appositional in character" (GKC, 428, italics original; among the biblical passages cited are Ps 18:3 [H 4], 92:11 [H 12], Isa 10:30, 23:12, 53:11, and Jer 3:6, 10-11). Though Waltke and O'Conner admitted a "grammatical ambiguity" in regard to the phrase צַדִּיק עַבְדִּי ("the Righteous One, [who is] my servant" or "my servant [who is] righteous") (223), they also argued: "An adjective used as a substantive in apposition stands before its appositive and can thus be distinguished from an attributive adjective" (262, italics theirs). Second, the preposition לְ is used, like אֶת, to introduce the definite direct object of a transitive verb (see GKC, 366; Waltke and O'Connor, 184, 210; cf. Motyer, 442). Grammatically and syntactically, therefore, neither the apposition of צַדִּיק to עַבְדִּי nor the introduction of the object by the preposition לְ in Isa 53:11 (see also David A. Sapp, "The LXX, IQIsa, and MT Versions of Isaiah 53 and the Christian Doctrine of Atonement," in Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins, 173, n. 3, 175, n. 4) is not in favor of Gane's interpretation. Third, the word order of the MT here does not seem to support his position. In order to support his position grammatically and syntactically, the MT seems to have to run as follows: עַבְדִּי הָצַּדִּיק לָרַבִּים יַצְדִּיק - or הָצַּדִּיק יַצְדִּיק עַבְדִּי לָרַבִּים (for the positions of the object, see GKC, 362-72, esp. 366-67; Waltke and O'Connor, 164-81). Thus the term צַדִּיק with its preceding verbal form יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 does not belong to a unit of צָדַק Hiphil + צַדִּיק as a unit. Fourth, contextually, there is no righteous man to be vindicated in the Suffering Servant Poem except the Servant (see Isa 50:8-9; 53:8; Yahweh's vindication of the Servant as "the righteous one" in Isa 53:11 of the LXX [John W. Olley, 'Righteousness' in the Septuagint of Isaiah: A Contextual Study, ed. Harry M. Orlinsky, SBLSCSS {Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1979}, 50-51; Ekblad, 250, 254-55, 258; Sapp, 173-76]). Then, who is "the one justified" here according to Gane's interpretation? The "many" are made righteous only because the Servant makes and declares them righteous by bearing their sins. As for sinners, vindication can come only after their being justified in the economy of God's salvation (cf. Isa 54:13-17; cf. Rom 8:30-34). Fifth, theologically, what does "my Servant will justify the just for the many" mean (Jacques B. Doukhan, personal communication, February 20, 2008, Berrien Springs, MI; see esp. Ezek 14:14, 16, and 20)? Gane contended that "the Servant will do the process of justifying the just for the many" and thus that "this benefit of vindication will be given to the many" (personal communication, February 20, 2008). Then, what is the identity of the just here who is distinguished from the many? Therefore, grammatically, syntactically, contextually, and theologically, Gane's thesis does not seem to be right. Sixth, also to be noted in this connection is that the Masoretic accents in vs. 11alpha (cf. BHS, 760), although they may not always correct, seem to indicate that ישָׁרֵים and ישָׁרֵים are more closely related than ישָׁרֵים. The LXX seems to have taken צָדַק צַדִּיק as a unit, even though the subject of the verb is not my Servant but the Lord (the subject of the sentence back in vs. 10). However, the LXX seems to take צָדַק and retains its position in apposition to צַדִּיק, even though it changes it into the noun "servant" into a participle, "one who serves," and substitutes the adverb "well" for "my." Here "the many" are the direct object of the participle. For a more detailed discussion of the LXX here, especially see Sapp, 173-76. Concluding the discussion thus far, many aspects favor the traditional position, but not Gane's. However, I would like to keep the debate open and accept that the syntax of vs. 11 is deliberately ambiguous and can go both ways. For more discussions on the expression Цַדִּיק עַבְדִּי in Isa 53:11alpha and its interpretation, see, e.g., Olley, 48-51; Koole, 333-34; Sapp, 173, n. 3. In order to be in favor of the interpretation of "my righteous servant," the phrase seems to have to be: צָדַק צָדַק or צָדַק (see GKC, 408, 427; Waltke and O'Connor, 150-51). As for the fourth reason above, especially note the observation of Ekblad, 255: "No one [in Isaiah]
The cultic perspective of vs. 11b seems to be much more confirmed by the chiasm that it makes with the last cola of the next verse, that is, the poem's final cola, vs. 12c, where the Hebrew cult clearly stands in the background:

\[
\text{A} \rightarrow \text{B} \rightarrow \text{C}^1 \rightarrow \text{A}^1 \rightarrow \text{B}^1
\]

The parts A and A\(^1\) correspond to each other in terms of the Hiphil verbal form. Also to be noted is that vss. 11b and 12c are interrelated by the significant term רַבִּים. Thus, vss. 11b-12c seem to make a chiasm as follows:\(^{383}\)

A Servant as Priest (vs. 11a)

B Servant as Priest and Victim (vs. 11b)

C Servant's Glorious Victory (vs. 12a)

C\(^1\) Servant's Ignominious Death (vs. 12b)

B\(^1\) Servant as Priest and Victim (vs. 12c)

other than the servant is described as 'a righteous one.' While some are described as seeking righteousness (51:1), in Isaiah no one is righteous (59:4) except for the Lord (41:10; 45:21) and a future righteous king (32:1). The servant here in 53:11 is one exception."

\(^{382}\)For the punctuation of the phrase בְּדַעְתּוֹ, see Young, *The Book of Isaiah*, 3:356-57; Koole, 330; for the interpretation of its pronominal suffix, see Young, *The Book of Isaiah*, 3:356-57; for the alternative readings suggested for דַּעַת, see Koole, 330-31; Blenkinsopp, 350; Barr, 20, 23; for the interpretation of the phrase, see Koole, 331-32. According to the Masoretic accentuation the phrase "is to be construed with what follows and not with what precedes," as was correctly argued by Young (*The Book of Isaiah*, 3:356-57). As for the pronominal suffix here, Young, *The Book of Isaiah*, 3:357, supported Alexander's position that the suffix is to be taken not as subjective but as objective, and thus that the phrase means "by the knowledge of him" (*Later Prophecies*, 273). But Koole argued that in Isa 40-55, "the suffix of this word [דַּעַת] always has the value of a subjective genitive, 44:25; 47:10; 48:4" (331) and thus he followed the Greek textual tradition (cf. *BHS*, 760) that the phrase is construed with vs. 11a (see Koole, 330-32).

\(^{383}\)See also Frank B. Holbrook, "Christ's Inauguration as King-Priest," *JATS* 5 (1994): 144-45; E. M. Livingston, 174. The relation between vs. 12b and vs. 12a is cause and effect.
Thus vs. 11bα should be interpreted in the sense that the Servant "shall make/declare the many righteous"\(^{384}\) by his taking upon himself the sins of the many.\(^{385}\) Young rightly contended: "In this context the servant appears not as a teacher but as a savior. Not by his knowledge does he justify men, but by bearing their iniquities."\(^{386}\)

\(^{384}\) Childs, 419, mentioned: "Although the verb (s\:dq, hiphil) can be translated in several different ways, the two senses of declarative and causative seem to flow together from the force of the larger context: He shall 'make [the] many to be accounted righteous.'" As for יַצְדִּיק, Motyer, 441-42, argued: "The hiphil . . . is usually followed by a direct object (Deut 25:1; 2 Sam 15:4). Only here is it followed by an indirect object governed by the preposition ל hence 'bring righteousness to', 'provide righteousness for.'" Motyer saw "this use of ל as expressing the direction of the verbal action or the recipient of it" as in Isa 6:10, 14:3, and Gen 45:7 (442, n. 1). However, according to Waltke and O'Connor, 184, the preposition ל (just like את) "is used to mark the definite direct object of a transitive verb" (cf. Exod 32:13; Lev 19:18; Num 12:13; 1 Sam 23:10; Isa 11:9), but "rarely . . . an indefinite direct object" (cf. Job 5:2). Besides, "the verb is often a Hiphil" as in Isa 53:11bα (Waltke and O'Connor, 210, n. 85). For an excellent critique on the wrong interpretation of יַצְדִּיק as intransitive/internal Hiphil ("stand forth as righteous" or "show oneself to be righteous") first proposed by Mowinckel, 198, n. 8, 199, 204 (cf. 212 for his self-contradiction!), and then adopted by Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 267, and Whybray, Thanksgiving, 71 (cf. idem, Isaiah 40-66, 181), and others, see Koole, 333.

\(^{385}\) See, e.g., Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:357-58; Rowley, From Moses to Qumran, 102; Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 630; Porubčan, 496; Justesen, 57-58; B. Johnson, 261-22; Koch, 1060; Rodriguez, "Substitution," 299; Olley, 49; Stigers, 754; Laato, 149; Oswalt, 405; Motyer, 442; Childs, 419-20. Olley is correct in arguing: "The meaning [of יַצְדִּיק] . . . is inseparably linked with the general interpretation of the passage, especially the following phrase, 'he shall bear their iniquities/guilt'" (49). Muilenburg commented: "The verb [make] to be accounted righteous' has a forensic connotation here. The primary meaning is of acquittal; the many are declared innocent even though they were in reality guilty. The servant has taken on him the guilt of 'us all'" ("Isaiah 40-66," 630, italics his). In this regard Motyer argued that the conjunction ו in vs. 11bβ "should be understood as explicative, 'for' or 'you see', i.e. the provision of righteousness arises from the bearing of sin" (442). In the same line, Laato asserted: "[The verse] 11bα should be interpreted in the light of [vs.] 11bβ where the servant is portrayed as bearing the sins of the rabbîm. This connection makes it clear that 'making many righteous' is related to the idea that the servant will establish salvation for many by bearing their sins. This, in turn, forges links between 11bα and the vicarious interpretation" (149).

\(^{386}\) Young, The Book of Isaiah, 3:357; cf. Alexander, Later Prophecies, 273. At this point Blenkinsopp is not correct in interpreting: "The vindication of the many by knowledge will be seen to make sense in light of the Servant's statement in 50:4-9. As God promises to vindicate him . . . so he will vindicate those who follow his guidance, and he will do this through his teaching: he has the tongue of those who are taught, and his task is to sustain the dispirited through the spoken and possibly also the written word.
Concerning the "knowledge" of the Servant, however, Motyer maintained:

The present poem began by noting that the Servant acted with the wisdom which knows how to achieve the desired result ('act wisely', 52:13). The word here (b'da'tô) could be translated 'by knowing him', indicating that it is as people come to know him that they enter into the benefits he has won for them. But it is more suited to this section of the stanza to retain the focus on the Servant himself and to see here the knowledge which he alone possesses (and we need) regarding what God requires in relation to sin and what to do about it.\(^\text{387}\)

In light of the contrasts between the Servant's humiliation and his exaltation and between the speaker's mistaken view versus their true confession, Paul R. Raabe argued: "The contrast [of Isa 53:11] with 53:3 makes it clear that the content of the servant's knowledge is his sickness and suffering."\(^\text{388}\) In that sense, בְּדַעְתּוֹ in Isa 53:11 can be translated into "by his experience."\(^\text{389}\) It may be possible for the Servant to be satisfied "with the outcome of his experience" or "because of the happy outcome of the experience."\(^\text{390}\) But, it is rather possible for him to make/declare the many righteous "by his experience," that is, "the experience of his substitutionary atoning sacrifice."\(^\text{391}\)

Therefore, the term יַצְדִּיק, as Young asserted, "would seem to indicate priestly-judicial functions, and this becomes particularly forceful when we remember that the manner in which the context of mission and cleansing under persecution (cf. 11:33-35; 12:3-4, 10) seems to be shown not only by the parallels of 11:33a and 35a with 12:3 and 10a respectively but also by the chiastic positions of the verbs of cleansing in 11:35 and 12:10, that is, active verbal forms: צָרַף ("refine") Qal (A)/בָּרַר ("purify") Piel (B)/לָבֵן ("be white") Hiphil (C)/passive verbal forms: בָּרַר Hithpael (B¹)/לָבֵן Hithpael (C¹)/ניָפָר Niphal (A¹). For a more detailed discussion on these verbs, see E. M. Livingston, 185-91.

---

\(^{387}\) Motyer, 441, italics his.


\(^{389}\) Cf. Deut 1:13, 15; Blenkinsopp, 347.

\(^{390}\) Oswalt, 403-404, italics his. However, see fn. 382 in this chapter.

\(^{391}\) Gane, personal communication, February 20, 2008.
which the Servant justifies the many is by bearing their iniquities."392

Especially Isa 53:11b seems to show that the "many" includes the "we." If the Servant will justify the "many" (vs. 11b) by bearing their iniquities (vss. 11b, 12ca), then will he not justify the "we," by bearing "our sorrows" and "our pains" (cf. vs. 4)?

Through his analysis of the four dramatis personae ("I", "he", "we", and "they"), David J. A. Clines first clearly showed that the "we" and the "they" are distinct from each other,393 and then he observed:

The plural groups do not at first appear to have any relationship—there is no verbal link between them. But they have one thing in common: their attitude of disgust towards the servant. As the poem proceeds their attitude changes: that on the part of the 'we', from rejection to acceptance, is strongly marked, while on the part of the 'they' in that he participates with them (bārabbîm, ʿet-áz-ūmîm, 53:12). Finally the identity of the 'we' and the 'they' virtually merges as 'he' is shown to have the same relationship to both groups: that is, 'he' bears (nāšā, sābal) the sufferings and pains of the 'we' (53:4), and also bears (sābal, nāšā) the guilt (āwón) and sin (hēt) of the 'they', the rabbîm (53:11b, 12b).394

John W. Olley convincingly asserted:

It is . . . probable that the 'many' is a wide term embracing the nations, but including rebellious Israel. It is a term peculiarly appropriate for such a general meaning, a possible reason for its usage in chap. 53. It is clear that [the] "we" benefit from the Servant's unjust suffering (vs. 5b), but so also do the 'many' (vss. 11-12). There is overlap, suggested also by the movement from 'many' to 'us' to 'many' in chap. 53. The 'many' do not benefit apart from 'us', but the benefits are not limited to 'us'.395

Thus, it seems that the "many" in the Poem is certainly and ultimately inclusive of both

---

392 Young, Studies in Isaiah, 206.
393 Clines, 38.
394 Ibid., 40, italics his. Accordingly, Rodriguez is not right in simply arguing: "Since the Servant relates to the 'we' and the 'many' in the same way, i.e., he bears their sin, the 'we/many' seem to refer to the same people" ("Substitution," 291, n. 4). For a similar view to that of Rodriguez, see Koole, 334-35; cf. Spieckermann, 8, n. 12. For discussions on the identification, see also North, The Suffering Servant in Deutero-Isaiah, 150-52; Hermissen, "The Fourth Servant Song in the Context of Second Isaiah," 33-34; Janowski, 61-62; Reventlow, 29-30.
Israel and the nations, but not all. In other words, the "many" is not the totality of Israel and nations but numerous individuals from Israel and from the nations.

Therefore, although Isa 45:25, which is a very significant text of promise, leaves us to question the "how" of "all the seed of Israel" being justified, we now come to see that the Suffering Servant Poem answers it. Perceptively observing links between this Servant Poem and its context, Webb correctly argued:

We have just seen the people of God as priests carrying holy vessels (52:11). But the previous chapters have repeatedly drawn attention to their endemic sinfulness. How can this tension between sinfulness and holiness be resolved?


397 Cf. Ekblad, 256-58. Gane argued: "Alternatively, this could be everyone, who has provision/opportunity for atonement on the basis of the Servant's sacrifice. But I don't accept this because of my interpretation of vs. 11, where vindication presupposes acceptance by the many" (personal communication, February 20, 2008).

398 The passage Isa 45:20-25 (esp. vss. 22-23) makes it clear that the concept of "all the seed of Israel" is universal in scope. Westermann observed: "The crucial change in the concept of the people of God is already present here in Deutero-Isaiah. As the verses before us make clear, he believed that in his day a final break had been made between the people of God and any form of its existence as a political entity. All men are invited to partake in the divine salvation, and membership of the people of God is based on the free confession of those who have discovered that he alone is God. These two factors, of crucial importance for the Christian concept of the Church, are already present in Deutero-Isaiah" (Isaiah 40-66, 176). In the same line, Childs noted: "What now occurs in vss. 22-25 is astonishing and unexpected, going beyond anything so far seen in Second Isaiah. . . . The old division between Israel and the nations has been forced to give way before the salvation that God has both promised and achieved. A new world order of righteousness has emerged. The old is passing; the new age is dawning. God will rule and to him 'shall every knee bow, every tongue confess' (cf. Rom 14:11; Phil 2:10). Earlier the nations had begun to sense this reality at least in part (45:14). Now it is confirmed by God's divine oath (vs. 23). However, this invitation to participate is not a blanket offer of universal salvation. There are still those who receive the promise and those who resist. This division no longer breaks along ethnic, national, or geographic lines. Rather, the 'offspring of Israel' is now defined in terms of those who find in God their righteousness and strength. They shall triumph and exult, indeed, from all the ends of the earth" (355-56).

399 In this connection, Eichrodt is certainly right in explicating: "It [Ps 130:7-8] points to a final act of God, by which alone all guilt will be blotted out, and a new life opened up in God's mercy. Thus belief justification builds a bridge across to the eschatological hope, thrusting directly into the heart of the messianic salvation as envisaged in the loftiest promises of the prophets (referring to Isa 53; Jer 31:31ff.; Ezek 36:26ff.)" (2:310; first italics his; second italics mine).
That question has never been answered. Forgiveness has been announced, but the basis on which it rests has not been clarified. Now at last it is: *my righteous servant will justify many . . . he will bear their iniquities* (53:11). At the very outset of the Song the Servant is pictured as a priest, 'sprinkling' the unclean (52:15), and in the heart of the Song he is spoken of as a *guilt offering* (53:10). The Servant is both priest and sacrifice, and it is through his priestly work that the people of God are themselves made fit for priestly work.

Isa 53:11bα reveals not only the objects of the acquittal and justification but also its agent, whereas vs. 11bβ "reveals the ground for the acquittal [and justification]."

Yahweh's Servant, the righteous one, acquires and justifies the many by bearing their sins, that is, through his vicarious substitutionary suffering and death. In this light von Rad mentioned that the Servant "makes the many righteous,' *i.e.*, he brings them

400Webb, 209, italics his. For more in detail, see ibid., 207-209.

401Rodríguez, "Substitution," 299; Grogan, 305; Oswalt, 405. Eichrodt mentioned: "The messianic redeemer [i.e., the Servant of Yahweh in Isa 53] is not spared descent even into this deepest darkness of human suffering [i.e., death], indeed, that he has affirmed it as an expression of God's wrath on sinners, and has vicariously taken it upon himself, the greatness of God's work of salvation is for the first time fully revealed to the prophet. Because death, as the punishment of sin, is overcome by the offering of the Servant's own life, a new fellowship between God and sinners is made possible, since by the atonement here wrought the godless is justified" (2:508).

402Motyer is right in observing: "The emphasis thus laid on the Servant's righteousness is deliberate. First, it prepares for the reference to his work of sin-bearing in verse 11d by underlining his moral fitness for the task. Secondly, and immediately, we learn that this righteousness is something he extends to others: he *will justify many* (441, italics his; cf. 442). James M. Ward is correct in arguing: "It is of decisive importance to realize that the death which was able to effect atonement (right relation to God) for others was the death of *this* servant ["the righteous one"]. . . . Who he was and what he was doing when he died made all the difference" (445-56, italics his). As Grogan pointed out, the adjective צַדִּיק and the verb יַצְדִּיק, derived from the same Hebrew root פִּיצָק, are placed next to each other in the MT, as if to stress their close relationship (305). See esp. 2 Cor 5:21.

403See Rodríguez, "Substitution," 299; Koole, 332-33; cf. Rom 3:21-26; 5:8-10, 16-19; 1 Pet 2:24. Alexander argued: "The introduction of the pronoun [in vs. 11bβ] makes a virtual antithesis, suggesting the idea of exchange or mutual substitution. They shall receive his righteousness, and he shall bear their burdens [of sin]" (Later Prophecies, 274, italics his). Oswalt is right in mentioning, "As in vss. 4-6, heavy emphasis is laid on the fact that it is *their* iniquities that he bears" (405, italics his). Thus Oswalt keenly pointed out: "The object, 'their iniquities,' is placed at the beginning of the clause in the emphatic position, and 'he,' the internal subject of the verb, is emphasized by the addition of the 3rd masc. sg. independent pronoun. The sense is, 'it is *their* iniquities that he carries'" (ibid., 405, n. 60, italics his).
back into the proper relationship to God, and does so by 'removing their guilt.' 404 "Far from being a heinous crime," therefore, "this is divine love opening up a way of forgiveness for the rebellious one." 405 "What is here described is an act of free grace on God's part." 406 The many, who are acquitted and justified, seem to be portrayed in vs. 12a as a portion or booty of the Servant as Victor. 407 Koole asserted:

But the main reasons why the 'many/mighty' [and the 'numerous/strong'] should be regarded as object[s] are dictated not by grammar but by content[, or rather context]. The epilogue should correspond to the prologue with its description of the Servant's exaltedness recognized even by 'many nations' and their 'kings', cf. 49:7 . . . . The 'many/mighty' [and the 'numerous/strong'] are therefore rightly seen as the Servant's new possession . . . . Those who have been 'justified' and acquitted in the previous line are now at the Servant's disposal. In the broader

404 Von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:257.


407 Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 630-31; Porúbcan, 497 (cf. n. 190); North, The Second Isaiah, 245-46; Koole, 336-39; Motyer, 302, 440-43, 508. See Isa 40:10-11; 49:4; 62:11-12; Dan 8:24-25; cf. Exod 15:9; Isa 42:22, 24; 49:24-25. North perceptively observed: "'The strife is o'er, the battle done'. Now follows, in traditional OT language, the division of the spoils of victory. But does this final verse descend to the level of the conventional, with the Servant taking his share with other 'great' and 'mighty' ones . . . ? Or is the meaning that he receives the 'many' as his victory award? After all, he has been the sole protagonist" (The Second Isaiah, 245). In view of the general context (see esp. the astonishment of the kings at the glory of the Servant in 52:15), Muilenburg interpreted vs. 12a: "Therefore I will divide to him the many as a portion, the countless he will share as booty" ("Isaiah 40-66," 631). In the same line, in view of the initial enigmatic references to "the many" and "kings" in 52:14-15, Motyer rendered: "[Therefore] I will allocate to him the many, and the strong [i.e., the "kings"] he will allocate as spoil" (442). The particle אֵת here was regarded as a nota accusativi, and both Muilenburg (referring to Eduard König, Das Buch Jesaja [Gütersloh: C. Bertelsmann, 1926], 442, n. 3, and GKC, sec. 119k) and Porúbcan regarded בְּ as a preposition to introduce the object after transitive verbs, whereas Motyer treated it (like ב in Job 39:17) as Beth essentiae (in the sense of "such a thing as"). However, see GKC, 380 (sec. 119m); "The idea of an action as extending to something, with at the same time the secondary idea of participation in something, underlies finally the partitive use of ב, e.g. . . . . Cf. also בְּ פִּינַת to give a share of something, Job 39:17 . . . " (italics original).

For other interpretations, see esp. Olley, "'The Many'," 330-56. For the renderings of רַבִּים ("many") and עֲצוּמִים ("numerous), see Christopher R. North, Isaiah 40-55: Introduction and Commentary (London: SCM Press, 1952), 140; idem, The Second Isaiah, 245; Koole, 356; cf. Prov 7:26; Isa 47:9; Amos 5:12. See also the ironic, contrasting experience of the sufferer during his suffering in Ps 22:18 [H 19]: "They allocate my garments to themselves, and for my clothing they cast lots."
context they can probably be identified with the 'offspring' of the Servant, the 'servants of Yahweh' in 54:17, whom no enemy can harm . . . and moreover [the] 'numerous' links up well with what follows, 54:1. 408

Thus the answer of Isa 53:11b seems to be confirmed in the chapter following the Suffering Servant Poem, especially by the righteous standing of "the servants of Yahweh" in 54:14 and 17. 409

The term יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 is a significant term with legal-cultic connotations, not only in that it denotes the Servant's functions of judicial character as Priest but also in that it has a firm basis in his vicarious expiatory sacrifice as Victim. 410 Such a legal-cultic interpretation of יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 seems to be supported by another significant צדק passage that should be taken into account. The passage is Dan 8:14, which shows a unique usage of the legal term צדק in a passive verbal form of the Niphal (נִצְדַּק, a hapax legomenon), and that not only in a cultic context but also with the sanctuary as its subject (and therefore as recipient of the action in a passive syntax). The term צדק in Dan 8:14 seems to reflect Daniel's understanding of its legal-cultic connotations. 411

408 Koole, 337-38.

409 Cf. Olley, "The Many," 350-51; Stigers, 754. Here Stigers remarked: "The word [צדק] describes the righteous standing of God's heirs to salvation, with no charge to be laid against them (Isa 54:17), this righteousness, actually possessed by Messiah (Jer 23:6), is bestowed by him, thus pointing toward the NT doctrine of Christ our righteousness. The righteousness of God's heirs of salvation is the righteousness of the Messiah attributed to them by God through faith in the redemptive work of Messiah in which God declares them righteous only because of the grace provided through that redemptive work" (754). In that sense, Rodríguez is partially correct in arguing: "It is only because the Servant, as a sacrificial victim, is considered צדק that he, as a priest, can declare the many to be righteous. The righteousness of the One is the righteousness of the many" ("Substitution," 299).

410 Cf. Rodríguez, "Substitution," 299; idem, "Significance of the Cultic Language," 542; Koole, 332-33. In this vein to be noted is the remark of Mowinckel, 209: "Wherein, precisely, does the atoning effect of the Servant's vicarious work consist? It is clear that the poet expresses his thoughts in sacrificial and legal phrases and conceptions."

411 For detailed studies on the term צדק in Dan 8:14, see Hasel, 448-58; Andreasen, 475-96; Davidson, 107-19; Martin Pröbstle, 406-13; E. M. Livingston, 325-418, esp. 396-402, 415-16. "Three major extended meanings of sādaq," which are
"Strikingly, righteousness and atonement [or expiation] are not closely related in
the OT," as was rightly observed by B. Johnson. However, the term יַצְדִּיק is
employed in the Suffering Servant Poem to emphasize the forensic aspect of his
justifying work, which is accomplished by his vicarious expiatory sacrifice. Even
very close to those of Andreasen, 481-86, 494, have been independently shown by
Davidson, 109-14: (1) "restore (to its rightful place/relationship)," (2) "be clean/pure,
cleanse/purify," and (3) "vindicate." Then, giving sufficient attention to the immediate
context of Dan 8:14, Davidson, 114-17, has shown how vs. 13 summarizes the
"three-fold sanctuary-related problem" brought about by the little horn's activities in vss.
9-12: (1) the tāmîd (i.e., the "continual" mediatorial cultic activities of the priest in the
daily services of the sanctuary) was taken away from the Prince of host by the little horn
(vss. 11a-b, 13; cf. vs. 12; see also 11:31; 12:11), (2) the peša ("rebellion") [of the host]
causing horror (vss. 12-13), and (3) the mirmās ("trampling [underfoot]") of the host and
the sanctuary, which ultimately leads to God's defamation (vss. 10, 11c, 13; cf. vs. 12).
Finally, Davidson, 117, linked the three-fold problem summarized in vs. 13 with the
polyvalence of nisdaq in vs. 14 and independently reached conclusions corroborated by
the interpretative suggestions of Andreasen, 495. Davidson seems to be right in
suggesting that "the word nisdaq is uniquely suited in its breadth of semantic range to
encapsulate the solution to all three of the sanctuary-related situations summarized in vs.
13" (117). Thus, Davidson concluded: "Not only does its basic meaning of "be made
right" fit in a general way as a solution to vs. 13, but its three major extended
meanings—restore, cleanse, and vindicate—specifically match the three problems of vs.
13, and their respective relational, cultic, and legal contexts" (ibid.). Therefore, as
Davidson made it clear, the solution to the three-fold sanctuary-related problem is: (1) the
continual mediatorial ministry of the priest in the sanctuary needs to be made right in the
sense of being restored to its rightful place, (2) the rebellion causing horror needs to be
made right in the sense of being purified/cleansed, and (3) not only the sanctuary and the
host which was trampled down but also the God who was defamed by their being
trampled down needs to be made right in the sense of being vindicated (ibid.).

Noting the semantic breadth of צדק, its synonyms and antonyms with its forensic
and relational foci, and a cultic notion through הнятие, הראה, and nominal בר, Pröbstle, 406-409,
413, lent support to Andreasen's and Davidson's conclusion of the three extended
meanings of the term צָדַק and the application of them to Dan 8:14. It seems that the
three major extended meanings of the term צָדַק can be significantly applied to Isa
53:11bα: (1) the restoration of the many to the rightful relationship with God, (2) the
cleansing of the many from sins, and (3) not only the justification of the many but also
the vindication of God. Then, what else could the Servant's work of צָדַק in Isa 53:11
be except his making and declaring the many righteous? See Rom 3:25-26; 5:6-11; 2
Cor 5:21.

412B. Johnson, 261.

413Cf. Isa 49:24-25 (see Motyer, 395-96); Dan 9:24; Rom 3:21-28, especially vss.
25b-26. Indicating "a vital element in the Lord's saving work," "that every just claim of
the law is satisfied," Motyer rightly mentioned: "When the Lord uses his power to save,
neither his own righteous character nor any other right (even that of his foes) is violated"
(396). Stigers remarked that "God's solution of the problem of justification for the
sinner" is found "in the teaching of Isa 53 where the suffering servant justifies sinners by
though Isa 53:9 actually puts emphasis upon his further humiliation up to the burial itself; the forensic aspect seems to be further supported by the occurrence of the two contrasting legal parties (רְשָׁעִים [pl.] and צַדִּיק [sg.]) in Isa 53:9 and 11 respectively.

As shown thus far, the reason why the legal term צדק was employed in association with the Hebrew cultus is to be found in its parallel occurrences with the terms of cleanness or cleansing in the OT, of which the term יִטַּהְר seems to be the most significant (e.g., especially Lev 16:19 and 30). The term יַצְדִּיק in the Suffering Servant Poem must be the Servant's making and declaring the many righteous, which is based on his vicarious expiation. The term יַצְדִּיק in this context has legal-cultic connotations, not only in that it denotes the Servant's functions of judicial character as Priest but also in that it has a firm basis in his vicarious expiatory sacrifice as Victim.

The last possible candidate for a cultic term in the Suffering Servant Song is bearing their sin," and added: "This same forensic meaning of justification of the ungodly is a real precursor of Rom 3:26" (754).

Westermann correctly observed that "since his burial involved a further act of contempt and putting to shame, this puts it beyond doubt that, right up to the last moment, up to the grave itself, the Servant's life gave absolutely no indication at all of the supremely positive significance which was later attached to it" (Isaiah 40-66, 266). Oswalt properly commented: "This is the final insult in a life full of insults. It is a small thing, yet its very pettiness makes it the more cruel" (397).

Is the verb נִגְזַר in Isa 53:8 a possible candidate for a cultic term? What was the intention of the prophet when he employed the verb נִגְזַר in Isa 53:8 (robe, Niphal pf. of גזר) instead of תַּעֲרָפ (cf. תַּעֲרָפ [Niphal impf. of תערפ] in Dan 9:26)? Did he intend to connote the covenant with its sealing ritual (Gen 15) and thus to portray the Servant as the One who has vicariously borne the covenant curse of being cut in two "pieces"? Did he also intend to associate the Servant with Azazel's goat sent to a "cut-off (גְּזֵרָה, f. n. from גזר) land" (Lev 16:22) and thus to contrastively portray the fate of the Servant who has borne every sin of the world?

The root גזר is attested 25 times in the OT: 13 times in a verbal form and 12 times in a noun form. The verb גזר occurs 7 times in the Qal (6x with the meaning of "cut [down]" [1 Kgs 3:25, 26; 2 Kgs 6:4; Ps 136:13; Isa 9:20 {H 19}; Hab 22:28]) and 6 times in the Niphal (5x with the meaning of "be decided/decree" [Job 22:28]) and 1x with the meaning of "be cut off" [2 Chr 26:21; Ps 88:5 {H 6}; Isa 53:8; Lam 3:54; Ezek 37:11] and 1x with the meaning of "be decided/decree" [Esth 2:1]). Apart from Isa 53:8, the verb גזר never occurs in cultic contexts or with cultic meanings. Four derivative nouns
The root of the term is פָּגַע, יַפְגִּיעַ in Isa 53:12. The verb פָּגַע occurs 46 times in the Old Testament: 40 times in the Qal and 6 times in the Hiphil. The verb has quite a wide semantic range, and in most cases is followed by the preposition בָּ. The verb פָּגַע Qal means "meet, encounter, reach, attack, kill, entreat" of which the basic meaning is "meet." The verb פָּגַע Qal is used in various ways, but the usage to be occur in the OT: וַתִּפְגִּיעַ, "piece" (Gen 15:17; Ps 136:13), גְּזֵרָה, "separation" (Lev 16:22), פָּגַע, "cutting," I.e., "polishing" in Lam 4:7; "separation, separate area/place" in Ezek 41:12, 13, 14, 15 and 42:1, 10, 13, and פָּגַע, "cutting instrument, axe" (2 Sam 12:31). In cultic contexts, the term פָּגַע is used not only for the halves of animals in Gen 15:17 but also for the divided portions of the Red Sea in Ps 136:13. Besides, its rare occurrence is not enough to decide whether the usage in Gen 15:17 is cultic or not. Rather, it is quite clear that the emphasis is with severance/separation. The first three nouns do occur in cultic contexts, but not as cultic terms but only with the emphasis of severance/separation like the fourth. The term גְּזָרִים (pl. of גֶּזֶר) means "pieces" of animals cut in two in making the covenant (Gen 15:17; see, however, the verb בָּתַר ["cut in two," 2x] in 15:10), whereas the covenant making in Jer 34:18-19 employs the verb כָּרַת ("cut") and the noun בֶּתֶר ("piece," 2x; n. from בָּתַר). Psalm 136:13 praises Yahweh as the One who divided טָרֵה Qal ptcp. m.s.) the Red Sea in two "pieces" (_cards) in the Exodus (cf. vss. 10-16). Thus the term פָּגַע is used not only for the halves of animals in Gen 15:17 but also for the divided portions of the Red Sea in Ps 136:13. Besides, its rare occurrence is not enough to decide whether the usage in Gen 15:17 is cultic or not. Rather, it is quite clear that the emphasis is with severance/separation. James E. Smith mentioned: "Like its synonym kārat, this root [gāzar] has the basic meaning 'to sever" (158). Thus the verb נִגְזַר in Isa 53:8 means "separation from life by death" (cf. Görg, 461), which is clarified by the next prepositional phrase. Besides, followed by the preposition מִן, it may connote a "violent severance" from land and life (cf. J. E. Smith, 158). It seems, therefore, that the verb נִגְזַר in Isa 53:8 cannot be a possible candidate for a cultic term. See BDB, 144, 160; HALOT, 1:167, 187; 2:544-45; Mandelkern, 261; Lisowsky, 322, 748; Even-Shoshan, 232-33; J. E. Smith, 158; Görg, 459-61.

For its attestations only in Northwest Semitic, especially the Aramaic branch, and in Arabic, see P. Maiberger, "פָּגַע pāga," TDOT, 12:470-71. Maiberger mentioned that the Semitic root פ_g describes movement toward a place (object) or person, that the movement may be unintentional or intentional (usually sudden and violent), and that positive, negative (hostile), and neutral intention or effect must be differentiated (471).

Cf. Mandelkern, 941; Lisowsky, 1144; Even-Shoshan, 936; VOT, 199, 397.

See Michael A. Grisanti, "׃ יַפְגִּיעַ." NIDOTTE, 3:575; Maiberger, 471.

Grisanti, 575; Victor P. Hamilton, "׃ יַפְגִּיעַ (pāga) Encounter, Meet, Reach, Entreat, Make Intercession," TWOT, 2:715. In Syriac it always occurs with the prep. b (see Maiberger, 470).

Cf. BDB, 803; HALOT, 3:910; Maiberger, 471-73; Hamilton, "׃ יַפְגִּיעַ," 714-15; Grisanti, 575.

Cf. BDB, 803; Hamilton, "׃ יַפְגִּיעַ," 714-15. The basic meaning is illustrated in the following verses: Gen 32:1 [H 2]; Exod 5:20; 23:4; Num 35:19, 21; 1 Sam 10:5; Isa 64:5; Amos 5:19. The verb in the Qal, however, is additionally employed in three special
noted here is the one employed with a positive sense. In this usage the verb in the Qal refers to a meeting or an encounter with request, and it means "entreat, press, plead." \(^{423}\)

ways. One is to describe in a spatial sense that a man in his journeys unintentionally and unknowingly "reaches," that is, "arrives at" (with בָּא) a certain place, or, more technically, to serve in the idiom בְּגֶבֶל, which is employed in Josh 15-19, to define the borders of the tribal territories (except in the case of Judah, Benjamin, Simeon, and Dan). When the boundary (גֵּבֶל) "reaches," that is, "touches" a particular place, the verb פָּגַע is used eight times with בָּא (Josh 16:7; 17:10; 19:11b, 22, 26, 27, 34), and just once with לְ (Josh 19:11c).

A second use of the verb is quite often (13 times) to serve, in a negative sense, with the specialized meaning (always with בָּא) "kill (with the sword)," to meet someone with hostility, that is, with the purpose of eliminating him (Judg 8:21; 15:12; 18:25; 1 Sam 22:17; 22:18 (2x); 2 Sam 1:15; 1 Kgs 2:25, 29, 31, 32, 34, 46). In these cases the meaning is made more precise in the synonymous parallelism in the verse itself or in the next verse(s) (for Judg 15:12, see vs. 13; for 1 Kgs 2:29, see vss. 30-34). Only once God is the subject who might inflict punishment in the form of death "with pestilence or with the sword" in case of Israel's disobedience. The case in Ruth 2:22 can refer to hostile, vexatious behavior in order to drive someone away, and thus means "bother" or "molest" rather than "kill" (cf. Maiberger, 473). In these contexts the usual rendering is "fall upon."

The third use of the verb is used in a positive sense and significant for this research, and thus it is to be dealt with in the text.

\(^{422}\)Maiberger contended: "The verb 'strike' or 'hit' approximates most closely the basic meaning and variety of usage of Heb. פָּגַע (471). Maiberger, in his article "פָּגַע," 471-73, categorized the senses conveyed by the verb פָּגַע in the Qal as follows:

1. Unintentional  
    1.1 neutral  
    1.1.a place: (1) hit = arrive at (Gen 28:11)  
        (2) hit = touch (see the cases of the tribal allotment)  
    1.1.b person or animal: hit upon = meet, encounter (with בָּא, Gen 32:1 [H 2]; without prep., Exod 5:3; 23:4; 1 Sam 10:5; Isa 64:5 [H 4])  
    1.2 negative  
    1.2.a person: strike out at = attack (Num 35:19, 21; Josh 2:16)  
    1.2.b animal (beast of prey): strike down = slay (Amos 5:19)  

2. Intentional (only of persons)  
    2.1 negative  
    2.1.a strike down (by sword) = kill (see the cases of meeting with hostility)  
    2.1.b strike down (by sword or pestilence) = kill (God as subject, only once in Exod 5:3)  
    2.1.c hit = jostle, upset, get rid of (Ruth 2:22)  
    2.2 positive: strike = press someone to do something (for the benefit of another person), i.e., importune (see the discussion in the text above).

\(^{423}\)Cf. BDB, 803; HALOT, 3:910; Maiberger, 471, 473; Hamilton, "פָּגַע," 714-15; Grisanti, 575. Maiberger mentioned that פָּגַע means "elbow someone in the ribs' (figuratively) to get attention in order to importune them (God or a human being: with הב') for something, to 'press' for something" (473). According to Maiberger, thus, the term
The verb פָּגַע Qal with the preposition בְּ is used in the context of pleading with man (Gen 23:8; Ruth 1:16) or making intercession to God (Jer 7:16; 27:18). It is especially to be noted that the verb פָּגַע Qal with בְּ parallels the verb פָּלַל Hithpael with בַּעַד in Jer 7:16. 

פָּגַע with בְּ (Ruth 1:16; Job 21:15; Jer 7:16; 27:18) means "put pressure on someone," "urge someone strongly," or "go pleading to someone," and the term פָּגַע with בְּ and בֶּ (Gen 23:8) means "plead with someone on behalf of someone else." 

424 Cf. Hamilton, "פָּגַע," 715; Grisanti, 575. C. R. North, in his work The Second Isaiah, 246, mentioned: "The general sense of the verb is 'meet', 'encounter': so Qal 'meet with request', 'entreat'. . . . 'Make intercession' is therefore quite justified, though in current English usage the main emphasis is on intercessory prayer."

In Gen 23:8 Abraham asks the citizens of Hebron to plead for (לְ) him with (בְּ) Ephron so that he can purchase the cave of Machpelah from Ephron as a sepulcher for Sarah (see vss. 9-20). In Ruth 1:16 Ruth tells Naomi not to put pressure on (בְּ) her to return to Moab.

In Jer 7:16, just right after the so-called "Temple Sermon," Yahweh forbids the prophet Jeremiah to pray for the apostate people of Judah, the main reason of which is the popular cult of the queen of heaven (vs. 18; cf. 44:17-19, 25) being practiced throughout Judah (cf. 7:17; 44:6, 9, 17, 21). "The form in which the prohibition to pray comes very strong," as J. A. Thompson indicated in his commentary, The Book of Jeremiah, NICOT (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1980), 284. According to Samuel E. Balentine, "The Prophet as Intercessor: A Reassessment," JBL 103 (1984): 161-73, the triple prohibition contains two of the three major verbs of intercession (פָּלַל Hithpael used most frequently in this sense [16 times with הָלַל] and פָּגַע Qal with בְּ employed also as a language of intercession; cf. another major verb of intercession הָלַל, which is not used here in Jer 7:16) and one of the several representative expressions of prayer (נָשָׂא תְּפִלָּה, occurring twice each with reference to Jeremiah [Jer 7:16; 11:14] and Isaiah [2 Kgs 19:4; Isa 37:4]). As Balentine argued from the result of his study on the language of intercession, Moses, Samuel, and Jeremiah were three intercessors par excellence in the Old Testament (Balentine, "The Prophet as Intercessor," 109-110; idem, Prayer in the Hebrew Bible: The Drama of Divine-Human Dialogue, OBT [Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1993], 51). Jeremiah, however, unlike his predecessors, particularly Moses and Samuel (Jer 15:1), is now not permitted to exercise the role of an intercessor on behalf of the people in this context of cultic criticisms (see also 11:14; cf. 14:11). In Jer 27:18, Jeremiah challenges the false prophets to demonstrate the authority and the truth of their words by an ability to "intercede with" (פָּגַע with בְּ) God.

In Job 21:15 the wicked doubt that it is profitable for them to serve the Almighty and to encounter (with בְּ) God with a request. If intercession by definition is essentially prayer "for" or "on behalf of" someone else, then it is not likely, in view of vss. 7-14, that the encounter here is intercessory. Isaiah 47:3 (פָּגַע without בְּ) is a crux interpretum and has prompted a number of interpretations and not a few emendations. Just two of them are: (1) "I will spare no man" (cf. RSV, NIV, NASB, and NRSV; from the interpretation, "I come to an understanding with no-one," following MT with no emendation); (2) "No one will resist me" (BHS's proposal פָּגַע instead of פָּגַע, supported by Symmachus, αὐτοὶ δὲ εἰσαγαγοῦνται καὶ Vulgate non resistet mihi homo; cf. JPS, "I will let no man intercede"; NJB, "No one will stand in my way"). For more suggestions on the interpretation of Isa 47:3, see HALOT, 3:910; Whybray, Isaiah 40-66, 120; J.D.W. Watts, 168-69; Oswalt, 240, n. 4; Blenkinsopp, 277.
The parallel verb הַלָּפָל Hithpael, which is the most common term for "pray" in the OT, is frequently used for intercessory prayers (39 times out of 80), but it also points to the direction of priestly intercessions (10 times). Also to be noted is that, though not used here in Jer 7:16, another major intercession verb עָתַר is always used for intercessory prayers to God, the meaning of which is the same in the Qal as well as in the Hiphil.

The verb הַלָּפָל occurs 84 times in the OT, mostly in the Hithpael (except the four occurrences of the Piel in Gen 48:11, 1 Sam 2:25, Ps 106:30, and Ezek 16:52), of which the usual translation is "pray" (cf. Mandelkern, 950-51; Lisowsky, 1156-57; Even-Shoshan, 945-46; VOT, 201, 399).

The verb הַלָּפָל Hithpael, which is the most common word for "pray" in the OT, is used 39 times in connection with the intercessory prayer (Gen 20:7, 17; Num 11:2, 21:7 [2x]; Deut 9:20, 26; 1 Sam 2:25; 7:5; 8:6, 12:19, 23; 1 Kgs 8:28, 54; 13:6; 2 Kgs 4:33; 6:17; 2 Chr 6:19; 7:1; 30:18; 32:20; Ezra 10:1; Neh 1:4, 6; Job 42:8, 10; Ps 72:15; Isa 37:15, 21; Jer 7:16; 11:14; 14:11; 29:7; 37:3; 42:2, 4, 20; Dan 9:4, 20), which is made clear not only by its accompanying preposition (especially בַּעַר, "on behalf of") but also by its context.

The verb הַלָּפָל Hithpael and the related nominative תְּפִלָּה are not attested in other Semitic languages, with the exception of Neo-Punic tplt "prayer, request" (cf. H.-P. Stähli, "פלל pll hitp. to Pray," TLOT, 2:991; P. A. Verhoef, "Prayer," NIDOTTE, 4:1060). Mentioning, "Homonymous roots meaning 'pray' are not found in the Semitic languages; it is therefore virtually impossible to trace the etymology of pll," E. Gerstenberger, in his article "פלל pll," TDOT, 11:568, argued: "Several conjectures have been put forward. . . . All etymological theories, however, boil down ultimately to attempts to constrain the clear usage of a word group within the corset of a preconceived theology." He then continued: "Because the search for the origin of the root has been fruitless, we should seriously consider the possibility of taking the noun תְּפִלָּה as given and the hithpael of the verb as a derivative of the noun. The denominative process may have been furthered by the phonetic resemblance to hitnappèl . . . as well as the general tendency of cultic language to use hithpael forms. . . . The hithpael often expresses 'a more indirect application to the subject,' so that hitnappèl means 'intercede for oneself.' Against this etymology, one might argue that תְּפִלָּה does not look like a primary noun." Although the etymology is contested, the meaning of the verb הַלָּפָל Hithpael and the related noun תְּפִלָּה is clear in context, that is, "pray" and "prayer" respectively. For a few suggestions for the etymology and meaning of the root הַלָּפָל, see Gerstenberger, 568; Stähli, 991; Hamilton, "פלל," 725; HALOT, 3:933-34. For suggestions for the relationship between the Piel and the Hithpael of the verb, and for the significance of the 80 of its 84 usages, see Hamilton, "פלל," 726.

Koehler and Baumgartner (HALOT, 3:933-34; CHALOT, 292-93) identify two homophonous roots pll: הַלָּפָל I, meaning "judge, arbitrate" (exclusively in the Piel) and הַלָּפָל II, meaning "pray, intercede" (exclusively in the Hithpael). BDB derives both usages from a common root with the suggested basic meaning "intervene, interpose." An interesting passage in which the Piel and Hithpael of הַלָּפָל are juxtaposed is 1 Sam 2:25, which apparently employs a wordplay using the two roots or meanings of הַלָּפָל. Lisowsky, 1156, classified even the Hithpael in 1 Sam 2:25 into the root הַלָּפָל I. See also Richard Schultz, "פלל," NIDOTTE, 3:627; Verhoef, 1060.

The verb עָתַר occurs most frequently in
so that in usage it is similar to the verb פָּגַע.

The term ישפיע in Isa 53:12 is in the Hiphil, and the Hiphil of the verb פָּגַע occurs six times in OT (Job 36:32; Isa 53:6, 12; 59:16; Jer 15:11; 36:25). The two basic distinct meanings of the verb פָּגַע Hiphil are (1) "entreat passionately" or "intercede" (Isa 53:12; 59:16; Jer 15:11; 36:25) and (2) "lay, burden" or "cause to strike" (Job 36:32; Isa 53:6).† Thus the verb פָּגַע Hiphil with an accusative of something and with the preposition ב plus someone (Isa 53:6) means "lay something upon someone" or "cause something to strike someone."‡ The verb פָּגַע Hiphil with the preposition ל plus someone (Isa 53:12) means "entreat passionately on behalf of someone," that is, "intercede for someone."§ Arguing that the combination of the verb פָּגַע Qal and the the plague narratives in Exodus (8:8-9 [H 4-5], 28-30 [H 24-26]; 9:28; 10:17-18).

427 Cf. BDB, 803; Maiberg, 505-506; Hamilton, "פָּגַע," 715. In Jer 36:25 Jehoiakim, king of Judah, would not listen to his officials (Elnathan, Delaiah, and Gemariah), even though they implored or entreated passionately (פָּגַע in the Hiphil with ב) the king not to burn Jeremiah's scroll of Yahweh's words, written by Baruch at the dictation of Jeremiah.

Jeremiah 15:11 is a crux interpretum and a variety of solutions have been proposed (see William L. Holladay, Jeremiah 1, HCHC [Philadelphia, PA: Fortress, 1986], 446-47, 453-54; Robert P. Carrol, Jeremiah, OTL [Philadelphia, PA: Westminster, 1986], 324-25, 327; J. A. Thompson, 391-93; William McKane, Jeremiah, vol. 1, ICC [Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1986], 343-45). It seems, however, that there are two reasonable interpretations of the verb under study here: (1) "cause to entreat" (the enemy's pleading with Jeremiah; cf. KJV, NKJV, NIV, JPS, and NASB); (2) "intercede for" (Jeremiah's making intercession to God on behalf of the enemy; cf. RSV and NJB; cf. John Bright, Jeremiah, AB [Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1965], 106, 109; Walter Brueggemann, To Pluck Up, to Tear Down: A Commentary on the Book of Jeremiah 1-25, ITC [Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1988], 138; idem, A Commentary on Jeremiah: Exile and Homecoming [Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998], 144; Maiberg, 474).


428 Koehler and Baumgartner rendered it into "let something strike someone" (CHALOT, 288) or "let something hurt someone" (HALOT, 3:910).

429 Maiberg, 474.
preposition ב conveys the idea of physical contact, Hamilton concluded: "An intercessor is one who makes 'contact' with God as opposed to the many who simply dabble in prayer." In this regard North's remark is to be noted: "More likely, in the present context and in the light of 59:16, 'there was no one to intervene', the figure is of the Servant placing himself between the transgressors and the punishment they deserved."

The intercessory function of the Suffering Servant has been understood, however, in terms of a prophetic intercession. Even the term פָּגַע Qal with the preposition ב in Jer 7:16, has never been considered by most scholars to be used for a priestly intercession. E. Gerstenberger's assertion that "the hithpael of pll and the noun פָּלַל belong to the language of Israel's cult" is not quite convincing. However, the term פָּלַל Hithpael seems to point to the direction of priestly intercession also (10 times out of 80), as shown in the cases of intercession of Moses, Samuel, and Ezra, in that each of them was also called priest. Furthermore, the

430 Hamilton, "פָּגַע," 715.
431 North, The Second Isaiah, 246; see also idem, Isaiah 40-55, 141.
432 See, e.g., A. Oepke, "μεσιν της," TDNT, 4:613-14; Whybray, Thanksgiving, 73-74; idem, Isaiah 40-66, 183. Such a tendency is indicated by Rodríguez, "Substitution," 292. It is also indicated, though indirectly, by Gerstenberger, 576.
433 Cf. Stähli, 992. H.-P. Stähli mentioned here: "It is noteworthy that pll htp. never describes intercession as a priestly function" (ibid.).
434 Gerstenberger, 574. Gerstenberger's contention seems to be mainly based on his two observations. First, there is a "general tendency of cultic language to use hithpael forms" (568). Second, "the intercessory figures—especially Moses, Samuel, and Jeremiah—have been stylized by the postexilic community. The intercessors reflect the cultic practice and communal structure of the restoration period" (573).
435 Num 11:2; 21:7 [2x]; Deut 9:20, 26; 1 Sam 7:5; 8:6; 12:19, 23; Ezra 10:1. Contextually none of these passages are cultic or priestly.
436 The term פָּלַל in the Hithpael is used in connection with the intercession of Moses (Num 11:2; 21:7 [2x]; Deut 9:20, 26; i.e., all its occurrences in the Pentateuch except the two [Gen 20:7, 17], which are related to the intercession of Abraham, of whom Gen 20:7 says that "he is a prophet") and with that of Samuel (1 Sam 7:5; 8:6; 12:19, 23). Deuteronomy 34:10 and 1 Sam 3:20 mention Moses and Samuel as a prophet respectively. It is to be noted, however, that Ps 99:6 mentions them as Yahweh's priests.
immediately preceding and paralleling clause (וְהוּא חֵטְא-רַבִּים נָשָׂא) in Isa 53:12 is a cultic one, as will be shown later in this chapter. It is quite natural, therefore, that the intercession of the Suffering Servant can be regarded as a priestly intercession. In fact, his intercession seems to be more than that.\(^437\) The Suffering Servant's intercession goes beyond a priestly intercession, not only because "his intercession is not so much a spoken one as an acted one"\(^438\) but also because it ultimately costed his life itself. He did not intercede for the rebels in the sense that "he made prayers of intercession for them," but that "with his life, his suffering and his death, he took their place and underwent their punishment in their stead."\(^439\) Whybray argued, however, that the two clauses—"he bore the sin of many"; "he made intercession for the transgressors"—are intended to express a contrast rather than a parallelism: "the Servant suffered a punishment which others and not he deserved; yet it was he who had always interceded (and successfully!) with God for those very people."\(^440\) It should be maintained against this that the contrast (cf. Jer 15:1). Furthermore, the term פָּלַל in the Hithpael is used in Ezra 10:1 for the intercession of Ezra, the priest and scribe (Ezra 7:7, 11, 12; 10:10). See also Dan 9:4, 20 (cf. vss. 3, 17, 21). For Moses as priest, see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 555-58.

\(^437\) Rodríguez, "Substitution," 293.

\(^438\) Ibid. Cf. Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 269; Clines, 41-44; Balentine, Prayer in the Hebrew Bible, 192; idem, "The Prophet as Intercessor," 164, n. 2. David J. A. Clines acutely pointed out that there is a great emphasis on action and that the object of that action is the Servant. He mentioned: "There is no concrete action that the Servant does—apart from letting everything happen to him. . . . Yahweh's purpose was (hâpes, 53:10) that the Servant should—not do something—but suffer, be the one acted upon" (42, italics his).

\(^439\) Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 269. Balentine also mentioned in his Prayer in the Hebrew Bible, 192: "The Hebrew Bible also encourages the view, though much less vigorously, that suffering is to some degree the vocation of God's elect. The God who mysteriously hides in order to save (cf. Isa 45:15) is capable of wounding in order to heal (cf. Isa 53:5). To bear such affliction on behalf of others is the task of the servant of God whose life, rather than words, is mandated to be an 'intercession for transgressors' (Isa 53:12)." See also Balentine, "The Prophet as Intercessor," 164, n. 2: "It should be noted, however, that the Servant's 'intercession' is accomplished not by prayer per se but rather by suffering."

\(^440\) Whybray, Thanksgiving, 74.
is not found between these two clauses but between them and the previous one: "He was numbered with the rebels (שׁהָפֶר); yet he bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the rebels (שׁהָפֶר)." Thus, as Rodriguez correctly argued, "He interceded by bearing the sin of the many." Thus, as Rodriguez correctly argued, "He interceded by bearing the sin of the many."  

Such an aspect is clearly emphasized by the semantic connection between vss. 6 and 12, which is made by the same verb פָּגַע Hiphil. "By using this one verb differently both of God and of the Servant, the agreement of their wills is made evident." God's will for the vicarious event through the Servant is expressed by פָּגַע Hiphil plus the preposition ב in Isa 53:6, "But Yahweh has caused the iniquity of us all to fall on him." Now in vs. 12 the Servant's will for the vicarious event is expressed by

---

441 Rodríguez, "Substitution," 293; cf. F. Stolz, "נשׂא To Lift, Bear" TLOT, 2:772. Also to be noted is the following chiastic structure of vs. 12β-כβ:

A "he was numbered with the transgressors (שׁהָפֶר)"
B "he himself bore the sin (חֵטְא) of many"
A1 "he interceded for the transgressors (שׁהָפֶר)."

This structure seems to show that even his being numbered with the transgressors essentially corresponds to his intercession for them, and that both of the two were done by his bearing the sin of the many.

442 Rodríguez, "Substitution," 293; cf. Eichrodt, 2:452-53; North, The Second Isaiah, 246. In the same vein Rignell argued: "Vs. 12 is already marked as a saying by the opening לכן. We are concerned with the accomplishment of this prophecy, the contents of which are summed up in a pair of concrete sayings, ending very impressively with a confirmation of that which was the mystery of the Servant: פָּגַע, he suffered vicariously for sinners" (91-92.). Westermann rightly pointed out: "Here, as the termination of the whole thing, two brief but weighty statements [Isa 53:12c] sum up the meaning of the Servant's work" (Isaiah 40-66, 269).

443 Cf. Spieckermann, 6-7, 11. Unfortunately Snaith, in his "Isaiah 40-66," 197, failed to perceive the significance of the semantic connection by giving the same meaning "lay on" to the verb פָּגַע Hiphil not only in Isa 53:6 but also in vs. 12. Whybray also lost the point by asserting in his Thanksgiving, 60: "The word play is intended to bring out the contrast between the behavior of the Servant and his fellows."

444 Spieckermann, 6. For the LXX's παραδίωκματ for פָּגַע Hiphil of the MT and its implications, see Ekblad, 225-27, 266, esp. 266.

445 Cf. Spieckermann, 6. Blenkinsopp correctly mentioned that "the figure of straying sheep and that of turning aside from the way draw on familiar metaphoric language for moral disorientation and transgression," and then he so interestingly
the same פגע Hiphil plus the preposition ל: "and he interceded for the rebels."\(^{446}\)

Paradoxically God struck the Servant that he could intercede for sinners.\(^{447}\) The Servant "came between them and the punishment they deserved. Here again . . . the thought of vicarious suffering is clearly expressed."\(^{448}\) The Servant was the vicarious 'intercessor' ( shaltiyyen, Hiphil participle of the verb פגע; cf. Isa 59:16),\(^{449}\) and thus the Suffering Servant Poem "closes magnificently on the note of intercession."\(^{450}\)

The semantic connection by פגע Hiphil between Isa 53:6 and 12 evidently shows that there was a mutual agreement between God and the Servant regarding the vicarious event. Furthermore, it shows that the intercession of the Servant in Isa 53:12 is done through his vicarious suffering and death, which is also supported by its immediately preceding and paralleling cultic clause.

remarked: "Taking our cue from Job 36:32 ('lightning fills his hands; he commands it to hit [פגע Hiphil] the mark'), we are perhaps to think of the Servant as the target toward which the consequences of the community's guilt are redirected by God" (353).

It seems that, from the perspective of a literary structure of Isa 53:6b (ヴה יִפְגִּיעַ לָּנוּבּוֹ אֵת עֲוֹן כֻּ), the Servant was placed in the middle, that is, between "Yahweh" and "all of us" (who were corporately involved in sin [עון]) so that "Yahweh" hit the Servant instead of "all of us" (lit., "Yahweh caused the iniquity of us all to hit him"). As for פגע in vs. 6, the renderings "laid on" (KJV, RSV, NIV, NKJV, and NRSV), "made to light on" (JPS), "caused to fall on" (NASB), "brought to bear on" (NJB), and "caused to meet on" (YLT) seem to be weak. For the preceding two verses (vss. 4-5) in the same stanza (vss. 4-6) realistically depict the excruciating suffering of the Servant. Thus, in view of פגע Qal in a negative sense (see fn. 422 in this chapter), the rendering "caused to hit/strike" seems much better here.

\(^{446}\)Cf. Spieckermann, 6.

\(^{447}\)Cf. Landy, 71.

\(^{448}\)North, Isaiah 40-55, 141.

\(^{449}\)Cf. Spieckermann, 15. The expression "vicarious intercessor" is Spieckermann's coinage suggesting that the intercession of the Servant is his vicarious suffering and death. Young asserted that "the priestly office of the Servant is set forth when it is said, 'and for the transgressors He maketh intercession (' shaltiyyen')" (Studies in Isaiah, 206). Von Rad already mentioned that "he [i.e., the Servant] acts vicariously ( shaltiyyen)" (Old Testament Theology, 2:257).

\(^{450}\)Muillenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 631.
As investigated thus far, strictly speaking, the verb פָּגַע in the Qal or in the Hiphil originally was not a cultic term per se. However, especially the usage of פָּגַע Qal with the preposition ב in Jer 7:16 points to the direction of a priestly intercession by its parallelling major intercession verb לֶלַע Hithpael with יָשֹּׁב. Besides, one of two basic distinct meanings of פָּגַע Hiphil is "entreat passionately" or "intercede." Thus, significantly the verb פָּגַע is similar in its usage to another major intercession verb עָתַר (Qal as well as Hiphil). So the verb פָּגַע Hiphil with the preposition ל plus someone (Isa 53:12) points to the Servant's intercession, more specifically his priestly intercession. It seems quite natural, therefore, that פָּגַע Hiphil is elevated to a cultic status through Isaiah's unique and innovative employment of it in Isa 53:12, and thus that, although it may not be a cultic technical term per se, it is used here with a cultic connotation and acquires enough potential to be a possible candidate for a cultic term.

Sin Terms

The Old Testament has a plethora of terminology for sin. Among the numerous Hebrew roots for "sin" and its synonyms, three terms חַטָּא, עָוֹן, and פֶּשַׁע are generally recognized as being the most important.

---

451 Cf. Rolf P. Knierim, "חַטָּא h.t. to Miss," TLOT, 1:410; Robin C. Cover, "Sin, Sinners (OT)," ABD (1992), 6:31; Alex Luc, "חַטָּא, נֹשֵׁא," NIDOTTE, 2:87. Alex Luc said: "The vocabulary for sin in the OT is notably rich. . . . At least ten terms may be considered as closely related to this subject" (ibid.). Cover mentioned: "Israelite literature draws upon a rich thesaurus for terminology relating to sin. One may count over fifty words for 'sin' in biblical Hebrew, if specific as well as generic terms are isolated" (31).

sin originally may have distinct meanings, the three terms are considered as representative terms for sin.\textsuperscript{453} They are complementarily used, a phenomenon evident in that they occur together 15 times.\textsuperscript{454} Rolf P. Knierim asserted: "Even though this triad is formulaic and systematically expresses the mass of all possible errors, one may not simply view the three terms in the triad as synonyms."\textsuperscript{455} As Ronald F. Youngblood argued, unless "each of the three roots has a slightly different nuance," then "three distinct roots would be unnecessary."\textsuperscript{456} "Each disqualifies 'sin' in its own way. Nevertheless, where they are used together as a formula, they are intended to represent all other terms for 'sin.'"\textsuperscript{457} Gane correctly observed the scholarly situation:

Interpreters have often regarded the three terms for moral faults in Lev 16:16 and 21 . . . as combining to imply comprehensive treatment of sin, but individually imprecise and overlapping in semantic range, in accordance with usage of these nouns and other words from the same roots elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible. . . . Some scholars have perceived that in Leviticus פֶּשַׁע, חֵטֵא, and עון may be used more narrowly and represent distinct categories of evil.\textsuperscript{458} Then, Gane made it clear that, although the formulaic triad may have "the effect of

\textsuperscript{453} Cf. Knierim, "יפות הֵלַכְתִּים," 410.

\textsuperscript{454} Cf. ibid.; Martens, 52; Luc, "יפות," 88. Knierim and then Martens cited 14 passages, whereas Luc cited only 13. For 15 passages with the three sin terms, see Exod 34:7; Lev 16:21; Job 13:23; Pss 32:1-2, 5; 51:1-3 [H 3-5]; 59:3-4 [H 4-5]; 103:10-12; Isa 43:24-25; 53:5-12; 59:12; Ezek 21:24 [H 29]; 33:9-10; Dan 9:24; Mic 7:18-19. In Exod 34:7 not חַטָּאת but חַטָּאָה is used, and in Ps 103:10-12 and Isa 53:12 not חָטָא but חֵטֵא is used. For three passages with the nouns and their verbs mixed, see Job 7:20-21 (חסַּע, חָשָּׁע, חֵטֵא); Isa 1:2-4 (חסַּע, חָשָּׁע, חָטָא); Jer 33:8 (חסַּע, חָשָּׁע, חָטָא). For one passage with the three verbs (חסַּע, חָשָּׁע, חָטָא), see 1 Kgs 8:47.


\textsuperscript{457} Knierim, "יפות הֵלַכְתִּים," 410; cf. Martens, 50; Cover, 32.

\textsuperscript{458} Gane, Cult and Character, 285; cf. idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 280. For bibliographical information on attempts to explain the evils dealt with on the Day of Atonement, see Gane, Cult and Character, 285, n. 1 (cf. 285-98); Rodríguez, "Substitution," 114, n. 1.
summarizing the totality of moral faults," the three terms "represent distinct categories of evil," which "have different dynamic properties" and "follow different trajectories" "into the sanctuary before the Day of Atonement and then out of it and away from the Israelite camp on the great Day."^459

In the Suffering Servant Poem the three major sin terms significantly occur and thus are to be investigated.

חֵטְא

The significant sin term חֵטְא occurs in Isa 53:12 of the Suffering Servant Poem.

The root of the term חֵטְא is חטא,^460 which is the most frequent Hebrew root for sin.\^461

The concrete basic meaning of חטא is "miss (a goal/mark, or a path/way)."^462 This basic meaning is literally apparent in Judg 20:16, "Out of all these people 700 chosen men were left-handed; each one could sling a stone at a hair and not miss."^463

459Gane, Cult and Character, 286-300; cf. idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 280-83.

460Klaus Koch mentioned: "All the Semitic languages share the root חָטָא—strictly speaking חָטָא, later occasionally חָטָא," TDOT, 4:310. For the Semitic attestations of the root, see idem, "חָטָא," 310; Knierim, "חטא," 406; Luc, 87.

461Among the three major terms for sin, the root חטא is by far the most frequent, occurring 595 times (593x in Hebrew and 2x in Aramaic) in the OT. For an overview of its occurrences in the OT, see the tables in Knierim, "חטא," 406-407 and in VOT, 316. Thus, Porúbčan, 4, argued that חטא "is the most usual and fundamental Hebrew root for expressing the idea of sin." Then Porúbčan, 134, asserted: "The basic Hebrew semantic stem for sin is חָטָא; hence in any investigation concerning sin we must proceed from the semantic value of חָטָא, חָטָא, etc." Luc, 89-92, esp. 89, discussed important themes on sin in the OT by following primarily the functions of חטא through the various contexts of the Bible.

462See Eichrodt, 2:380; von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 1:263; G. Herbert Livingston, "חטא (חָטָא) Miss, Miss the Way, Sin, Incur Guilt, Forfeit, Purify from Uncleanness," TWOT, 1:277; Luc, 87; Cover, 32; pace Koch, "חטא חָטָא," 311.

463Italics mine. The verb חטא here in the Hiphil. Porúbčan, 5, contended that he would prefer to read a Qal here, חָטָא (like Job 5:24), because the Hiphil never has this meaning elsewhere.
instances in which the term can signify "miss" include Job 5:24 (see its antithetic parallel with שולח), Prov 8:36 (see its antithetic parallel with מץ "find" in vs. 35), and Isa 65:20. The concept of failure is implied here, and thus "sin as denoted by חטא was originally viewed as a failure, a lack of perfection in carrying out a duty." However, as Martens pointed out, it is sometimes erroneously thought to be chiefly a matter of failure to keep the law. Even though this aspect of failure cannot be excluded, the foremost notion is failure, not of a person over against a code, but of a person-to-person or a person-to-God relationship. Thus, as Martens noted, Eli's statement is programmatic for its meaning: "If one person sins (שחט) against another, God will

464 Cf. Porúbčan, 4-6; Knierim, "חטא חטא," 407; Luc, 87-88. Proverbs 19:2 can be another instance, but Knierim here noted the transition from the literal to the figurative usage in the sense of a perverted life style ("خوف חטא," 407; see also Martens, 51). Porúbčan, 6, added another significant example of Lev 5:15-16, in which there are in opposition מון מקים ("to give or do something less than was due or prescribed") and ישלם ("to integrate, compensate for it"). Here, like Job 5:24, שמס (lack, want of something) parallels with ישלם (completeness, wholeness). As Porúbčan acutely pointed out, Lev 5:15-16 is important because the same phrase מון מקים occurs in a moral context, Lev 4:2, ". . . If any one sins . . . in any of the commandments of Yahweh [by not observing them] . . . " (ibid.). Thus, he concluded that the original meaning of שמס is "miss" something (a mark, a way), "not attain to" a certain measure or the whole, "not conform to" a rule, and "lack entirety, completeness," and that such an idea is clearly expressed especially by the phrase מון מקים (ibid.).

465 Lipiński, 1587. According to the nuance of the verb in Job 5:24 and Lev 5:15-16, it connotes anything less than the total. See also Porúbčan, 5-6, 134-35; G. H. Livingston, "חטא (חטא חטא)," 277. Porúbčan, 134, mentioned that "חטא חטא basically means something defective: to miss a mark, to lack entirety, completeness, to miss a way—the right way—by going astray" (italics his).

466 Martens, 51.

467 Cf. Knierim, "חטא חטא," 409; Martens, 51-52; Lipiński, 1587. Knierim, "חטא חטא," 409, asserted: "The etymology of the term (to miss a mark) and the context indicate that the criterion for 'error' is not particular commandments but injury to a communal relationship: a person sins against a person or against God." For examples of such a case (including the case of a vassal's errant ways in 2 Kgs 18:14), see Lipiński, 1587-88; Cover, 32. "Nevertheless," as Knierim, "חטא חטא," 409, observed, "to the extent that a particular communal relationship implies norms of relation, violation of the norms results in injury to the relationship. In this sense, then, norms appear in the context of the discussion of 'error.'" For the examples of such a case, see Knierim, "חטא חטא," 409; Lipiński, 1588.
mediate for him, but if someone sins (חָטָא) against Yahweh, who can make intercession for him?" (1 Sam 2:25). However, it is an axiom that "there is no man who does not sin (חָטָא)" (1 Kgs 8:46a; cf. Eccl 7:20), for sin as denoted by חטא includes both voluntary/intentional and involuntary/unintentional sins.

In the OT the root חטא and its derivatives provide "the most common means of expressing religious disqualification of specific human acts and modes of conduct." The verb חטא occurs 237 times in the Old Testament: 181 times in the Qal, 15 times in the Piel, 32 times in the Hiphil, and 9 times in the Hithpael.

Significantly all these verbal forms are closely related to the cult.

The verb חטא in the Qal occurs with the meanings of (1) "miss (a goal/mark or path/way)" (3x) and (2) "offend" or "sin" (178x). The Book of Leviticus shows the highest frequency of it, and the total occurrences in the so-called cultic writings, Leviticus (25x), Numbers (8x), and Ezekiel (11x) reach 44 times (out of 181). In

---

468Cf. Martens, 52. Knierim, "חטא חטא," 409, mentioned 1 Sam 2:25, Jer 16:10-12, and 1 Kgs 8:46 as the programmatic statements.


470Koch, "חטא chētā," 310.


472Job 5:24; Prov 8:36; Isa 65:20.

473Fifty-three times in the Pentateuch (7x in Genesis, 8x in Exodus, 25x [most frequently] in Leviticus, 8x in Numbers, and 5x in Deuteronomy), 53x in the Historical books (2x in Joshua, 3x in Judges, 14x in 1 Samuel, 4x in 2 Samuel, 13x in 1 Kings, 3x in 2 Kings, 2x in 1 Chronicles, 7x in 2 Chronicles, and 5x in Nehemiah), 29x in the Psalms and Wisdom Literature (11x in Job, 8x in Psalms, 6x in Proverbs, 6x in Ecclesiastes), and 43x in the Prophets (5x in Isaiah, 13x in Jeremiah, 3x in Lamentations, 11x in Ezekiel, 4x in Daniel, 5x in Hosea, 1x each in Micah, Habakkuk, and Zephaniah). Cf. Mandelkern, 381-82; BDB, 306-307; HALOT, 1:305; Knierim, "חטא חטא," 406-407.
addition, it occurs 6 times for cultic sins per se,\textsuperscript{474} 34 times in association with idolatry through pagan cults,\textsuperscript{475} and at least 56 times in cultic contexts.\textsuperscript{476}

The \textit{Piel} form occurs with the meanings of (1) "bear loss" (1x, Gen 31:39), (2) "make a sin-offering" (3x; Lev 6:19; 9:15; 2 Chr 29:34), and (3) "purify from sin or uncleanness" (11x; Exod 29:36; Lev 8:15; 14:49, 52; Num 19:19; Ezek 43:20, 22 [2x], 23; 45:18; Ps 51:9).\textsuperscript{477} The total occurrences in Leviticus (5x), Numbers (1x), and Ezekiel (5x) reach 11 times (out of 15). Besides, as its meanings and usage show, 14 occurrences (out of the 15) are cultically related.

The \textit{Hiphil} form occurs with the meanings of (1) "miss (the target)" (1x, Judg 20:16), (2) "cause to sin" (30x), and (3) "bring into condemnation" or "declare guilty" (1x, Isa 29:21).\textsuperscript{478} Twenty-five occurrences (out of the 32) are found in the books of Kings (10x in 1 Kgs and 15x in 2 Kgs), referring to Israel's kings causing the people to sin. It is to be noted that this causal form is mostly used in relation to Jeroboam. He is described as one who "caused Israel to sin," a description accounting for almost two thirds of its total occurrences in the OT (20x out of the 32; see, e.g., 1 Kgs 14:16; 2 Kgs 23:15). The description must be directly connected with his idolatry, mainly through

\textsuperscript{474}1 Sam 2:25 (2x; see vss. 13-17; cf. vs. 22); 12:23; 14:33-34 (see Lev 3:17; 7:23-27); cf. Eccl 9:2.

\textsuperscript{475}Exod 32:30, 31, 33; Deut 9:16, 18; 20:18; Judg 10:10, 15 (see vss. 13-14, 16); 1 Sam 7:6 (see vss. 3-4); 12:10; 1 Kgs 14:16, 22; 15:30; 16:13, 19; 2 Kgs 17:7, 21:17 (see vs. 11); Jer 2:35 (see vss. 11, 20, 27-28); 8:14 (see vss. 1-2, 19); 14:7 (see 13:27); 16:10 (see vs. 11); 44:23 (see vss. 21, 25); 50:14 (see vs. 2); Ezek 14:13 (see vss. 3-7); 16:51 (see vss. 16-22, 25, 36); 18:4, 20, 24 (see vss. 6, 11-12, 15); 37:23; Hos 4:7 (see vss. 11-19); 8:11 (2x); 10:9 (see vss. 1-2, 5, 8); 13:2 (see vs. 1).

\textsuperscript{476}Lev 4:2, 3 (2x), 14, 22, 23, 27, 28 (2x), 35; 5:1, 5, 6, 7, 10, 11, 13, 15, 16, 17; 6:2 [H 5:21], 3 [H 5:22], 4 [H 5:23]; 19:22 (2x); Num 6:11; 15:27, 28; 16:22; 1 Kgs 8:31, 33, 35, 46 (2x), 47, 50 [//2 Chr 6:22, 24, 26, 36 (2x), 37, 39]; Neh 1:6 (2x); 9:29 (see vss. 1-5); Job 1:5; Ps 4:4 [H 5]; 39:1 [H 2]; 41:4 [H 5]; 51:4 [H 6]; Isa 43:27 (see vss. 23, 24, 28); Dan 9:5, 8, 11, 15; cf. Pss 78:17, 32; 106:6; 119:11.

\textsuperscript{477}Cf. Lisowsky, 477-78; BDB, 307; \textit{HALOT}, 1:305.

\textsuperscript{478}Cf. Lisowsky, 478; \textit{VOT}, 316; BDB, 307; \textit{HALOT}, 1:305; \textit{DCH}, 3:196.
the two golden calves at Bethel and at Dan (cf. 1 Kgs 12:25-33; 2 Kgs 10:29; 23:15). Walking in the way of Jeroboam, Baasha and Elah his son caused Israel to sin with their idol worship (2x; 1 Kgs 16:2, 13). Ahab also caused Israel to sin like Jeroboam and Baasha (1x; 1 Kgs 21:22; cf. 16:30-33). Besides, Manasseh king of Judah also "caused Judah to sin" with his idolatry (2x; 2 Kgs 21:11, 16). Thus in the books of Kings the Hiphil form is related only to the sin of the kings causing the people to sin, specifically to their idol worship. Therefore, including its occurrence in the cultic context in Eccl 5:5, 29 occurrences (out of the 32) are cultically related.

The Hithpael form occurs with the meanings of (1) "purify oneself" (8x; Num 8:21; 19:12 [2x], 13, 20; 31:19, 20, 23), and (2) "withdraw" (1x, Job 41:17). Thus, 8 occurrences (out of the 9) are in the Book of Numbers and they are all cultically related.

There are six nominal forms: a masculine segholate form (חֵטְא), four feminine substantives (חֶטְאָה, חֶטָּאָה, חַטָּאָה, חַטָּאת), and a nomen agentis (חַטָּא). Significantly all these nominal forms (except חֶטָּאת) are closely related to the cult.

The term חֶטְאָה as a feminine variant of חֵטְא, which means "error, fault," occurs only once, and that in the cultic context of Num 15:28.

The term חֶטָּא occurs 8 times with the meanings of (1) "sin" (7x; Gen 20:9; Exod 32:21, 30, 31; 2 Kgs 17:21; Pss 32:1; 109:7), and (2) "sin offering" (1x, Ps 40:7). Moses mentioned 3 times (Exod 32:21, 30, 31) the golden calf incident at Mount Sinai as "a great sin" (חֶטָּא לָהַגְדָּא). Jeroboam's calf worship was mentioned once (2 Kgs 17:21) as

480 Cf. HALOT, 1:306; Koch, "ﬠַטְא chāṭ:āṯā,” 311.
482 Cf. Lisowsky, 478; BDB, 308; HALOT, 1:306; DCH, 3:198.
"a great sin" (גָּאוֹן נַעֲרֵי פָּיו) which he made Israel commit. The noun is also mentioned in relation to the blessedness of forgiveness (Ps 32:1) and to the invocation of vengeance upon adversaries (Ps 109:7; see its superscription). Thus, at least 6 occurrences (out of the 8) are cultically related.

The term חֲטָאָה occurs twice with the meaning of "sin," once each in the Sinai revelation of God of mercy and justice (Exod 34:7), and in the woe to those who are so heavy with sins that they drag their guilt and iniquity with ropes after them (Isa 5:18). In Ezra 6:17, however, its Aramaic equivalent חַטָּיָא appears once with the meaning of "sin offering."

The term חַטָּא occurs 19 times (Gen 13:13; Num 16:38 [H 17:3]; 32:14; 1 Sam 15:18; 1 Kgs 1:21; Pss 1:1, 5; 25:8; 26:9; 51:13 [H 15]; 104:35; Prov 1:10; 13:21; 23:17; Isa 1:28; 13:9; 33:14; Amos 9:8, 10), meaning "sinful, sinner." It occurs in a cultic context (Num 16:38) and in association with idolatry (Isa 1:28; cf. vss. 29-30). Thus, at least 2 occurrences (out of the 19) are cultically related.

The representative noun חַטָּאת, just like חֲטָאָה, has the peculiarity that it can
The term כַּחַטָּאת occurs 293 times in the OT: 163 for "sin" against human beings (Gen 31:36; 50:17; Num 5:6; 12:11; 1 Sam 20:1) or against God (e.g., Lev 4:14, 23, 28; 1 Sam 2:17; Isa 3:9; 30:1; Amos 5:12), 121 for "purification offering" (e.g., Exod 29:14; Lev 7:37; Num 19:9; 2 Kgs 12:17; 2 Chr 29:21, 23, 24), 6 for "guilt of sin" (Gen 18:20; Num 16:26; 32:23; Jer 17:1; Ezek 3:20; 18:24), and once each for "purification" (Num 8:7), "punishment for sin" (Zech 14:19), and "sinner" (Prov 13:6). Especially in Leviticus and Numbers כַּחַטָּאת appears many times alternating in meaning between "sin" [24x] and "purification offering" [96x], the means of receiving forgiveness or cleansing from Yahweh through the sacrificial system.

As shown above, the term כַּחַטָּאת occurs 121 times (out of 293) as a technical term.
for "purification offering" and once for "purification." Besides, the term חַטָּאת with the meaning of "sin" occurs twice for cultic sins per se, 53 times in association with idolatry through pagan cults, and at least 45 times in cultic contexts.

"The term חַטָּאת is used in all of its derivatives, apart from a few exceptions, in the context of theological statements." Moreover, it is "the most frequently used theological term for 'sin' in the OT, second only to רָאָה in the general semantic field of terms related to 'evil'." Knierim observed: "One may identify about 15 usages of the nominal derivatives . . . which generally refer, in various settings, to all types of errors (legal, cultic, social, etc.)." Even though "it signifies all kinds of failures which occur in the relationships of men with one another," "the root is used first and foremost for all

---

492 Three occurrences (out of the 8) in Exodus, 61 (out of the 82) in Leviticus, 37 (out of the 43) in Numbers, 1 (out of the 15) in 2 Kings, 3 (out of the 9) in 2 Chronicles, 1 (out of the 1) in Ezra, 1 (out of the 5) in Nehemiah, and 14 (out of the 24) in Ezekiel are for "purification offering."

493 One occurrence (out of the 43) in Numbers.

494 See 1 Sam 2:17 (cf. vss. 13-16); 14:38.

495 See Exod 32:30, 32, 34; 34:9; Deut 9:18, 21, 27; Josh 24:19 (cf. vss. 14-16, 20, 23); 1 Sam 15:23; 2 Sam 12:30; 13:34; 14:16, 22; 15:3, 26, 30, 34; 16:2, 13, 19, 26, 31; 2 Kgs 3:3; 10:31; 13:2, 6, 11; 14:24; 15:9, 18, 24, 28; 17:22; 21:16, 17; 24:3; 2 Chr 33:19; Jer 16:18; 17:1 (see vs. 2), 3; Ezek 16:51, 52; 18:14, 21, 24; Hos 4:8 (see vss. 11-19); 8:13 (see vss. 4-6); 9:9 (see vss. 1, 8, 10); 10:8; 13:12 (see vss. 1-2); Amos 5:12 (see vs. 5); Mic 1:5 (see vs. 6-7), 13.

496 See Gen 4:7; Lev 4:3, 14, 23, 26, 28 [2x], 35; 5:6 [2x], 10, 13; 16:16, 21, 30, 34; 19:22 [2x]; Num 5:6, 7; Josh 24:19; 1 Kgs 8:34, 35, 36 (//2 Chr 6:25, 26, 27); Neh 1:6; 9:2, 37; Ps 51:4 [H 6], 5 [H 7]; 59:4 [H 5], 12 [H 13]; 85:2 [H 3]; 109:14; Isa 6:7; 27:9; 43:24, 25; Dan 9:20 [2x], 24; Mic 6:7; Zech 14:19 (with the meaning of "punishment for sin"); cf. Ps 25:7, 18; 32:5 [2x]; 38:4 [H 5]; 79:9.

497 Knierim, "חַטָּאת," 410.


499 Knierim, "חַטָּאת," 408; cf. idem, Die Hauptbegriffe, 43-54. Lipiński, 1588, also observed: "The concept of חַטָּאת extends not only to juridical, moral, and social matters, but also to cultic obligations and even to involuntary infringements of ritual prescriptions (Lev 4-5) or of occasional divine premonitions (Num 22:34)."
human failures over against God.\textsuperscript{500}

"Sin against God is of utmost seriousness, so that punishment and compensation (expiatory sacrifices) must be exacted."\textsuperscript{501} As Robin C. Cover argued, the close relationship between sin (חטא) and its consequences is illustrated in the usage of the nominal derivatives, which may signify "sin," "guilt," "punishment," or "purification offering" (so-called sin offering).\textsuperscript{502} Similarly, two of the derived verbal conjugations (Piel and Hithpael) may signify the purgative of sin, "to purify or cleanse from sin" through sacrifice and ritual.\textsuperscript{503} Thus, in spite of the fact that חטא is "a comprehensive term for 'sin',"\textsuperscript{504} "both verb and noun became the words of most frequent occurrence in the language of the cult."\textsuperscript{505} "The theological sense of חטא comes into play when the offence is committed against God, or when failure . . . takes place in the sphere of the cult."\textsuperscript{506} Roy E. Gane correctly pointed out that, in the Pentateuchal ritual law (except

\textsuperscript{500}Von Rad, \textit{Old Testament Theology}, 1:263.

\textsuperscript{501}Cover, 32.

\textsuperscript{502}Ibid.

\textsuperscript{503}Ibid. The Piel of חטא, from which the noun חאתה ("purification offering") is derived, belongs to the "privative Piel," in which the Piel form of the verb is used as a denial of the usual meaning of its Qal. Thus חטא means "de-sin/un-sin, decontaminate/expurgate, cleanse/purify" (see Levine, \textit{In the Presence of the Lord}, 101-102; idem, "Leviticus, Book of," ABD (1992), 4:313; Milgrom, "Sin-offering or Purification-offering?" 237 = idem, \textit{Studies in Cultic Theology and Terminology}, 67; idem, \textit{Leviticus 1-16}, 253; Snaith, "The Verbs zābah and šāḥat," 243; Kiuchi, 161; Averbeck, "חאתה," 95; Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 50; idem, \textit{Leviticus, Numbers}, 96; cf. GKC, 142). The Hithpael of חטא as the reflexive of חטא means "cleanse/purify oneself."

\textsuperscript{504}Knierim, "חטא חטא," 408; cf. Luc, 87-88; Martens, 51. Luc noted: "As a term for the concept of sin the root חטא with all its derivatives . . . possesses the broadest range of meaning" (87). He even observed that "the broad meaning of the word can be seen in its frequent usage with kōl, all (28x in OT)" (ibid., 88).

\textsuperscript{505}Von Rad, \textit{Old Testament Theology}, 1:263. Koch also contended: "The root חטא belongs to the language of the cult and has its \textit{Sitz im Leben} in specific ceremonies" ("חאתה chatha," 313).

\textsuperscript{506}Cover, 32.
Lev 26:18, 21, 24, and 28 in covenant curses), the נָשָׂא sin is restricted to expiable nondefiant sins, excluding sins committed "high-handedly," that is, defiantly. The expiable nondefiant sin נָשָׂא is removed from its perpetrators by their purification offerings throughout the year (Lev 4:26; 5:6, 10), purged from the sanctuary and camp on the Day of Atonement (16:16, 21), and consequently cleansed from the people (vss. 30, 34).

Specifically the term כָּטָא, which occurs in Isa 53:12 of the Suffering Servant Poem, is a major concern of the investigation here. The term occurs 33 times in the OT: 17 times (more than half of the occurrences) in the Pentateuch, 3 in the Historical Books, 4 in the Psalms and Wisdom Literature, and 9 in the Prophets. Significantly, it occurs 9 times (out of 33) in the so-called cultic writings: 4 times each in Leviticus and Numbers and once in Ezekiel.

The term כָּטָא is used with the meanings of (1) "offence" against human beings (Gen 41:9; Eccl 10:4), (2) "sin" against God (e.g., Isa 31:7; 38:17; Hos 12:9; Ps 51:11; Lam 1:8), (3) "guilt of sin" (e.g., Num 27:3; Deut 15:9; 23:22, 23; 24:15), and (4) "punishment for sin" (e.g., Lev 20:20; 24:15; Num 9:13; 18:22; Isa 53:12; Lam 3:39;

---


508 Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 280, 282; idem, *Cult and Character*, 293, 299.

509 One time in Genesis (41:9), 4x in Leviticus (19:17; 20:20; 22:9; 24:15; all occurrences are in the clause of כָּטָא נָשָׂא), 4x in Numbers (9:13; 18:22, 32; 27:3; 3x in the clause of כָּטָא נָשָׂא), and 8x in Deuteronomy (15:9; 19:15; 21:22; 22:26; 23:21 [H 22], 22 [H 23]; 24:15, 16).

510 Two times in 2 Kings (10:29; 14:6) and 1x in 2 Chronicles (25:4).

511 Three times in Psalms (51:7, 11; 103:10) and 1x in Ecclesiastes (10:4).

512 Four times in Isaiah (1:18; 31:7; 38:17; 53:12; 1x in the clause of כָּטָא נָשָׂא), 2x in Lamentations (1:8; 3:39), 1x in Ezekiel (23:49, in the clause of כָּטָא נָשָׂא), 1x in Daniel (9:16), 1x in Hosea (12:8 [H 9]). Thus, the occurrences of the term כָּטָא in Isaiah are almost half of its occurrences in the Prophets. The Aramaic equivalent כָּטַא occurs just once in Dan 4:27 [H 24].
The term appearances 6 times as a synonymous parallel with עון and once with חטא. The term עונ occurs very frequently (at least 13x) in cultic contexts, 6 times (out of 33) for cultic sins per se, and 3 in association with idolatry through pagan cults. Particularly significant is its frequent association with the verb עונ (9x out of 33), exclusively in the so-called cultic writings (except Isa 53:12). Thus, Klaus Koch considered the term חטא as the most significant of the derivatives of עונ, which occurs particularly in the realm of the Hebrew cult. Koch even went so far as to say: "Outside of cultic language, it appears only twice, referring each time to a capital offence against an earthly king, characteristically never against ordinary men."
As investigated so far, all the verbal and nominal forms of חטא frequently occur not only in cultic contexts, but also in association with cultic sins per se and with idolatry through pagan cults. It can be concluded, therefore, that all of them, including the significant term חֵטְא, without doubt belong to cultic terminology.

עון

Another significant sin term is עון, which occurs twice in the Suffering Servant Poem, once each in the singular (Isa 53:6) and in the plural (vs. 5). The root of the term עון is יד/וה and its corresponding verb עוה occurs only 17 times in the OT: twice each in the Qal and in the Piel, 4 times in the Niphal, and 9 in the Hiphil.523 The basic meaning of the verb is "bend, twist, distort," which can be attested in its concrete, non-theological usage (Niphal in Ps 38:6 [H 7]; Piel in Isa 24:1).

522Cf. Klaus Koch, "עון כַּאוֹנָן," TDOT, 10:546. BDB, 730-731, conjectured two roots: (1) יד I, "bend, twist," related to Arabic ʿawaya and ʿawā; (2) יד II, "commit iniquity, do wrong," a denominative verb from עון, which in turn is related to Arabic ʿawaya (see also Koch, "עון כַּאוֹנָן," 547; Bruce K. Waltke, "עון (כַּאוֹנָן) Bend, Twist, Distort," TWOT, 2:650). So Cover mentioned: "Though the etymology of the presumed root (כַּWy/w) is disputed, the general meaning of the noun 'error, iniquity' is accepted" (32).

523See Mandelkern, 831; Lisowsky, 1030; VOT, 185; cf. BDB, 730-31; HALOT, 2:796-97; Koch, "עון כַּאוֹנָן," 546, 548; Rolf P. Knierim, "עון כַּאוֹן Perversity," TLOT, 2:862; Harry F. van Rooy, "עוה," NIDOTTE, 3:340. The verb עוה occurs twice in the Qal (Esth 1:16; Dan 9:5) with the meaning "do wrong, commit iniquity." With basically the same meaning it occurs seven times in the Hiphil (2 Sam 7:14; 19:19 [H 20]; 24:17; 1 Kgs 8:47/2 Chr 6:37; Ps 106:6; Jer 9:5 [H 4]); in 2 Sam 19:19 [H 20] it occurs with its noun עון in parallel, and then makes a synonymous parallelism with חטא [see vs. 20 {H 21}]. With the meaning "pervert" it occurs twice in the Hiphil in Job 33:27 and Jer 3:21. The verb עוה occurs twice in the Piel in the Old Testament. In Isa 24:1 it describes YHWH's judgment to distort/twist the face of the earth. In Lam 3:9 Jeremiah laments that God has made his paths crooked. The verb עוה appears four times in the Niphal in the Old Testament. In 1 Sam 20:30 out of anger Saul used the participle in a derogatory sense to describe his son Jonathan as "son of perverse rebellion (תוּמַרְדּ)." The same use appears in Prov 12:8 to portray the treatment of a man with a perverse or warped mind in contrast with that of a man with insight or a good sense (שֶׂכֶל). In Isa 21:3 it describes Isaiah's confusion or distress experienced upon receiving bad news from God (see משא, "oracle" in vs. 1 and עוה מַלְשָׁנָה, "harsh/grievous vision" in vs. 2). In Ps 38:6 [H 7] it points to David's agony (paralleling עוה, "be bowed down") because of the burden of his guilt (see its noun עוה in vs. 4 [H 5], paralleling חטא in vs. 3 [H 4]).

524Cf. Knierim, "עון כַּאוֹנָן," 863; Waltke, "עון (כַּאוֹן)," 650. According to
notion it derives the figurative sense "distort, make crooked, pervert" (Piel in Lam 3:9; Hiphil in Job 33:27; Niphal in Prov 12:8; cf. Niphal in Isa 21:3). When the distortion or perversion pertains to law, it means "do wrong, commit iniquity." 

The verb עוה appears at least 3 times (out of 17) in cultic contexts. Besides, it occurs with or parallels the verb קינן 7 times, indicating wrongdoing against God. Thus, the verb עוה shows a close cultic association not only through its usage in cultic contexts but also its close relations with the verb קינן, which belongs to cultic terminology.

The masculine noun עון, which is the main derivative of the verb עוה, is Eichrodt, 2:381, it is "a verb of motion meaning 'bend', 'veer', 'go aside from the right way'."

526 Cf. Waltke, "עון (כָּוָה)," 650.
527 See 1 Kgs 8:47//2 Chr 6:37; Dan 9:5; cf. Pss 38:6 [H 7] (see also vs. 4 [H 5]); 106:6.
528 See עון Qal, Dan 9:5; Hiphil, 2 Sam 19:19 [H 20]; 24:17; 1 Kgs 8:47//2 Chr 6:37; Job 33:27; Ps 106:6. The verb קינן always precedes the verb עוה (except in 2 Sam 19:19-20 [H 20-21]). In 1 Kgs 8:47 (/2 Chr 6:37), Ps 106:6, and Dan 9:5, the two verbs are followed by the verb רשע ("act wickedly"), and in Dan 9:5 the three verbs are followed by the verb מרד ("rebel"). See van Rooy, "עון," 340; Porúbčan, 15; Gnana Robinson, "A Terminological Study of the Idea of Sin in the Old Testament," IJT 18 (1969): 114. Porúbčan, 15, observed that the Hiphil, like the Qal, is used in a moral and religious sense, whereas the Niphal and the Piel are rather used in a material or psychological sense. Gnana Robinson, 114, mentioned: "In religious usage this word brings out the emotional involvement of the person concerned in the act of sin. The evil act is the outcome of the 'conscious and intentional badness' of the sinner."

529 According to Knierim, "עון כָּוֹן," 862, the term and its Biblical Aramaic equivalent have been attested only in the Old Testament and the dependent Middle Hebrew and Jewish Aramaic literature. For some information or discussion on its possible Akkadian equivalents, see Koch, "עון כָּוֹן," 547; Knierim, "עון כָּוֹן," 862. Morphologically the term has an abstract nominal pattern with the ān > ʿon ending (see Koch, "עון כָּוֹן," 546; Knierim, "עון כָּוֹן," 862; Waltke, "עון [כָּוָה]," 650). For other additional nominal derivatives, see Koch, "עון כָּוֹן," 546-47, 549-50; Knierim, "עון כָּוֹן," 862. Koch mentioned that other nominal derivatives "recede even more" than the verb ("עון כָּוֹן," 546), and that they "occur so isolated and so rarely in the OT that a more precise analysis is difficult" (ibid., 549), but he concluded: "Contextually, all four derivatives refer to entities that have transgressed and incurred guilt" (ibid.).
attested 231 times in the OT. It occurs most frequently in Ezekiel (44x out of 231), then 31 times in the Psalms, 25 in Isaiah, 24 in Jeremiah, 18 in Leviticus, 15 in Job, 12 in Numbers, and 10 in Hosea. Thus, generally speaking, it is a central term for human sin, guilt, and fate in prophetic and cultic writings.

The term עָוֹן is used in the OT with the meanings of (1) "misdeed, iniquity" (see, e.g., Pss 18:23 [H 24]; 107:17; Isa 30:13; Jer 33:8; 36:3; Dan 9:13; Hos 5:5), (2) "guilt (of iniquity)" (see, e.g., Gen 15:16; Num 15:31; Ezek 18:17-19), and (3) "punishment (for iniquity)" (see, e.g., Gen 4:13; Ps 31:11; Jer 51:6; Ezek 21:30; 32:27). The word עָוֹן "is a deeply religious term, almost always being used to indicate moral guilt or iniquity before God (rarely, of guilt before a human: 1 Sam 20:1, 8; 25:24)."

In the OT the term can refer to any part of the process of wrongful act (iniquity) ⇒ blame (guilt) ⇒ punishment, whether the act is intentional or not. Thus, the distinction between the...

---

530 Forty-two times in the Pentateuch (4x in Gen, 6x in Exod, 18x in Lev, 12x in Num, 2x in Deut), 23x in the Historical Books (2x in Josh, 6x in 1 Sam, 7x in 2 Sam, 1x each in 1 Kgs, 2 Kgs, and 1 Chr, 3x in Ezra, 2x in Neh), 48x in the Psalms and Wisdom Literature (15x in Job, 31x in Pss, 2x in Prov), and 118x in the Prophets (25x in Isa, 24x in Jer, 6x in Lam, 44x in Ezek, 3x in Dan [once in Dan 4:24 its Aramaic equivalent עֲוָה occurs with חֲטָא, the Aramaic equivalent of חָטָא], 10x in Hos, 1x each in Amos and Mal, 2x each in Mic and Zech). See Mandelkern, 831-32; Lisowsky, 1034-36; VOT, 389; Knierim, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 863.


532 Cf. BDB, 730-31; HALOT, 2:800. See also Porúbčan, 15; Knierim, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 863-64; Koch, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 551; Cover, 32; Waltke, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 650-51.

533 Cover, 32.

534 Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 282; idem, Cult and Character, 294. See also Knierim, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 863-64; Koch, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 548-49; Martens, 50; Cover, 32; Waltke, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 650-51. Bruce K. Waltke, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 650, asserted that "it denotes both the deed and its consequences, the misdeed and its punishment," and that both notions are present, while sometimes the focus being on the misdeed ('iniquity'), and at other times on the outcome of the misdeed ('punishment'), and sometimes on the situation between the deed and its consequences ('guilt'). Waltke asserted that the reason lies in the OT thought of a "synthetic view of life" that a person's own actions and what eventually happens to one are directly related as one process within the basic divine order (ibid., 651). Knierim, "עָוָה⊂āwôn," 863 (cf. 864), argued: "The term is inseparably rooted in dynamic holistic thought, apparently because it is a term of motion that essentially expresses a process of movement. Holistic thought is most often expressed
nuances (iniquity, guilt, punishment) is frequently difficult to ascertain in a specified instance of the term. The noun עון occurs 7 times (out of 231) for cultic sins per se, 28 times in association with idolatry through pagan cults, and 38 times in cultic contexts. The noun עון appears 84 times (out of 231) with the verb חטא or its nouns חאתא, חטא, in the act-consequence relationship. Karl Fahlgren's "synthetic view of life" (Synthetische Lebensauffassung), coined by him in his Šedaka, nahestehende und entgegengesetzte Begriffe im Alten Testament (Uppsala: Almquist & Wiksell, 1932), 50-54, and von Rad's concept of "Tatsphäre" or "a synthetic view of life" in his Old Testament Theology, 1:265, are virtually the same as what Klaus Koch would rather call "the concept of a sphere of influence in which the built-in consequences of an action take effect" in his article "Is There a Doctrine of Retribution in the Old Testament?" in Theodicy in the Old Testament, ed. James L. Crenshaw, IRT, vol. 4 (Philadelphia, PA: Fortress, 1983), 57-87, esp. 75-78. For a bibliography of Koch and the reactions to his thesis against the existence of a real doctrine of retribution in the OT, see Rodriguez, "Substitution," 223-224, n. 1. Gane criticized Koch's narrow definition of retribution, while observing that his "Action-Consequences-Construct" is also reflected in the Hebrew cultic system. Gane rightly asserted: "It is also true that YHWH holds the Israelites accountable to a previously established norm, consisting of his commandments. The ritual procedure of the Day of Atonement implies a judicial process at an appointed time. . . So we cannot view retribution and Koch's construct as mutually exclusive. Rather, they are complementary and combine in the ritual system to exhibit YHWH's perfect justice. YHWH does mete out retribution, but it is not detached from a condemned person's character and deeds. His judgment is to recognize a person's nature and choices, as indicated by actions, and destine him/her to reap the consequences" (Cult and Character, 352; cf. 351, 353).

535Cf. BDB, 731; HALOT, 2:800; Cover, 32. Note the significant difference in the biblical passages that are listed for each meaning of the term in BDB, 731 and HALOT, 2:800.

536See Exod 28:43; Lev 7:18; 17:16; 19:8; 22:16; 1 Sam 3:13-14 (cf. 2:12-17, 22); Isa 43:24 (cf. vs. 23).

537See Exod 20:5; Deut 5:9; Josh 22:17; 1 Sam 28:10; Isa 27:9; 65:7 [2x]; Jer 2:22 (cf. vss. 23, 27, 28); 3:13; 11:10; 13:22 (cf. vs. 27); 16:10 (cf. vss. 11-12), 17, 18; Ezek 14:3, 4, 7; 44: 10, 12 [2x]; Hos 4:8 (cf. vss. 10-19); 5:5 (cf. vss. 3, 4); 8:13 (cf. vs. 11); 9:7, 9 (cf. vss. 1, 8); 13:12 (cf. vss. 1, 2); 14:1, 2 (cf. vss. 3, 8).

538See Gen 15:16; Exod 28:38; Lev 5:1, 17; 10:17; 16:21, 22; Num 5:15, 31 [2x]; 18:1 [2x], 23; Ezra 9:6, 7, 13; Neh 9:2; Ps 18:23 [H 24]; 31:10 [H 11]; 36:2 [H 3]; 39:11 [H 12]; 40:12 [H 13]; 49:5 [H 6]; 51:2 [H 4], 5 [H 7], 9 [H 11]; 59:4 [H 5]; 65:3 [H 4]; 69:27 [H 28]; 85:2 [H 3]; 109:14; Isa 6:7; 43:24 (cf. vs. 23); Ezek 43:10; Dan 9:13, 16, 24; Mal 2:6; cf. Ps 25:11; 32:2, 5 [2x]; 38:4 [H 5], 18 [H 19]; 78:38; 79:8; 89:32 [H 33]; 90:8; 103:3, 10; 106:43; 107:17, 130:3, 8; Isa 53:5, 6, 11.

539Nineteen times; Lev 5:1, 5, 6, 7, 10, 11, 13, 17, 18; Deut 19:15; 2 Sam
and הָאָטָה, which belong to cultic terminology.

Especially to be noted in this connection is that in Lev 1-16 עון "is restricted to blame in the sense of 'culpability' . . . that an offender must bear (5:1, 17; 7:18) unless a priest bears it (10:17)." In the Hebrew cultic system עון is removed from its perpetrators by their purification offerings throughout the year (Lev 5:1, 6), borne by priests (10:17), and then purged from the camp on the Day of Atonement (16:21).

Thus, Koch's observation regarding Ezekiel seems correct: "For this prophet, who himself comes from a priestly family, אָוֹן constitutes 'the great problem upon which life turns.'"

19:19-20 [H 20-21]; 24:10; Job 10:14; Isa 1:4; Jer 14:7, 20; 16:10; 33:8; Ezek 18:20. However, the verb חטא has, as its internal accusative, חטא in Deut 19:15, חטאת in Jer 16:10, and חטא (2x) in Jer 33:8. In Jer 33:8 even the verb עון has עון as its accusative. The noun עון never occurs as an internal accusative of the verb עון in the Old Testament.

540Fifty-seven times; Exod 34:7, 9; Lev 5:6 [3x], 7, 8, 9 [2x], 10, 11 [2x], 12, 13; 16:21; Deut 19:15; 1 Sam 20:1; Neh 4:5 [H 3:37]; 9:2; Job 10:6; 13:23; Ps 32:1-2, 5; 38:18 [H 19]; 51:2 [H 4], 3-5 [H 5-7]; 9 [H 11]; 59:3-4 [H 4-5]; 85:2; 109:14; Prov 5:22; Isa 6:7; 27:9; 43:24; 59:2, 12; Jer 5:25; 14:10; 16:10, 18; 18:23; 30:14, 15; 31:34; 36:3; 50:20; Lam 4:6, 13, 22; Ezek 21:24 [H 29]; 33:9-10; Dan 9:24; Hos 4:8; 8:13; 9:9; 13:12; Mic 7:19.

541Seven times; Num 18:22-23; Deut 19:15; Ps 51:5 [H 7], 9 [H 11]; 103:10; Dan 9:16; Hos 12:8 [H 9]. In Dan 4:27 [H 24] עון, the Aramaic equivalent of עון, parallels חטא, the Aramaic equivalent of חטא.

542One time, Isa 5:18.


545Koch, "עון כְּאָוֹן," 556.
As investigated so far, the term עון shows a stronger cultic association than the verb עה not only through its usage in cultic contexts or for cultic sins but also through its close relation to the verb חטא and its nouns חטאת, חטא, and חטאת, which belong to cultic terminology. As von Rad correctly remarked, therefore, the term עון is "a component part of cultic terminology," just as the verb חטא and its nominal derivatives are.

Yet another significant sin term פשע occurs twice in the Suffering Servant Poem, once each in the singular (Isa 53:8) and in the plural (vs. 5), and its verbal form (Qal act. ptcp. m.p. of פשע) twice also as well (vs. 12). The root of the term פשע is פשע, of which the fundamental idea is a breach of the relationship, secular or religious, between two parties. The verb פשע, which means "rebel, revolt," occurs 41 times (40x in the Qal and 1x in the Niphal) in the OT and is used in two different ways, that is, secularly and religiously/theologically.

All the secular uses of the verb (except the Niphal in Prov 18:19) occur in the

546 Von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 1:263.
547 G. H. Livingston, "פשע (pāsha⊂) Rebel, Transgress, Revolt," TWOT, 2:741.
548 Cf. BDB, 833. Rolf P. Knierim, "פשע peša⊂ Crime," TLOT, 2:1034-35, contended that: (1) "the definition of the term must involve a distinction between (completed) separation and (attempted) rebellion"; (2) the prepositional phrases (ב פשע and יד מתחצ פשע) and their contexts clearly demonstrate "the fact of complete separation, self-extrication from foreign dominion, and thus a type of property removal"; (3) the verb in the historical books is "a term from international law indicating the loss, the removal, of a segment of a state structure"; (4) the translation of the verb is: "with the prep. b 'to break with,' with mittaat yād 'to break away from,' and abs. 'to behave criminally" ; (5) the Niphal has the passive meaning "to suffer loss, crime, breach (of the fraternal relationship)." See also HALOT, 981, which follows Knierim (cf. Horst Seebass, "פשע pāša⊂," TDOT, 12:136). For a criticism of Knierim and Seebass, see Eugene Carpenter and Michael A. Grisanti, "פשע," NIDOTTE, 3:707-708.
549 Mandelkern, 976; Lisowsky, 1193; VOT, 206; HALOT, 3:981; Knierim, "פשע peša⊂ Crime," 1033; Seebass, "פשע pāša⊂," 135.
550 Cf. BDB, 833.
historical books of 1, 2 Kings and 2 Chronicles. It is consistently used (11x) for a vassal state which rebels against its suzerain. The parallel passages 1 Kgs 12:19 and 2 Chr 10:19 mention that "Israel rebelled against the house of David to this day." These passages are fully understood in light of the passages in 2 Sam 3:12-13 and 5:1-3 (cf. 3:21, 37). The former mentions the covenant made between David (king over Judah; cf. 2 Sam 2:4) and Abner (commander of Israel; cf. 2 Sam 2:8-9; 3:6; 4:1), in which Abner promised to help David to be king over Israel as well. The latter mentions the covenant made between David and all the elders of Israel when all the tribes of Israel accepted David as king over them.

The passages 2 Kgs 1:1 and 3:5, 7 mention Moab's rebellion against Israel, whose vassal status is implied in the tribute paid to Israel (2 Kgs 3:4; cf. 2 Sam 8:2). The parallel passages 2 Kgs 8:20, 22 and 2 Chr 21:8, 10 mention Edom's rebellion against Judah, for whom the vassal status is implied in relation to Judah (1 Kgs 22:45, 47; 2 Kgs 3:8-14; cf. Sam 8:14).

Such a secular usage of the verb פָּשַׁע in the Old Testament underscores its basic meaning of a breach of a specific relationship established by a treaty/covenant.

---

551 See 1 Kgs 12:19//2 Chr 10:19; 2 Kgs 1:1; 3:5, 7; 8:20//2 Chr 21:8; 2 Kgs 8:22 (2x)//2 Chr 21:10 (2x).


Significantly it signifies the breaking of a political alliance in concrete terms, the rebellion of a vassal, that is, the vassal's breaking of a treaty/covenant. Thus, it can be concluded that the verb פָּשַׁע belongs to the covenant sphere and that it "is essentially a covenant term." This secular usage of פָּשַׁע seems to provide a conceptual framework for its religious/theological usage.

The verb פָּשַׁע is used 28 times with a clear religious/theological sense: predominantly (24x) in the Prophets (cf. most frequently [9x] in Isaiah), and twice each in the Historical Books and the Psalms.

The verb פָּשַׁע is used in parallel with other verbs of religious rebellion against God: פָּשַׁע in Ezek 2:3 [2x] and 20:38, מָרַד in Isa 1:28 (cf. vs. 20) and Lam 3:42,


Cf. Carpenter and Grisanti, "פֶּשַׁע," 708. Cover, 32, asserted: "These political connotations were imported into the theological sense of the term to mean 'rebellion' against Yahweh as Israel's suzerain (1 Kgs 8:50; Isa 1:2; Jer 3:13; Hos 7:13; 8:1)." Seebass, "פָּשַׁע pāṣā́", 139, also contended: "This context evokes a religious use of the term as well."

Cf. Jim Hiner, Jr., "The Basis of God's Judgment Against the Nations in Amos 1-2" (M.A. Thesis, Andrews University, Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992), 55. In Prov 28:21, even though neither the object of the verb פָּשַׁע nor the nature of the relationship violated is identified, it seems from the overall contextual perspective of Proverbs that the violation probably involves interpersonal relationship, but with the dimension of man and God in the background (cf. Exod 23:2-3; Lev 19:15; Deut 1:17; 16:19). The Niphal of פָּשַׁע is used in Prov 18:19, in which the break-up of a brotherly relationship seems to be portrayed with the political connotation of the verb in the backdrop, as is hinted by the war metaphor.

Cf. Jim Hiner, Jr., "The Basis of God's Judgment Against the Nations in Amos 1-2" (M.A. Thesis, Andrews University, Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992), 55. In Prov 28:21, even though neither the object of the verb פָּשַׁע nor the nature of the relationship violated is identified, it seems from the overall contextual perspective of Proverbs that the violation probably involves interpersonal relationship, but with the dimension of man and God in the background (cf. Exod 23:2-3; Lev 19:15; Deut 1:17; 16:19). The Niphal of פָּשַׁע is used in Prov 18:19, in which the break-up of a brotherly relationship seems to be portrayed with the political connotation of the verb in the backdrop, as is hinted by the war metaphor.

Cf. Jim Hiner, Jr., "The Basis of God's Judgment Against the Nations in Amos 1-2" (M.A. Thesis, Andrews University, Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992), 55. In Prov 28:21, even though neither the object of the verb פָּשַׁע nor the nature of the relationship violated is identified, it seems from the overall contextual perspective of Proverbs that the violation probably involves interpersonal relationship, but with the dimension of man and God in the background (cf. Exod 23:2-3; Lev 19:15; Deut 1:17; 16:19). The Niphal of פָּשַׁע is used in Prov 18:19, in which the break-up of a brotherly relationship seems to be portrayed with the political connotation of the verb in the backdrop, as is hinted by the war metaphor.

Pss 37:38; 51:13 [H 15].

Cf. Porúbčan, 26-33; Robinson, 112-14; Cover, 32. The term פָּשַׁע is also used in parallel with מַרְאֶה in Isa 48:8 (cf. Porúbčan, 33, 61-62).
in Isa 1:28 (cf. vs. 23) and Zeph 3:11 (cf. vs. 1), and פָּשַׁע in Ezra 10:13 (cf. vss. 2, 10). There are a few passages in which the verb פָּשַׁע occurs in association with covenant terminology, with the terms 'covenant' בְּרִית itself (Ezra 10:13; Ezek 20:38 [cf. vs. 37]; Hos 8:1) and the so-called 'covenant lawsuit' רִיב (Jer 2:8, 29), and with covenant curses (1 Kgs 8:50, Amos 4:4).

It is significant, however, that פָּשַׁע occurs with the other two major terms for sin, thus gaining its cultic association as well as emphasizing its theological dimension when its context involves Yahweh. The verb פָּשַׁע parallels חָטָא in 1 Kgs 8:50, Isa 43:27, and Jer 33:8, and פָּשַׁע (along with חָטָא) even takes the noun עוֹן as its accusative in Jer 33:8, and פָּשַׁע occurs in parallel with עוֹן in Jer 3:13.

 פֶשַׁע (Qal act. ptp. m.p. of פָּשַׁע) parallels חַטָּא (adj. m. p. of חָטָא) in Ps 51:13 [H 15], whereas they occur together in Ps 51:13 [H 15], whereas they occur together in

563In its context the term מְרִי (the nominative of the verb מָרָה) occurs in vss. 5, 6, 7, 8 (2x). In the OT Ezekiel is the only book that uses the noun מְרִי more than once (see also 3:9, 26, 27; 12:2 [2x], 3, 9, 25; 17:12; 24:3; 44:6; cf HALOT, 2:635). The verbs פָּשַׁע and מָרַד along with the concentrated occurrences of the noun מְרִי in their immediate context seem to reflect Israel's rebellion through their idolatry. See especially Ezek 8; cf. 20:8; 44:6.

564See vss. 2-3, 10, esp. vs. 3; cf. Exod 34:16; Deut 7:3.

565See a synonymous parallelism here: to transgress (עָבַר) Yahweh's covenant (בְּרִית) //to rebel against (עַל פָּשַׁע) Yahweh's law (תּוֹרָה).

566See also vs. 9 (vb. רִיב [2x]).


568See a series of covenant curses and God's formulaic lamentation over Israel's having not returned to him in vss. 6, 7-8, 9, 10, 11. For a useful reference list of covenant curses, see Stuart, xxxii-xl.

569Cf. Hiner, 55. As Hiner rightly observed, such terminological parallels do not occur in the secular usage.

570See Gane's observation in his Cult and Character, 294: "Like פָּשַׁע, the term עוֹן denotes a morally faulty act ... that can result in culpability (עָוֹן), as indicated by Jer 33:8, where YHWH promises to forgive 'all their culpabilities (עונות) that they have חטאת-sinned against me and that they have פָּשַׁע-sinned against me.'"
Isa 1:28. פָּשַׁע occurs with the noun חֵטֶא in Isa 53:12. Besides, there are quite a few passages in which the verb occurs not only in cultic contexts (at least 6x) but also in relation to sins of idolatry through the pagan cult (11x). Furthermore, the three major verbs for sin occur together, though once, in the OT, and that in the cultic context (1 Kgs 8:47), where confession of sins is made.

As clearly shown, therefore, the theological usage of the verb פָּשַׁע is closely associated not only with the covenant but also with the cult. Its covenantal association is emphasized by its parallel with the "more or less synonymous" verbs "expressing the same basic idea of 'disobedience, defection, unfaithfulness, refusal of service,'" and by its association with the covenantal terminology. However, its cultic association is shown through its juxtaposition with the other two major sin terms of cultic orientation and through its usage not only in cultic contexts but also for sins of idolatry.

The masculine segholate פָּשַׁע, which means "rebellion, revolt," occurs 93 times:

571See 1 Kgs 8:50; Ezra 10:13 (cf. vss. 1, 3, 9); Ps 51:13 [H 15]; Isa 43:27 (cf. vss. 22-25, 28); Dan 8:23 (cf. vss. 9-14 and the noun פָּשַׁע in vss. 12-13); 9:5; cf. Pss 37:38; 106:6.

572See Isa 1:28 (cf. vs. 29); 46:8 (cf. vss. 1-7); 48:8 (cf. vs. 5); Jer 2:8 (cf. vs. 11), 29 (cf. vss. 20, 23, 27-28); 3:13; Ezek 18:31 (cf. vss. 6, 11-12, 15); 20:38 (cf. vss. 24, 30-32, 39-41); Hos 8:1 (vss. 4-6); 14:9 [H 10] (cf. vss. 3 [H 4], 8 [H 9]); Amos 4:4 (2x; cf. vs. 5).

573In Solomon's prayer of Temple dedication.

574Porúbčan, 33.

575See Eichrodt, 2:381; von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 1:263; N. H. Snaith, Distinctive Ideas of the Old Testament (London: Epworth, 1944), 60; John A. Bollier, "The Righteousness of God: A Word Study," Interpretation 8 (1954): 407; Porúbčan, 25; Cover, 32. Cover contended (contra BDB, 833): "The noun peša ("rebellion, revolt") is translated 'transgression' in some modern versions of the OT, but this rendition fails to communicate the idea of 'rebellious deeds' which is probably to be understood" (32). See also the remark of Martens, 50: "It has sometimes, though incorrectly, been explained from its English translation, 'transgression,' as going across or against God's commands." For a critique on Knierim's suggestion of "crime" as its meaning, which HALOT, 3:981-82, essentially adopted, see Seebass, "פשע pāša," 136; for a critique on Seebass's suggestion of "legal offense" as its basic meaning, see Carpenter and Grisanti, "פשע," 707: "Although 'transgression' or 'legal offense' may adequately serve as a translation for peša in Ps and Prov, it falls short in most historical and prophetic
times in the OT: predominantly in the Prophets (44x; cf. most frequently [11x] in Isaiah) and in the Psalms and Wisdom Literature (36x), then 9 times in the Pentateuch and 4 in the Historical Books. The noun פֶּשַׁע is used in two different ways just like its verb, but almost all the occurrences are unambiguously religious/theological.

contexts.

576 Lisowsky, 1194; VOT, 207; HALOT, 3:981; Knierim, "פֶּשַׁע peša⊂," 1033.


578 Job 7:21; 8:4; 13:23; 14:17; 31:33; 33:9; 34:6, 37; 35:6; 36:9; Pss 5:10 [H 11]; 19:13 [H 14]; 25:7; 32:1, 5; 36:1 [H 2]; 39:8 [H 9]; 51:1 [H 3]; 3 [H 5]; 59:3 [H 4]; 65:3 [H 4]; 89:32 [H 33]; 103:12; 107:17; Prov 10:12, 19; 12:13; 17:9, 19; 19:11; 28:2, 13, 24; 29:6, 16, 22.

579 Gen 31:36; 50:17 (2x); Exod 22:9 [H 8]; 23:21; 34:7; Lev 16:16, 21; Num 14:8.

580 Josh 24:19; 1 Sam 24:11 [H 22]; 25:28; 1 Kgs 8:50.


582 Cf. Hiner, 57. Even in the apparently or allegedly social violations (Gen 31:36; 50:17; Exod 11:9 [H 8]; 1 Sam 24:11 [H 12]; 25:28; Prov 10:12, 19; 12:13; 17:9, 19; 19:11; 28:2, 13, 24; 29:6, 16, 22), their religious/theological dimensions can be observed from the occurrences of moral and/or religious terms in their contexts, as Hiner, 68-76, rightly pointed out. Carpenter and Grisanti, "פֶּשַׁע," 707-708, classified the offenses related to property and persons (cf. Gen 31:36; 50:17; 1 Sam 24:11 [H 12]; Exod 22:9 [H 8]) into the rebellion in the domestic realm. Each surrounding context and the term פֶּשַׁע itself suggest: (1) a breach of trust or violation of an agreement; (2) a breach of interpersonal relationship, more specifically "an offense against a superior" (Koch, "חטא chātā₂", 311; Luc, "חטא," 88; idem, "פשׁע", 706; cf. children against their parents [Prov 28:24], servants against their lord [Gen 31:36; cf. vss. 37-42], those under patronage against their patron [1 Sam 25:28], and officials against their king [1 Sam 24:11 {H 12}]; the case in Gen 50:17 can be understood either by Joseph's high social position [cf. Luc, "חטא," 88; idem, "פשׁע," 706] or by a breach of the kinship covenant [cf. Amos 1:11 {cf. הָבֵית אֶחָד in vs. 9}; Seebass, "פשׁע pāša⊂," 147]. Carpenter and Grisanti rightly observed: "In the Wisdom/poetic literature the word [peša⊂] is found 36x (Job-10x, Ps-14x, Prov-12x). In most of these instances the rebellion motif is not as prominent as in historical or prophetic passages because the covenantal background is emphasized less. Consequently, in Wisdom literature peša⊂ appears often as a term for legal offense. The primary idea of rebellion appears in a few instances... and is understood in the other occurrences" ("פשׁע," 709; italics mine). Then Carpenter and Grisanti concluded: "Each
The noun פֶּשַׁע occurs in parallel with the other verbs for rebellion against God: מָרַר (Exod 23:21) and מָרָה (Ps 5:10 [H 11]). Besides, there are quite a few passages in which covenantal connotations are made more explicit. In his prayer at the temple dedication in 1 Kgs 8:23-53, Solomon speaks of the people's rebellions (פשע as the cognate accusative of نفس in vs. 50) against the background of the covenant curses.

In a significant Psalm of the Davidic covenant (Ps 89), פשע occurs in parallel with עון (vs. 32 [H 33]) as possible violation of Yahweh's law (תור), ordinances occurrence of peša in Wisdom literature, whether it is directed toward a fellow human being or God, represents a form of rebellion against God as well. As the suzerain lord who demands obedience from his vassals and expects his subjects to demonstrate mercy and justice to their fellow subjects, any violation constitutes rejection of his authority (ibid.).

Besides the already admitted covenant terms, phrases, and motifs (e.g., בְּרִית, בְּרִית כָּרַת, רִיב, and covenant blessings and curses), such terms as תּוֹרָה, מִשְׁפָּט, קח, מִצְוֹת, חֶסֶד, and צְדָקָה have been shown by recent studies to have "strong covenantal roots and points of reference," as Seilhamer mentioned in his important article "The Role of Covenant in the Mission and Message of Amos," 436 (cf. 438). Much more detailed studies on those terms seem to be needed, but several important aspects can be observed in regard to the terms for covenant stipulations: (1) they frequently occur (in parallel) with each other or the already accepted covenant terms; (2) they are governed by verbs that are used for the covenant; (3) they can be used in a general sense of God's Word, but with their covenantal background. For the reasons of their covenantal connotations, see Gerhard F. Hasel, Covenant in Blood (Mountain View, CA: Pacific Press, 1982), 77; Carpenter and Grisanti, "פשע," 707; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 456-57; for covenant terminology, especially see the significant study by Moshe Weinfeld, "Covenant Terminology in the Ancient Near East and Its Influence on the West," JAOS 93 (1973): 190-99; for the term תּוֹרָה, see the authoritative study by Nelson Glueck, H Exodus in the Bible, trans. Alfred Gottschalk, ed. Elias L. Epstein (Cincinnati, OH: Hebrew Union College Press, 1967). See also N. W. Porteous, "The Basis of the Ethical Teaching of the Prophets," in Studies in Old Testament Prophecy, ed. H. H. Rowley (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1950), 147-51; Bollier, 404-10; James Muilenburg, The Way of Israel: Biblical Faith and Ethics (New York: Harper & Row, 1961), esp. 59-61, 68.

584 1 Kgs 8:46-51; cf. Lev 26:14-45; Deut 4:25-31; 28:15-68; 30:1-3; Ps 106:44-46; see the expressions of "vengeance of/for the covenant" (בְּרִית-נְקַם, Lev 26:25) and "the curses of the covenant" (אָלוֹת הַבְּרִית, Deut 29:21 [H 20]; cf. vss. 20 [H 19], 27 [H 26]). See also Stuart, xxxvii.

585 The term חֶסֶד occurs 208 times (as well as 12 times in its plural חֶסֶד/חֶסֶד) in the OT, and it is repeatedly used to signify the provisions of the covenant that Israel is to observe (cf. Muilenburg, The Way of Israel, 60; Hasel, Covenant, 75-79; Kenneth A. Kitchen, "The Rise and Fall of Covenant, Law and Treaty," TB 40 [1989]: 128). It is rarely devoid of this essential covenant rooting, even in a broader context, where it refers to the whole body of Yahweh's teaching or instruction (cf. Seilhamer, 438).
Both the term מִשְׁפָּטִים ("ordinances") and its singular מִשְׁפָּט are terms for covenant stipulations. A characteristic feature of the term מִשְׁפָּט is the phrase "according to (כְּ) the ordinance" (e.g., Lev 5:10; Num 29 [8x]; 1 Chr 15:13; 2 Chr 8:14; Ezra 3:4; Neh 8:18).

As the plural of קֹחֹ is rendered "statutes." The term קחֶ and its feminine קָּחַה, which occur with no difference in meaning between them (e.g., Exod 12:14 [f.], 24 [m.]; Lev 24:3 [f.], 9 [m.]), are used for covenant stipulations. Among their characteristic features are the construct chain with עֹלָם (for קחֶ, 5x; for קָּחַה, 21x; for קָחַה, 1x), with מִשְׁפָּט (2x) or with תּוֹרָה (2x). The plurals קִּיםחֻ and תּוֹקְקֻ, which also occur with no difference in meaning between them, also signify covenant stipulations. One of their characteristic features is to take the verbal phrase "walk in" (e.g., Lev 18:3-4; 1 Kgs 3:3; esp. Ezek 20 [5x]).

The term מִצְוֹת ("commandments") as well as its singular מִצְוָה is a term for covenant stipulations. They can be used in a general sense of God's Word, but with their covenantal background (for מִצְוָה, see, e.g., Ps 19:8 [H 9]; Prov 6:23; Eccl 8:5; for מִצְוֹת, see, e.g., Ps 119:60; Prov 3:1; Prov 3:1; Eccl 12:13).

The verb פָּרַר Hiphil is the main term for the "breaking" of the covenant (Weinfeld, 197; see, e.g., Gen 17:14; Lev 26:15; Deut 31:16; Judg 2:1; 1 Kgs 15:19; Jer 11:10; Ezek 16:59; Zech 11:10). The other terms with such a negative sense are: עָבַר, "transgress" (see, e.g., Deut 17:2; Josh 7:11; Judg 2:20; 2 Kgs 18:12; Jer 34:18; Hos 6:7), עָזַב, "forsake" (see, e.g., Deut 29:25 [H 24]; 1 Kgs 19:10; Jer 22:9; Dan 11:30), רָשַׁע Hiphil, "act wickedly toward" (cf. Dan 11:32), שַׁקָּר Piel with ב, "be false to, deal falsely with" (cf. Ps 44:18), and נָאַר Piel, "spurn, abhor" (cf. Ps 89:39 [H 40]). In Hos 6:7 "to transgress (פָּרַר) the covenant" parallels "to deal treacherously against (בָּגַד בְּ) God." In Deut 31:16 "to break (פָּרַר Hiphil) the covenant" parallels "to forsake (עָזַב) Yahweh," whereas in vs. 20 it parallels "to spurn (נָאַר Piel) Yahweh" (cf. Sakenfeld, 321; Olafsson, 210-11). Thus, one's attitude toward the covenant corresponds to one's attitude toward God, and vice versa. God's attitude toward the covenant is always the same: God will not break (פָּרַר Hiphil) his covenant with the Israelite people, even when they are in exile because of their breaking it (cf. Lev 26:44).

The term חֶסֶד occurs with בְּרִית (Deut 7:9, 12; Neh 1:5; 9:32; Ps 25:10; Dan 9:4) and even in parallel with it (1 Kgs 8:23//2 Chr 6:14; Ps 89:28 [H 29]; 106:45; Isa 54:10, 55:3; cf. Luke 1:72). For more detailed studies on חֶסֶד, see esp. Glueck, 56-101; cf. also Weinfeld, 191-93; Muilenburg, The Way of Israel, 59.

For the usage of שָׁקַר Piel in association with חֶסֶד, see Ps 44:18; in association with נָאַר, see Gen 21:23.

The terms אֱמוּנָה and חֶסֶד occur frequently in parallel with each other here (vss. 30-31 [H 31-32]). Punishing their violations (vs. 32 [H 33]), God will not break off (Hiphil of פָּרַר) his kindness (חֶסֶד) or deal falsely (Piel of שָׁקַר) in his faithfulness (בְּרִית) and he will not violate (Piel of חָלַל) his בְּרִית (vs. 34 [H 34]) and he will not violate (Piel of שָׁקַר) in his faithfulness (בְּרִית, vs. 33 [H 34]) and he will not violate (Piel of חָלַל) his בְּרִית (vs. 34 [H 34]).
In his Psalm concerning God's revelation through the nature and the law (Ps 19), David speaks of the acquittal (Niphal of נקָה) from great פֶּשַׁע (vs. 13 [H 14]) by being warned by and keeping (שָׁמַר) the law (תּוֹרָה), testimony (עֵדוּת), precepts (פִּקּוּדִים), commandment (המִצְוָה), fear (יִרְאָה) and ordinances (מִשְׁפָּטִים) of God (vss. 7-9 [H 8-9], 11-2 [H 2-3], 24 [H 25], 33 [H 34], 49 [H 50]), while אֱמוּנָה also occurs alone (vss. 5 [H 6], 8 [H 9]). The term בְּרִית occurs with חֶסֶד in vs. 14 [H 15], where they parallel with צֶדֶק and טָמִשְׁפָּ, which are the foundation of God's throne, and in vs. 28 [H 29] בְּרִית parallels תּוֹרָה (cf. Ps 54:10; Luke 1:72).

The verb חָלַל Piel is also used for a violation of the statutes in vs. 31, and thus to violate covenant stipulations is to violate the covenant made with God. The verb seems to emphasize the sanctity of the covenant, because its basic idea is pollution, defilement, or profanity. For its usage in association with the covenant, see Ps 55:21; 89:34 [H 35]; Mal 2:10; in association with the "holy covenant," see Dan 11:28, 30 [2x]. Luke 1:72 (cf. vs. 73) mentions as his "holy covenant" the covenant that God has made with Abraham.

The term חָלַל occurs 4 times here (vss. 3 [H 4], 28 [H 29], 34 [H 35], and 39 [H 40]). Especially in vs. 28 [H 29] it occurs in parallel with חֶסֶד.

The verb שָׁמַר is the main term for the "keeping" of the covenant (Weinfeld, 193-96; see, e.g., Gen 17:9-10; Exod 19:5; Deut 7:9; 1 Kgs 8:23; 2 Chr 6:14; Neh 1:5; Ps 78:10; Ezek 17:14; Dan 9:4). In addition to זָכַר, the verb נָצַר "(watch, guard, keep)" is also used for the "keeping" of the covenant, though only once in Ps 25:10. For the usage of מִשְׁפִּיקוּ Piel with בְּרִית, see, e.g., Gen 6:18; 9:9; 17:7; Exod 6:4; Lev 26:9; Deut 8:18; Ezek 16:60; for the usage of מִשְׁפָּ, see, e.g., Gen 9:12; 17:2; Num 25:12; for the usage of מִשְׁפָּה נָרָה, see, e.g., Josh 23:16; Judg 2:20.

The term עֵדוּת/תַּעְדֻּ is rendered "testimony." It occurs 46 times (as well as 15 times in its plural עֵדוֹת) in the OT, all the occurrences of which are closely related to the covenant made with Yahweh. It is even interchangeable with חֶסֶד, whenever it occurs in Exodus (21x), Leviticus (2x), Numbers (12x), and Joshua (1x). Both the term עֵדוּת/תַּעְדֻּ and its plural עֵדוֹת are used for the terms of covenant stipulations, and they also occur as broader terms for God's Word (esp. in Ps 119). The cognate term תַעַד "(testimonies," pl. of תַעַד) also occurs as a term for covenant stipulations (see, e.g., Deut 4:45; Ps 99:7) and also appears as a broader term for God's Word (esp. in Ps 119).

The term פִּקּוּד/פִּקּוּדִים ("precepts"), which is the plural of פִּקּוּד, occurs 24 times in the OT, and that in the Psalms only (once each in Pss 19, 103, and 111, and 21 times in Ps 119).

In the OT the noun פִּקּוּד/פִּקּוּד occurs with תּוֹרָה just once (Jer 32:40), and its verb פִּקּוּד occurs with תּוֹרָה 4 times (2 Kgs 17:35, 38; Pss 25:14; 111:5). The Sinaite covenant required of Israel to fear Yahweh (Jer 32:40; Pss 25:4; 111:5), but not to fear other gods (2 Kgs 17:35, 38). The verb פִּקּוּד occurs far more frequently with the terms for covenant stipulations (see, e.g., Deut 5:29; 6:2, 24; 8:6; 13:4; 17:19; 28:58; 31:12; Ps 119:120; Eccl 12:13; cf. 2 Kgs 17:37). Thus, מִשְׁפָּ and פִּקּוּד also seem to belong to covenantal terminology.
In a Psalm of praise (Ps 103), David speaks of God's ways made known to David himself, Moses and his people (vss. 2, 7). God has dealt with them according to his mercy (רַחֲמִים), grace (חֵן), and kindness (חֶסֶד), but not according to their sins (חֲטָאִים) and culpabilities (עֲוֹנוֹת) (vss. 3-4, 8, 10). His forgiveness for their פְּשָׁעִים results from his דחֶס (as the Creator) toward and his fatherly mercy (רַחֲמִים) on those who (as creatures) fear (יָרֵא) him (vss. 11-14). David praises God for his everlasting חֶסֶד to those who fear (יָרֵא) him and for his צְדָקָה to those who keep (שָׁמַר) his בְּרִית and who remember (זָכַר) his פִּקּוּדִים to do them (vss. 17-18).

In the covenant lawsuit of Yahweh in Mic 6, God's requirements of his people, in confrontation with their פֶּשַׁע and חַטַּאת (vs. 7b; cf. vs. 13), are declared after several rhetorical questions (vss. 6-7): to do מִשְׁפָּט, to love חֶסֶד, and to walk humbly with Yahweh (vs. 8). That is, Israel's God Yahweh requires his people Israel to carry out
the spirit of the covenant in their society (see Deut 4:13-14; 2 Kgs 23:3//2 Chr 34:31-32) just as God has done (צִדְקוֹת יהוה) in their history (vss. 4-5). At the same time, Micah declares God's punishment with the covenant curses in its center (vss. 13-16).

In Amos 1-2 the oracles against the nations finally reach their climax in the systematic denunciation of Judah and Israel. The violations of Judah and Israel are portrayed through the language of the covenant with Yahweh. Judah is indicted for having rejected (מָאַס) the law (תּוֹרָה) of Yahweh, not having kept (שָׁמַר) his statutes (קִיםחֻ), and their lies (כְּזָבִים), after which their fathers walked, having caused them to err (2:4). Israel is indicted for specific covenant infidelities (vss. 6-8; cf. 3:14; 5:12). 609

606 The chiastic structure of 2 Kgs 23:3 (cf. 2 Chr 34:31-32) highlights what the covenant with Yahweh practically means:

A  "the king . . . made the covenant before Yahweh"
B  "to walk after Yahweh"
C  "to keep His commandments and His testimonies and His statutes with all [his] heart and all [his] soul"
B  † "to carry out the words of the covenant that were written in this book"
A  † "all the people entered into the covenant."

Christopher J. H. Wright, Old Testament Ethics for the People of God (Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity, 2004), 51, rightly remarked that "God's purpose . . . was not to invent a production line for righteous individuals, but to create a new community of people who in their social life would embody those qualities of righteousness, peace, justice and love that reflect God's own character and were God's original purpose for humanity."

607 For its association with the term בְּרִית, see 2 Kgs 17:15 (cf. Lev 26:15; Isa 33:8); for its association with covenant motifs, see, e.g., Lev 26:43; Ezek 5:6; 20:13, 16, 24.


609 Cf. Seilhamer, 438-39; Stuart, 316-17; Andersen and Freedman, 310-11, 318; Gary V. Smith, Amos: A Mentor Commentary, rev. and expanded ed. (Fearn, Scotland:
Judah is indicted for covenant violations in a broad sense, whereas the indictment on Israel is based on specific violations of the covenant.\(^{610}\) The indictment on Judah is obviously religious, but it surely had social and moral implications, if its specifics were enumerated.\(^{611}\) The specifics of the indictment on Israel are mainly social and ethical/moral, but they are religiously based on the covenant.\(^{612}\) Therefore, the פְּשָׁעִים of both Judah and Israel (2:4, 6) are based on the Sinaitic covenant with their suzerain Yahweh.

Each of the non-Israelite nations is also indicted by the Israelite covenant God Yahweh in the same formulaic structure as Judah and Israel (1:3-2:3). The פְּשָׁעִים of the non-Israelite nations are considered to be violations of a universal covenant.\(^{613}\)

In the wider context of the so-called Isaian Apocalypse (Isa 24-27), the earth is seen being punished for its פֶּשַׁע (24:20). The violations of the earth are already expounded in vs. 5 against the background of the covenant: "The earth is polluted under its inhabitants, for they have transgressed (נָשָׁעֶה) laws (תֹּרֻה), violated statutes (קָחָה), broken (Hiphil of פָּרַר) the everlasting covenant (בְּרִית)." The פֶּשַׁע of the earth is regarded to be violations of a universal covenant.\(^{614}\)

The noun פֶּשַׁע occurs with the term of the so-called covenant lawsuit רִיב in Christian Focus Pub., 1998), 118-24.

\(^{610}\)Cf. Seilhamer, 438; Hiner, 9.

\(^{611}\)Cf. Hiner, 9.

\(^{612}\)Cf. Mays, 43-48; Hiner, 9.

\(^{613}\)Andersen and Freedman, 231; John H. Hayes, Amos: The Eighth-Century Prophet: His Times and His Preaching (Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1988), 71; Carpenter and Grisanti, "ועשׂ" 708. For a discussion of a universal covenant in the eighth-century Prophets, see Hiner, 125-38.

\(^{614}\)Cf. Hiner, 131-34. Ultimately the verb פָּשַׁע also occurs in association with universal judgment and destruction in Isa 66:24 (cf. vss. 15-17).

\(^{615}\)Even though here it is a verb in the Qal.
Gen 31:36 and Ps 103:12 (cf. vs. 9), and it also occurs with covenant curses in Jer 5:6 and Lam 1:5. Its association with the covenant renewal in Ezek 14:11 and 37:23 (cf. 11:17-21; 36:24-28; 37:24-28) suggests God's judgment executed and his forgiveness offered, but it also suggests the covenant broken.

The term פֶּשַׁע entails the violation of a sacred covenant, and in a fundamental sense it represents covenant treachery, breaking the covenant, which is the main pillar of Israelite religion. Thus, the term פֶּשַׁע is the key word for sin to the prophets, and both the verb and the noun are abundant especially in the prophetic books (60x out of the total 133; cf. most frequently [20x] in Isaiah). The prophets defined their prophetic mission as "notification of פֶּשַׁע" (see, e.g., Mic 3:8; Isa 58:1), and thus their ministries devoted significant attention to Israel's past or present covenant treachery (see, e.g., 2 Kgs 17:13; Jer 11:2-10). They indicted Israel, Yahweh's vassal for disrupting their covenant relationship with Yahweh, Israel's suzerain.

Knierim asserted that "peša" became . . . the most serious term for 'sin' because Israel's relationship to Yahweh was most explicitly defined in the legal sphere. However, its seriousness rather lies in the motives of its perpetrators and their

---

616 Carpenter and Grisanti, "פשׁע", 707.
618 Carpenter and Grisanti, "פשׁע", 708; cf. Knierim, "פשׁע peša"," 1036. The occurrences of the root פשׁע reach 60 times in the Prophets, most frequently in Isaiah (20x), Ezekiel (13x), and Amos (12x). It also occurs in Micah (6x), Jeremiah (5x), Hosea (3x), and Zephaniah (1x). Thus, almost half of the occurrences (60x out of the total 133x) are in the Prophets, and then one-third of its occurrences in the Prophets are in Isaiah.
620 The term בְּרִית occurs here in a concentrated way (5x; vss. 2, 3, 6, 8, 10).
622 Knierim, "פשׁע peša"," 1036.
623 Cf. Quell, 279. Quell mentioned that "a root like פשׁע ('to rebel') brings us
willfulness. "In a religious context," as Gnana Robinson rightly mentioned, "it indicates sin as wanton defiance against the will of God." It exposes the human motivation behind the act. It is not simply a mistake; it is a rebellion, a wilful disobedience. Štefan Porúbčan concluded that the root פֶּשַׁע "presents sin as an act of rebellion, revolt against (or defection from) God's rule and dominion over the world and mankind, an insubordination against his laws and commandments." The term פֶּשַׁע ultimately signifies the revolt/rebellion against God as a deliberate act of disloyalty and disobedience to him. Thus S. J. de Vries regarded it, when used in a theological context, as the most profound word for sin in the OT. Martens asserted: "Theologically, whoever sins (pāša) against Yahweh, does not only rebel against him, but breaks off from him, takes from him what was uniquely his." Therefore, the breach of the covenant is "the most serious aspect of the sin phenomenon" and "the kernel of sin" closer to the heart of the true problem of sin ... since it unmistakably describes the motive which determines the sinner" (ibid.). See also Job 34:37; Pss 19:13 [H 14]; 36:1 [H 2]; Isa 59:13.


Robinson, 113.

Ibid.

Porúbčan, 26.

S. J. de Vries, "Sin, Sinners," IDB (1962), 4:361. Robinson also asserted: "This is the strongest word used for sin in the Old Testament. It indicates sin in its most active and dynamic form" (113).

Martens, 51; cf. Knierim, "פשׁע pešaם," 1036; Seebass, "פשׁע pāšaם," 144-45. Martens's assertion seems to have been paraphrased from Knierim's (based on the passage like Exod 22:8): "Whoever commits pešaם does not merely rebel or protest against Yahweh but breaks with him, takes away what is his, robs, embezzles, misappropriates it" ("פשׁע pešaם," 1036).

Knierim, "פשׁע pešaם," 1036.

Johannes Pedersen, Israel, Its Life and Culture, 4 vols. in 2, trans. Aslaug Møller (London: Oxford University Press, 1926-40), 415. Martens, 51, also mentioned:
in the OT. To be noted in this connection is that in the Pentateuchal ritual law the term "פשׁע shows up only in Lev 16:16 and 21 in the context of the Day of Atonement" and that the פֶּשַׁע sin ("inexpiable rebellious sin") does not reach the sanctuary via purification offerings throughout the year.

Therefore, it seems an admitted fact that the term פֶּשַׁע is fundamentally and essentially a covenant term, and thus Gerhard von Rad even asserted that פֶּשַׁע "failed to find acceptance among the concepts connected with the cult." However, the occurrences of פֶּשַׁע with the other two major sin terms, just like its verb, emphasize not only its theological dimension but also its cultic association. In addition to the juxtaposition of the three major sin terms, פֶּשַׁע occurs with חָטָא and in parallel

"Such breach with Yahweh . . . is at the core of what the Old Testament calls sin."

632 Gane, Cult and Character, 295.

633 Gane correctly observed: "In pentateuchal ritual law, פֶּשׁע shows up only in Lev 16:16 and 21 in the context of the Day of Atonement. No offense that appears earlier in Leviticus, where noncalendric sacrifices to remedy moral faults are prescribed, is termed פֶּשׁע. This plus the serious nature of wrongs referred to by the noun פֶּשׁע and its related verb elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible . . . suggest that פֶּשׁעים are inexpiable, by contrast with the expiable חטאות (ibid., 295-96).

634 As Gane, in his Cult and Character, 297, n. 57, pointed out, Knierim, Die Hauptbegriffe, 184, mistakenly regarded cultic expiation as available even for persons who commit פֶּשׁע, because he made no clear distinction between פֶּשׁע passages outside the cult and those in the cult. Gane rightly asserted: "Outside the ritual system, YHWH can save people from their פֶּשׁעים by bearing/forgiving, expiating, blotting out, and not remembering these offenses if the sinners repent . . . However, this clemency is granted directly by YHWH and goes beyond the reconciliation that he offers through rituals. . . . In the cult, including the awesome rites of the Day of Atonement, there is no provision at all for removing פֶּשׁעים from those who commit them, even if they repent, so that they can receive the benefit of forgiveness" (Cult and Character, 297).

635 Von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 1:263. "His assertion seems to be overstated in that the term פֶּשׁע is rarely used in cultic contexts, but in a very strategic, crucial context" (Gane, personal communication, February 20, 2008), which will be shown later in the text.

636 The 15 passages, in which the three sin terms occur together, can be classified into the following categories: (1a) Yahweh's self-declaration, Exod 34:7; (1b) allusion to Yahweh's self-declaration and experience of his forgiveness, Ps 103:10-12 (cf. vss. 8-9); (1c) allusion to Yahweh's self-declaration and faith in his forgiveness, Mic 7:18-19; (1d) allusion to Yahweh's self-declaration and prayer for his forgiveness, Ps 51:1-3 [H 3-5]; (2)
with פשע ועון. The noun פשע occurs not only in cultic contexts but also for sins of idolatry through pagan cults. Only in Pentateuchal ritual law is פשע shown to be inexpiable through the cult. Also to be noted is that, although not reaching the sanctuary via daily purification offerings, the פשע sin somehow defiles the sanctuary so that it must be purged from the sanctuary and from the camp through cultic rituals on the Day of Atonement (Lev 16:16, 21). Especially to be noted in this connection is that the three major nouns for sin occur together in the significant passages of the solutions of the sin problem against the cultic background (Lev 16:21; Isa 53:5-12; Dan 9:24).

vicarious expiation: Isa 53:5-12; Dan 9:24 (cf. vss. 26-27); cf. Lev 16:21 (see the whole chapter); (3a) promise of God's forgiveness, Isa 43:24-25; (3b) blessedness of God's forgiveness, Ps 32:1-2; (3c) confession of sins and experience of God's forgiveness, Ps 32:5; (4) confession of sins, Isa 59:12; (5) declaration of innocence: Job 13:23; Ps 59:3-4 [H 4-5]; (6) God's judgment on sins: Ezek 21:24 [H 29]; 33:9-10.

631 Sam 24:11 [H 12]; 1 Kgs 8:50; Job 8:4; 35:6; Ezek 33:12; 37:23.

632 Gen 31:36; 50:17; Lev 16:16; Josh 24:19; Job 34:37; Ps 25:7; Isa 44:22; 58:1; Ezek 18:21-22; 33:10; Amos 5:12; Mic 1:5, 13; 3:8; 6:7.

633 Num 14:18; Job 7:21; 14:17; 31:33; 33:9; Ps 36:1-2 [H 2-3]; 65:3 [H 4]; 89:32 [H 33]; 107:17; Isa 50:1; 53:5; Ezek 14:10-11; 18:30.

634 See Lev 16:16, 21 (see the whole chapter of Lev 16, that is, the chapter of the Day of Atonement); 1 Kgs 8:50; Pss 5:10 [H 11]; 19:13 [H 14]; 36:1 [H 2]; 39:8 [H 9]; 51:1 [H 3], 3 [H 5]; 59:3 [H 4]; 65:3 [H 4]; Dan 8:12-13 (cf. vss. 11, 14); 9:24 (cf. vss. 25-27); Mic 6:7 (cf. vs. 6); cf. Ps 25:7; 32:1, 5; 89:32 [H 33]; 103:12; 107:17.

635 See Josh 24:19 (cf. vss. 14-16, 20, 23); Isa 44:22 (cf. vss. 9-20, 25); 57:4 (cf. vss. 3, 5-10); Jer 5:6 (cf. vs. 7); Ezek 14:11 (cf. vss. 3-7); 18:22, 28, 30-31 (cf. vss. 6, 11-12, 15); 37:23; Amos 3:14; 5:12 (cf. vs. 5); Mic 1:5 (2x; cf. vs. 7); cf. Isa 43:25 (cf. vss. 23-24).

636 Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 281, 283; idem, Cult and Character, 296, 299; Carpenter and Grisanti, "עון," 708. The defilement is automatic, thus suggesting connections with Lev 20:3 and Num 19:13, 21 (cf. defiant sin in Num 15:30-31).

As investigated so far, just as the verb פָּשַׁע occurs with or parallels the other two major terms for sin (חָטָא/חַטָּא and עָוֹן), so the noun פֶּשַׁע occurs with or parallels the other two major nouns for sin (חַטָּאת/חֵטְא and עָוֹן). Thus, through their association with the other two major sin terms that belong to cultic terminology, the verb פָּשַׁע and the noun פֶּשַׁע show their close cultic relations. Besides, the verb פָּשַׁע and its noun פֶּשַׁע occur quite often in cultic contexts, and they are also related to sins of idolatry through pagan cults. Furthermore, the three major verbs for sin occur together, though once, in the OT, but in a cultic context, and the three major nouns for sin significantly occur together mostly in cultic contexts. Significantly, only through Pentateuchal ritual law פֶּשַׁע is distinctly identified as "inexpiable rebellious sin," which does not reach the sanctuary via purification offerings throughout the year, and thus the term פֶּשַׁע as such a precise term distinguishes itself in the Hebrew cult. Last but not least, it is not to be overlooked that the covenant is inextricably bound up with the cult, and thus that the cult cannot be

clearly alludes to cultic purification rituals with hyssop as a means of purification. Thus cultic contexts have the most frequent occurrences of all three major nouns for sin next to those alluding to Yahweh's self-declaration. In Lev 16 (the Day of Atonement chapter) the goat for Yahweh is a vicarious expiatory sacrifice; in Dan 9:24-27 the death of the Messiah is related to the eschatological expiation of sins as well as the end of the sacrifices; in Isa 53 the suffering and death of the Servant is the eschatological event of expiation. It is highly significant that there are many remarkable lexical and thematic links in Dan 9:24-27 that enable us to identify the Servant in the Suffering Servant Poem with the Messiah (Messiah the Prince) in Dan 9: (1) three major sin terms; (2) כִּפֶּר; (3)צדק; (4)כָּרַת Niphal ("cut off"); (5) וְלָא נָא ("no help for him"); (6) "the many." To be noted here is that no pronominal suffixes are attached to any of the three sin terms (as compared to the antecedent "your people" and "your holy city"), the fact of which seems to imply a universal scope of the expiation (for more in detail, esp. see Doukhan, 20-21). Besides, though being related indirectly to the Messiah, interestingly the Hebrew terms שׁחת (vs. 26; Hiphil, "destroy") and שָׁמַם (vs. 26; Qal ptcp. f.p., "desolations"; vs. 27; Poel ptcp. m.s., "causing horror/desolation" and Qal ptcp. m.s., "desolator"), which are directly connected with the Servant in the Poem, occur here in Daniel, which seems to suggest the same destiny of the Messiah as well as his people and his city Jerusalem, though not only by different causes but also with different effects. For לוֹ[ִּ]עֹזֵר and its relation to אֵין עֹזֵר in Ps 22:11 [H 12] and to לִי אֵלִי לָמָה עֲזַבְתָּנִיאֵ in vs. 1 [H 2], see Doukhan, 18-19. These expressions significantly correspond to the Servant's painful experience of God's "hiding of the face" (מַסְתֵּר פָּנִים) in Isa 53:3bα, though it was misunderstood by the "we."
thought of without being associated with the covenant. Therefore, it is scarcely too much to say that פֶּשַׁע is a quasi-cultic term in the OT.

Now it can be concluded that the three major terms for sin have close cultic relations, differing only in degree. Their close cultic relations will be much more confirmed by their usage in the following cultic clauses, which significantly occur in the Suffering Servant Poem.

**Cultic Clauses**

נָשָׂא חֵטְא סָבַל עָוֹן

There are two significant cultic clauses involving terms for sin in the Suffering Servant Poem: נָשָׂא חֵטְא (Isa 53:11) and סָבַל עָוֹן (vs. 12). These two clauses are made of two major sin terms חֵטְא and עָוֹן, coupled with סָבַל and נָשָׂא respectively. The root נָשָׂא frequently occurs in related Semitic languages, and there are even instances where נָשָׂא appears in parallel with other roots both in Biblical Hebrew and in Ancient Near Eastern texts. One of those is נָשָׂא and there are four instances of the parallelism in the

---


645 As for the cultic-judicial emphasis of the term פֶּשַׁע in the OT, see Hasel, "A Study of Daniel 8:9-14," 441, 457; E. M. Livingston, 395-96. In regard to Qumran texts, Knierim, "פֶּשַׁע pešāʿ," 1037, asserted that "the term [פשע], in a consistent extension of its earlier development, has now become a fixed, largely formulaic term in the cultic language of the Qumran community."


648 See Moshe Held, "The Root ZBL/SBL in Akkadian, Ugaritic, and Biblical
OT, all in Isa 40-55 (see 46:4, 7; 53:4, 11-12).

The verb סָבַל, whose basic meaning is "bear/carry (away), transport,"649 occurs quite rarely (9x as well as 1x in Aramaic) in the OT,650 whereas the verb נָשָׂא, which basically means "lift (up), carry, take,"651 occurs frequently (654x as well as 3x in Aramaic).652 The verb סָבַל occurs 7 times in the Qal (Gen 49:15; Isa 46:4 [2x], 7; 53:4, 11; Lam 5:7), once each in the Pual (Ps 144:14) and in the Hithpael (Eccl 12:5).

Significantly, in Isa 40-55 סָבַל occurs 5 times (out of the total 9) and only in the Qal (out of the total 7).

Especially Isa 46:1-4, where the parallel of נָשָׂא with סָבַל occurs (vs. 4), seems to throw a flood of light on the Isaianic intent of the usage of the verb סָבַל as well as נָשָׂא. Here Yahweh portrays himself as a stark contrast to Babylon's idols, specifically in terms of deliverance (שָׁעַע Piel; cf. יָשַׁע Hiphil in vs. 7) from catastrophic events.

Verses 1-2 are chiastically connected by vss. 1aα and 2aα: A: "Bel has bowed down"/B: "Nebo stoops"/B1: "They [i.e., Bel and Nebo] stoop"/A1: "They have bowed down together." Verses 1-2 are also parallelistically connected with vss. 1αβ-1αβα and 2αβ-2αβα. "Their idols" that "are upon the beasts and the cattle" (vs. 1αβ-1αβα), "the things that you carry' (C: נָשָׂא Qal pass. ptc.) are 'burdensome' (D: סָבַל Qal pass. ptc.)" (vs. 1βα), "a 'burden' (נָשָׂא, n. from נָשָׂא) to the weary [beast]" (vs. 1ββα). "They [i.e., Bel and Nebo] could not 'deliver' (שָׁעַע Piel) the 'burden' (נָשָׂא, i.e., their images), but they have themselves gone into captivity" (vs. 2αββ). To the contrary, however, to "all the


649Cf. BDB, 687; HALOT, 2:741; D. Kellermann, "סָבַל săbal," TDOT, 10:139-40.

650Cf. Mandelkern, 790; Lisowsky, 988; Even-Shoshan, 801.

651Cf. BDB, 669; HALOT, 2:724; Freedman and Willoughby, 24-25; Stolz, "נָשָׂא nāšā, 769.

remnant of the house of Israel" (vs. 3aβ), "who have been borne' (D1: עָמַס Qal pass. ptcp.) by Me [i.e., Yahweh] from birth and 'have been carried' (C1: נָשָׂא Qal pass. ptcp.) from the womb" (vs. 3b) Yahweh promises in vs. 4: "Even to [your] old age I will be the same (lit., 'I [am] He'), and even to [your] gray hairs I myself will 'carry' (נָשָׂא Qal) you, I myself have done [it], and I myself will 'bear' (נָשָׂא Qal), I myself 'carry' (סָבַל Qal) and I will 'deliver' (מָלַט Piel) [you]."

The chiasm, which vs. 3b makes with vs. 1bα by the same verbal form (Qal pass. ptcp.) of the same verbs (עָמַס and נָשָׂא), immediately catches our eyes and lets us take notice of the writer's intentions. In time of catastrophes pagan gods can deliver neither their images nor their worshipers, but they only become a burden (警示) to their worshipers because of their images. To the contrary, Yahweh can and will deliver his people, as he has always done in the history of Israel. That is the point the writer intended to make in this salvation oracle of Yahweh.

The verb נָשָׂא Qal here, used with a positive sense for Yahweh, reminds us of his caring, teaching, guiding, providing, protecting, forgiving, and preserving in the context of the Exodus from Egypt and the wilderness wandering (see Exod 19:4; Num 14:19; Deut 1:31 [2x]; 32:11; Isa 63:9; cf. Num 11:12 [2x]; Isa 40:11). Now, to be noted is the parallel of נָשָׂא with סָבַל in Isa 46:4, the latter of which is also closely connected with the Exodus in that its nouns (סָבַל and סִבְלָה) are closely related to Israel's forced/compulsory labor in Egypt prior to the Exodus. The noun סָבַל (6x, only in the plural) always refers to the compulsory burdensome toil of the Israelites under their Egyptian

---

653 Even in time of peace (cf. vs. 7 [סָבַל, נָשָׂא, נָשָׁע Hiphil]; 45:20 [סָבַל, נָשָׁע Hiphil]).

654 Cf. Olafsson, 300, 303; Freedman and Willoughby, 29-30; Stolz, "נשׂא nša," 774.

oppressors (Exod 1:11; 2:11; 5:4, 5; 6:6, 7), the last two verses of which mention Yahweh's promise of the Exodus. The noun סבל refers to Israel's corvée labor in Egypt (once out of the total 3) in association with the Exodus: "I removed his shoulder from the burden/corvée work (סבל); his hands were freed from the basket (דו)" (Ps 81:6 [H 7]).

Besides, another noun בלאס occurs 3 times in the OT, only in Isaiah (9:4 [H 3]; 10:27; 14:25), and that always in juxtaposition with the yoke (לע) of foreign oppressors upon the shoulders/neck of Israel as well as Yahweh's promise of deliverance. As Isa 10:24 and 26, where "Egypt" is mentioned once each, clearly indicate, בלאס also has Israel's slavery in Egypt and the Exodus as its background. Therefore, not only the Isaianic usage of נשא but also especially of סבל reveals the Exodus motif/allusion in Isaiah. To be noted in this regard is Moshe Held's observation:

Of greater relevance for our study is the fact that Akkadian zabālu is very commonly used in connection with transporting clay, bricks and straw. One is immediately reminded of the reference to teben "straw," hōmer "clay" and lebēnim "bricks" in Exodus in connection with Israel's forced labor in Egypt (Hebrew siblōt [sic]).

656Held, 92; cf. Kellermann, "סבל sābal," 139; Youngblood, "סבל," 221. R. D. Patterson mentioned: "In contrast to the synonymous nāśā' 'lift up,' 'bear/carry (away),' sābal lays stress on the process of bearing or transporting a load (Isa 46:7), hence, becomes a figure of servitude (Gen 49:15)" ("סבל [sābal] Bear [Qal], Drag Oneself Along [Hithpael]," TWOT, 2:616).

The Exodus motif in Isaiah, especially in chaps. 40-55, has been already noticed by many scholars. Muilenburg correctly argued: "The conception of the new exodus is the most profound and most prominent of the motifs in the tradition which Second Isaiah employs to portray the eschatological finale" ("Isaiah 40-66," 602). Bernhard W. Anderson also mentioned: "While there are numerous linguistic echoes of the Exodus tradition throughout the poems of Second Isaiah, the theme of the new exodus is the specific subject in several passages" ("Exodus Typology in Second Isaiah," in Israel's Prophetic Heritage: Essays in Honor of James Muilenburg, ed. Bernhard W. Anderson and Walter Harrelson [New York: Harper & Brothers, 1962], 181). Then Anderson concluded: "Second Isaiah's eschatological hope is shaped by images drawn from Israel's Heilsgeschichte, particularly the crucial event of the Exodus, from which flow consequences reaching into the present and on into the future. The Exodus, then, is a 'type' of the new exodus which will fulfill in a more wonderful fashion, with a deeper soteriological meaning, and with world-wide implications, Yahweh's purpose revealed by word and deed in the beginning" (ibid., 194-95). See also Friedbert Ninow, Indicators of Typology within the Old Testament: The Exodus Motif, FS, Reihe A, Theologie, Bd. 4 (Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang, 2001), 157-96, esp. 193-96.

However, as Ceresko, 47, correctly observed, "it is curious that not one of these scholars [that recognized the theme of Exodus as a central one in Isa 40-55] notes any
In the Suffering Servant Poem the clauses סָבַל עָוֹן (Isa 53:11) and נָשָׂא עָוֹן (vs. 12) parallel each other, and thus they in turn make a chiasm with another previous parallel of נָשָׂא clauses in Isa 53:4. The parallels and the chiastic structure, which the נָשָׂא clauses make, are as follows:

A  אָכֵן חֳלָיֵנוּ הוּא נָשָׂא (Isa 53:4α)  
("Surely our sicknesses he himself bore")

B  וְשֵׁעֵרִינוּ זָכָל (vs. 4αβ)  
("and our pains he carried")

B1  וּנְתוֹנַם הָא יִסְבֶל (vs. 11β)  
("and their iniquities he himself will carry")

A1  נָשָׂא רַבִּים חֵטְא וּהיִסְבֶל (vs. 12α)  
("yet he himself bore the sin of many")

The clause סָבַל is quite rare and unusual in that it occurs only twice in the OT (Isa 53:11 and Lam 5:7). As shown above, however, first by paralleling נָשָׂא with סָבַל in Isa 53:4a, the writer of the Suffering Servant poem prepares us to meet the unusual expression סָבַל in vs. 11β. Then, by paralleling סָבַל with נָשָׂא (vs. 12α), the writer helps us to grasp its cultic connotation (along with its Exodus motif) and to understand its meaning that are to be investigated in this chapter. Such intentions of the writer seem to be more clearly revealed by the chiastic placement of those four clauses. Thus it has to be admitted that סָבַל is without a doubt interchangeable with נָשָׂא. So the clause סָבַל is to be dealt with together with the clause נָשָׂא.

reference to the exodus in any of the four so-called Servant Songs." Ceresko persuasively asserted that "attention to some of the language of at least the Fourth Servant Song reveals echoes not so much of the exodus, the actual 'going forth' from Egypt, but rather of the persecution and the condition of servitude imposed on the Hebrew people by the ruling elites of Egypt" (ibid., 48; for his detailed discussion, see ibid., 48-50).

657 Akkadian našû (equivalent to נָשָׂא), just as Akkadian zabālu (equivalent to סָבַל), has sin/punishment terms as its object (cf. Held, 92; Fabry, 27; Helmer Ringgren, "נָשָׂא, nāṣā", "TDOT, 10:36-37"). However, according to Held, 92-93, some ANE cognates to סָבַל, unlike those to נָשָׂא, are linguistically connected with "sick person" or "malady, sickness" (cf. Kellermann, "סָבַל, sābal," 141).

658 Pro Zimmerli, "Zur Vorgeschichte von Jes. 53," 238-39; repr. in idem, Studien
The clause סָבַל עֲון, as previously mentioned, occurs only twice in the OT, 659


Except for his citation of Lev 16:22 as well as his consideration of the prophetic sign action of Ezek 4:4-8 as a possible tradition of the vicarious expiation of the Servant, Zimmerli's thesis is essentially right, but he missed another connotation of סָבַל, i.e., the Exodus connotation. Thus He could not go further except only mentioning that the formula נַשְּא עֲון is varied 'with great freedom' in Isa 53 ("Zur Vorgeschichte," 239).

Spieckermann's argument is in a sense to the point: "If we wish to understand the idea of vicarious suffering in Isaiah 53 adequately, there is little point in taking into consideration only one or two important motifs which the [priestly] tradition has coined and then using them to unlock the theological profile of the entire text. Instead I shall try . . . to develop the criteria for the idea of vicarious suffering from the text itself in as complete a form as the text allows" (4). Except his rendering of אָשָׁם as well as יַזֶּה Spieckermann adequately developed five criteria which seem to be central to the idea of vicarious suffering in Isa 52:13-53:12 (ibid., 5-7): (1) "One person intercedes for the sins of others"; (2) "The one who intercedes for the sins of the others is himself sinless and righteous"; (3) "The vicarious act of one occurs once for all"; (4) "One intercedes for the sins of others of his own will"; (5) "God brings about the vicarious action of the one for the sins of the others intentionally."

However, Spieckermann made a mistake that, considering the main idea behind vicarious suffering as the "close community of will between God and the Servant" with the intention of solving the sin problem, he opted for prophetic intercession and suffering as the prehistory of the Servant, specifically Jeremiah (cf. Jer 7:16; 11:14; 14:11-12; 15:1) and Ezekiel (cf. Ezek 3:16-21, 26; 4:4-8). His argument runs: "In the hindrances to intercession and in suffering, prophecy found itself in an irresolvable situation in which a new theological alternative—the idea of vicarious suffering—could have been born" (ibid., 13). The main problem of Spieckermann's reasoning can be detected from his previous argument: "There are problems in ascribing to נַשְּא עֲון a central function in the understanding of Isaiah 53. One objection is that the exact phrase does not occur in Isaiah 53; verse 11 contains a synonymous expression סָבַל עֲון, but not נַשְּא עֲון. The formulations in verses 4-5 and 11-12 could therefore be understood only as a free adaptation of a fixed concept of atonement. Second, it is questionable whether this kind of fixed concept of atonement may be presupposed even for the expression נַשְּא עֲון. The two passages . . . , Leviticus 10:17 and 16:22, were in all probability written later than Isaiah 53" (ibid., 3). It seems clear that Spieckermann's first objection resulted from his limited lexical study on the verb נַשְּא and its nominatives as well as on the verb אָשָׁם, thus not catching their Exodus connotations. Spieckermann's second objection lies in his presuppositions of the "traditio-historical" approach (ibid., 4), but it is untenable. In regard to the Day of Atonement, on which the parallel expiatory term כָּפֵר of the phrase נַשְּא עֲון played a significant role, Milgrom argued that the Day of Atonement rituals could have functioned at an early (i.e., pre-exilic) date (cf. Leviticus 1-16, 1067-71). His argument is further reinforced by Gane's analysis of parallels between the Day of Atonement and the Nanshe New Year (cf. Cult and Character, 355-78, especially 378). Milgrom, based on his comparative study of the verbs אָשָׁם and כָּפֵר, convincingly argued: "The Priestly legislation on sacrificial expiation is pre-exilic" (Cult and Conscience, 122). For a detailed discussion on this issue, see ibid., 7-12, 119-23; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 339-45, 373-78.

659 Isa 53:11; Lam 5:7.
whereas the clause נָשָׂא עָוֹן occurs 29 times and 4 times with the negative particle attached. The clause נָשָׂא פֶּשַׁע occurs 5 times (Gen 50:17; Exod 34:7; Num 14:18; 1 Sam 25:28) in the OT and 3 times with the negative particle attached (Exod 23:21; Josh 24:19; Job 7:21). The clause נָשָׂא חַטָּאת occurs 5 times (Gen 50:17; Exod 10:17; 32:32; 1 Sam 15:25; Ps 25:18) in the OT and once with the negative particle attached (Josh 24:19). The clause נָשָׂא חַטָּאָה occurs once (Exod 34:7), and the clause חֵטְא נָשָׂא 6 times (Lev 20:20; 24:15; Num 9:13; 18:22; Isa 53:12; Ezek 23:49) in the OT and 3 times with the negative particle attached (Lev 19:17; 22:9; Num 18:32). For convenience' sake, all the נָשָׂא/piler clauses will be dealt with together in the sense of sin-bearing.

The subject of the clause (the sinner himself/herself or someone else) has been regarded as the decisive factor to determine its meaning. However, Schwartz recently suggested that two uses of פֶּשַׁע/חטא/נָשָׂא עָוֹן should be distinguished from each other not only by their subjects but also by the senses in which they use נָשָׂא, "bear." The

---

660 Exod 28:38; 34:7; Lev 5:1, 17; 7:18; 10:17; 16:22; 17:16; 19:8; 20:17, 19; 22:16 (פעש Hiphil); Num 5:31; 14:18, 34; 18:1 [2x], 23; 30:15 [H 16]; Ps 32:5; 85:2 [H 3]; Ezek 4:4, 5, 6, 10; 44:10, 12; Hos 14:2 [H 3]; Mic 7:18; cf. Gen 4:13. In Ps 32:5 the three major sin terms (חטא, עון, פשע) parallel with each other, and then the idiomatic expression נָשָׂא עָוֹן occurs with חטאתי attached. In vs. 1 פֶּשַׁע-נְשׂוּי parallels with כְּסוּי חֲטָאָה.

661 Exod 28:43; Ezek 18:19, 20 [2x].

662 The second one is actually נָשָׂא פֶּשַׁע.

663 The verb here first takes פֶּשַׁע as its accusatives, which parallels with חטא, and then the whole expression parallels with נָשָׂא פֶּשַׁע.

664 The verb here takes both פֶּשַׁע and חטא as its accusatives.

665 Cf. Schwartz, 8-10, 15; Gane, Cult and Character, 101-102. Note also the passages in which two or three of the major sin terms occur together with נָשָׂא (Gen 50:17; Exod 34:7 [cf. vs. 9]; Lev 16:22 [cf. vs. 21]; Num 14:18; Josh 24:19; cf. Job 7:21; Mic 7:18).

666 E.g., Knierim, "חטא," 408; Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 622-23; idem, Leviticus 17-22, 1488; Luc, "חטא," 90.

667 Schwartz, 10; cf. Gane, Cult and Character, 102.
context, in which the subject is included, should be the decisive factor to determine the precise meaning of the clause.\textsuperscript{668}

According to the context in which the idiomatic clause occurs, the consequences of sin-bearing are diverse in the OT. For the sake of convenience, however, in that the subject of the clause is the sinner himself or a representative, I will classify its usage into two main categories. The first category, in which the sinner is the subject, has two subcategories wherein expiation is possible or impossible. The second category, in which a representative is the subject, has three subcategories wherein the subject is man or animal or divine being. Especially the subcategory of man as subject has four sub-subcategories wherein it is a case of the subject being punished by God or being priestly symbolic or being prophetic symbolic or being asked to forgive by man. Thus the classifications of the clauses פֶּשַׁע/חטא/נָשָׂא עָוֹן are shown below:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Sinner as Subject</th>
<th>Expiation Possible</th>
<th>Expiation Impossible</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A Representative as Subject</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Man as Subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Divine Punitory</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prophetic Symbolic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Priestly Mediatorial</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interpersonal Reconciliatory</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Animal as Subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Divine Being as Subject</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In order to determine where the sin clauses in Isa 53:11-12 belong, we have to study the two main categories of the clauses throughout the OT.

The Sinner as Subject

This category is the one in which the sinner himself/herself is the subject of the clauses פֶּשַׁע/חטא/נָשָׂא עָוֹן. After criticizing Schwartz's position, Milgrom went too far to conclude:

\textsuperscript{668}Cf. Olafsson, 304.
In sum, nāšāḥ-ḥāwōn is a nonexpiable, irremediable divine sentence. In all cases where the punishment is not stated, it is forthcoming—irrevocably. In theological terms, perhaps one might say that the punishment (usually mwt or kārēt . . .) expiates for the sin . . . but the punishment itself is unavoidable.669 However, Milgrom admits at least that Lev 5:17, "to be sure, explicitly states that the sin is expiated by a reparation offering."670 Therefore, Schwartz is right in that there are several cases where remedial expiation is prescribed, thereby obviating punishment, though in most cases it is impossible.

Expiation Possible

There are several cases in which remedial expiation was possible for a person who נטש עשון. The sinner's bearing culpability could be remedied by a graduated purification offering (Lev 5:1),671 or a reparation offering (Lev 5:17),672 or reparation (Lev 22:16).673 Nevertheless, the sin for which the remedial offerings or reparation has been wantonly neglected is inexpiable, and the sinner is terminally condemned to

---

669Milgrom, Leviticus 17-22, 2116.
670Milgrom added: "However, considering that the sin is a suspected maṭal committed unwittingly, incurring an expensive ram as a fine is hardly a remedy, but a steep penalty. (Indeed, that the word means 'reparation, penalty,' see especially 5:6, 19, 25a; Num 5:7)" (ibid.).
671Leviticus 5:1 mentions the case of a deliberate omission or neglect to give mandatory testimony, which is remedied by confession (vs. 5) plus the purification offering (cf. vss. 6-13), more specifically the graduated purification offering. See Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 118-23, 125 (contra Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 293-96, 300-307; idem, Leviticus 17-22, 1488-89). For a detailed discussion on the graduated purification offering, see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 307-318.
672Leviticus 5:17 mentions the case of an inadvertent violation of any of Yahweh's prohibitive commandments (doing a "Thou shalt not") without knowing it and continuing to not know about it, which is remedied by the reparation offering (cf. vss. 18-19). See Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 133-34; Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 331-35; idem, Leviticus 17-22, 1489. For a detailed discussion on the reparation offering, see Milgrom, Cult and Conscience; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 339-78.
673Leviticus 22:16 mentions the case of laypersons' unintentional eating of the priestly portion of what they give as offerings, which is remedied by reparation (vs. 14). See Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 381 (contra Milgrom, Leviticus 17-22, 1489).
Expiation Impossible

In many cases remedial expiation was not possible. In these cases the sinner had no choice but to die or be "cut off." Therefore, in such cases of the sinner's consequential sin-bearing, the sinner "carries" the weight of his/her own sin, which will ultimately crush him/her and lead to his/her death by human or divine agency.

A Representative as Subject

This category is the one in which a representative, but not the sinner, is the

---

674 Cf. Gane, *Cult and Character*, 293.
676 Lev 7:18 (implicit; cf. vss. 20-21); 17:16 (implicit; cf. vs. 14; 11:39-40); 19:8 (explicit); 20:17 (explicit; cf. 18:6, 9, 11, 29), 19 (implicit; cf. vs. 17; 18:6, 12-13, 29), 20 (explicit; death without a child); Num 5:31 (implicit, death without a child); 9:13 (explicit); Ezek 14:10 (implicit; cf. vss. 8-9); cf. Num 15:30-31. See Schwartz, 10-15; Milgrom, *Leviticus 17-22*, 1488-89. The expression "be cut off" means the terminal punishment of extirpation (cf. Donald John Wold, *The Meaning of the Biblical Penalty Kareth* [Ph.D. dissertation, University of California, 1978]; Milgrom, *Leviticus*, 457-60; idem, *Numbers*, 405-408; Schwartz, 12; Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 621). As for the case of a suspected adulteress proven guilty by the ordeal of the bitter water (Num 5:31), see Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 521-26. Gane here mentioned: "There is no indication in Numbers 5 that an adulteress convicted through the ritual at the sanctuary will be put to death by the Israelites after suffering the breakdown of her reproductive system (5:21-22, 27)" (p. 526). However, Milgrom, in his *Leviticus 17-22*, 1489, argued that, if the suspected adulteress is convicted by the ordeal, she will not bear seed (vss. 22, 27), and thus that her punishment is equivalent to ירר. For death 'without a child' (עַרִירִי) as a form of kareth, see Lev 18:12, 16 (cf. vs. 29); 20:20-21; cf. Wold, 40-42, especially 42.
subject of the clauses פֶּשַׁע/חטא/נָשָׂא/עָוֹן. Under this category there are three subcategories.

Man as Subject

This subcategory is the one in which man is the subject of the clauses. This subcategory can be classified into four sub-subcategories.

Divine punitory

Under this sub-subcategory three passages can be subsumed. The passage Num 30:15 [H 16] is to a certain degree indirectly related to the cult, and it is in the context of the sanctity of vows or oaths in general. The basic principle is that vows or oaths, whether made by men or women, are to be kept (vss. 2 [H 3], 9 [H 10]; cf. Exod 20:7; Lev 19:12). However, if a married woman makes a vow or an oath and her husband hears about it, he has the right to confirm or annul it (vs. 13 [H 14]). If he annuls it on the day when he first hears about it, then God will automatically forgive her for not fulfilling her obligation (vss. 8, 12 [H 9, 13]).

---

678 Gen 50:17; Exod 10:17; 28:38; Lev 10:17; Num 30:15 [H 16]; 1 Sam 15:25; 25:28; Lam 5:7; Ezek 4:4-6; 18:19, 20 (2x).
680 In Num 30, three cases of dependent women are cited, following the progression of a woman's life from single to married status: (1) unmarried women under the authority of their fathers (vss. 3-5), (2) women who marry while under vows or pledges previously taken (vss. 6-8), and (3) married women who make vows or pledges while under the authority of their husbands (vss. 10-15). See Milgrom, Numbers, 251-55; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 761-62.
681 According to Milgrom, Numbers, 254, it must be annulled "on that day only but not thereafter."
682 Cf. Milgrom, Numbers, 252; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 245; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 762. Milgrom, Numbers, 252, pointed out the contrast of the active (Qal) form of the verb פֶּשַׁע here, also found in vs. 6, with its passive (Niphal) form as found in sacrificial texts (e.g., Lev 4:20, 26, 31, 35). Then Milgrom argued: "The purpose of the latter is to show that, even though the sin is unintentional, the sacrifice is not inherently efficacious but dependent on the divine will. Here, however, the purpose of the verbal form is to show that if the woman is thwarted from fulfilling her vow by her father or husband (vss. 9, 13), God will automatically forgive her" (cf. also his Leviticus 1-16, 245).
will bear her culpability (vs. 15 [H 16]). His late annulment of her vow or oath itself makes him responsible in the matter of the unfulfilled vow or oath, and thus he is inexorably punished by God, as is explicitly stated in Deut 23:21-23 [H 22-24] and Eccl 5:2-7 [H 1-6].

Lamentations 5:7 says, "Our fathers sinned, and are no more; but we bear (סָבַל) their iniquities (עֹן pl.)." The prophet Jeremiah confesses his own generation's share in the culpability of the fathers, not dissociating the generation from the fathers ("our fathers") or from their sin (cf. vs. 16). Jeremiah "is not concerned to contrast the guilt (חטאת) of the fathers with the undeserved sufferings of himself and his contemporaries ( والسהל)." The exclamation in vs. 16 makes it clear that "the present generation had some part in that sin."

In Ezekiel's time Israel's public consciousness was: "Why should the son not bear the punishment for the iniquity (שָׂאנָבַעֲוֹן) of the father?" (Ezek 18:19a; cf. vs. 2). Refuting it, however, Yahweh clearly mentions his just dealing with individuals: "The son will not bear the punishment for the iniquity (נָשָׂא בַעֲוֹן) of the father, nor will the

Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 762, mentioned: "These are the only instances in the Bible of forgiveness (slh) automatically guaranteed by statute."

683 Cf. Milgrom, Leviticus 17-22, 1489.

684 Cf. Delbert R. Hillers, Lamentations: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary, 2nd rev. ed., AB, vol. 7A (New York: Doubleday, 1992), 164. Hillers here mentioned: "The verse expresses his understanding of, and acquiescence in, the judgment foretold in the terms of their covenant with God; the sins of the fathers are now being visited on their children (Exod 20:5)." Jeremiah says much the same thing, in one verse, as Lam 5:7, 16: 'We have sinned against Yahweh from our youth, we and our fathers' (Jer 3:25)." For a similar, but quite different case, that is, the case of the new generation of the Exodus, see Num 14:33; cf. Olafsson, 195-97. For the issues related to the interpretation of Lam 5:6, which aids an appropriate interpretation of vs. 7, see Paul R. House, Lamentations, WBC, vol. 23B (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2004), 461-63.

685 Whybray, Thanksgiving, 29.

father bear the punishment for the iniquity (נָשָׂא עָוֹן) of the son" (vs. 20). In regard to the individual fate, God requires individual responsibility of the people (Ezek 18:4, 20), which was already made clear to Moses (Exod 32:33; Deut 24:16). It is explicitly mentioned here that the consequence of bearing one's own culpability is death (Ezek 18:4c, 13, 20a).

Therefore, although the cases of Num 30:15 [H 16], Lam 5:7, and Ezek 18:19-20 have a representative as the subject of נָשָׂא עָוֹן, they ultimately belong to the category in which the wrongdoer is its subject, and thus they are quite different from the case of the Suffering Servant. The Servant, though he is righteous, bears the sin/ culpabilities of the "we"/"the many," suffered, and died for them (Isa 53:11-12; cf. vss. 4-6, 8).

Prophetic symbolic

The clause נָשָׂא עָוֹן occurs three times (once each in every verse) in Ezek 4:4-6, and it explains the meaning of the prophet Ezekiel's actions. They are prophetic sign actions, as the terms נָשָׂא (vs. 3) and נָשָׂא Niphal (vs. 7) clearly control. The actions for a long period of time surely involved not a little discomfort and suffering. However, they had a purely symbolic value only, but absolutely no expiatory effect.

Therefore, the usage of the clause נָשָׂא עָוֹן in Ezek 4:4-6 is totally different from its usage in the Suffering Servant Poem, which goes far beyond symbolism.

Priestly mediatorial

There are two passages in which priests bear the culpability (נָשָׂא עָוֹן) of the people (Exod 28:38; Lev 10:17). Exod 28:38 mentions the gold plate (צִיץ) on the

---

690 Cf. Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 511-13. Milgrom argued: "It is possible that the
forehead of the high priest Aaron, the function of which is for him symbolically to bear the culpability of Israel's offerings in before Yahweh. 691 By means of the gold plate, the high priest bears the culpability "arising from" the offerings of the people "to win acceptance for them" before Yahweh. 692 The high priest, who is not only identified with the people but also set apart to serve before Yahweh, carried the culpability of their offerings on their behalf into his presence, thereby making the people acceptable in the sight of Yahweh. 693 Thus not only the mediatorial aspect of the high-priestly office but

plate was called פִּסֵּח because of its floral decoration, which it already had, "and that it continued to be called by this name even after the decoration had disappeared" (511-12). So he adopted the rendering "plate" in his commentary on Leviticus (512). Besides, he rightly pointed it out that Exod 28:36 and 29:6 (cf. 39:30; Lev 8:9) "make it clear that the high priest's נֵזֶר and פִּסֵּח refer to the same object" (512). In regard to נֵזֶר, he suggested: "Although it originally referred to some emblem that projected from the object that fastened it to the head, it eventually became identified with the object itself." So he adopted the rendering "diadem" (513).

691Cf. Olafsson, 185-89. Four passages in Exod 28 are concerned with different parts of Aaron's garments and their function in the sanctuary ritual. Olafsson rightly pointed out: "On the surface, these texts [vss. 12 and 29] do not deal with any kind of wrongdoing, but the whole context of chap. 28 in general and vss. 30 and 38 in particular clearly indicate that this נָשָׂא process is related to the people's wrongdoing" (185-86). Olafsson continued: "The strategic placement of the stones and the gold plate was apparently an outward, visible indication of Aaron's identifying himself in heart and mind with the people and their wrongdoings as he prepared to enter the presence of the Lord on their behalf. By means of these pieces of his vestments he symbolically carried (נָשָׂא) their wrongdoings and judgments on his body" (186-87). For a proper interpretation of the four passages (vss. 12, 29, 30, 38), note several lexical and phraseological links between them, all of which are especially connected by the significant term נָשָׂא.


693Cf. Olafsson, 188, n. 4. Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 55, asserted: "The פִּסֵּח 'plate' worn on the high priest's forehead was prophylactic in purpose: to expiate any imperfection inadvertently offered by the people" (italics mine). Then He explicated: "Because of its inscription 'holy to the Lord' (Exod 28:36), it had the power 'to remove the sin of the holy things that the Israelites consecrate, from any of their sacred donations' (Exod 28:38). In other words, any inadvertent impurity or imperfection in the offerings to the sanctuary would be expiated by the פִּסֵּח." (512; italics mine; cf. 623). Thus Milgrom argued: "The power to remove iniquity can certainly reside in the cult as operated by . . . his priests. Moreover, their authority and ability to remove the iniquity of the congregation is expressly attributed to the high priest: 'It (the gold plate) shall be on Aaron's forehead, that Aaron may remove any iniquity arising from the sacred things that the Israelites consecrate, from any of their sacred donations . . . it shall be on his forehead at all times, to win acceptance for them before the Lord' (Exod 28:38)" (623, italics mine). However, the cult itself (including even the high priest) had no intrinsic

200
also its substitutionary character is signified by the gold plate. This function of the high priest through the medium of gold plate is "completely compatible with the priests' function" through the medium of the purification offering, which is clarified by Lev 10:17.

Leviticus 10:17 provides a vital element to the understanding of outer-altar purification offerings. Through eating the meat of purification offerings (see also Lev 6:26 [H 19]), an officiating priest bears the culpability of the offerer and thereby makes an integral contribution to the process of expiation, through which Yahweh grants forgiveness.

power to remove iniquities, but rather the above-mentioned iniquity is transferred to the high priest by means of ִּיֵּס, and he temporarily carries it (until it is borne out of the camp by Azazel's goat on the Day of Atonement) without being harmed due to his cultic immunity to its effects (for more on Exod 28:38, see Gane, Cult and Character, 101, n. 36, 103, n. 48, 289, n. 23, 299, n. 63, and 341, n. 23.). In addition, Milgrom, Leviticus 17-22, 1488 (cf. idem, Leviticus 1-16, 1415), is not correct in classifying the expression נָשָׁא אֹנֶן in Lev 16:22 into the same category with the one in Exod 28:38 and Lev 10:17, meaning "carry off, remove sin."


695 Cf. Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 623-25. Milgrom argued that "Aaron's permanent powers, which enable him to remove the iniquity (נָשָׁא אֹנֶן) of Israel's donations to the sanctuary, are completely compatible with the priest's function, which requires him to remove the iniquity (נָשָׁא אֹנֶן) of the community by effecting purgation on its behalf with the purification offering" (623-24). Then he asserted: "Just as the high priest absorbs the impurities of Israel's offerings by means of the ִּיֵּס, so the officiating priest absorbs the impurities of the Israelites by means of the ְַאֲטָם [by ingesting it]" (64; cf. 65). However, neither the high priest nor the priest has any power in regard to the removal of physical ritual impurities and moral faults, and thus the term "carry/bear" should be used here instead of Milgrom's "remove" or "absorb."

696 Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 190.

697 Gane, Cult and Character, 100, pointed out: "Whatever the precise meaning of נָשָׁא אֹנֶן in Lev 10:17 may be, this dynamic would apply only to purification offerings for moral faults. In outer-altar purification offerings for severe ritual impurities, which are not acts of sin, presumably no ִּיֵּס would be involved, and in such cases the remaining flesh would function only as a priestly prebend."

698 For more thorough discussions, see Gane, Cult and Character, 91-105; cf. idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 190, 194-97; Olafsson, 189-91.
As the close parallel between the language of Exod 34:7 and Lev 10:17 indicates, there is a close relationship between Yahweh's sin-bearing and his priests. The priests served as Yahweh's representatives on earth and exclusively so in the sanctuary, and thus priestly bearing of culpability clearly reflects divine bearing of culpability. By eating the sacrificial flesh, the priests serve as a mediatorial bridge between the Israelites and Yahweh: On the one hand, by bearing the culpability of the people which they would otherwise continue to bear (cf. 5:1, 17), the priests identify with them. On the other, by bearing that culpability, the priests even identify with Yahweh who bears culpability (Exod 34:7). Thus the priests as Yahweh's servants and representatives intimately participate in the expiation process by which Yahweh extends forgiveness to his people.

When the culpability of the offerer is transferred to the high priests and the priests in that way, they temporarily (until it is borne out of the camp by Azazel's goat on the Day of Atonement [Lev 16:21-22]) carry it without being harmed because of their cultic immunity to its consequences.

---


701 Ibid., 100.

702 Ibid.; idem, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 196. Gane pointed out: "The role of YHWH in bearing moral evils is represented in the cultic system by his sanctuary and priests together: When sinners receive חטאת during the year, the sanctuary bears their חטואים (Lev 16:16) and the priests bear the עונות that have resulted from the חטאות (Lev 10:17). The priests can bear the עונות because these are consequential culpabilities and, as such, they can be transferred from one person to another. . . . This transferability reflects the legal fact that one person can be condemned to punishment for a wrong that another person has committed" (*Cult and Character*, 300).

703 Gane, *Cult and Character*, 100; idem, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 196.

704 Koch, "כֹּרֶן כֹּרֶן יִשְׂרָאֵל," 559-60; cf. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1-16*, 623, 638-39, 1048; Gane, *Cult and Character*, 103-105, 299-300, 336-37; idem, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 196, 282. Koch referred to the priestly immunity as their own inherent quality, that is, the divinely derived holiness conferred on them and their vestments at their consecration.
Unlike the priests/high priest, however, the Suffering Servant "went the extra, painful step—freeing others by bearing and then dying for their culpability (\(\text{wn}; 53:5, 6, 11\)),"\(^{705}\) thereby obtaining for them acceptance or justification (vs. 11).\(^{706}\) As for evidence of the substitutionary nature of the Suffering Servant's expiation, there is no need to look further than the fact that as Priest he bears the sins of others upon himself and as Victim he dies for those sins.\(^{707}\)

Interpersonal reconciliatory

There are four narratives in the OT in which a person was asked to "forgive rebellion/sin" (חַטָּאת/נָשָׂא פֶּּשַׁע).\(^{708}\) In Gen 50:17 Joseph was asked to forgive the rebellion/sin (חַטָּאת/נָשָׂא פֶּּשַׁע) of his brothers,\(^{709}\) and in Exod 10:17 Pharaoh asked Moses to forgive his sin (חַטָּאת),\(^{710}\) and in 1 Sam 15:25 Saul asked Samuel to forgive his sin (חַטָּאת).\(^{711}\) These are all in the form of a request for forgiveness, in which a

For more on priestly immunity, see Milgrom, \textit{Leviticus 1-16}, 623-24, 638-39, 1048.

\(^{705}\) Gane, \textit{Leviticus, Numbers}, 197.

\(^{706}\) Cf. Olafsson, 188, n. 4.

\(^{707}\) Gane, \textit{Leviticus, Numbers}, 67, 197


\(^{709}\) The request, which was first mentioned as their father Jacob's (חַטָּאת/נָשָׂא פֶּּשַׁע; vs. 17a) before his death and then now theirs (נָשָׂא לְפֶּּשַׁע; vs. 17b), was delivered through a messenger to Joseph (cf. vs. 16). Especially Joseph's promise to "provide for" (נָשָׂא Pilpel) their needs in vs. 21 is for "an act which in the Pentateuch is referred to as nāšā'" (see Exod 19:4; Deut 1:31; 32:10-12)," which Neh 9:21 refers to God's providing care for his people during their 40 years' wilderness wandering (cf. Olafsson, 193, n. 1). For more discussion on this text, see ibid., 192-93; Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 353.

\(^{710}\) The removal (נָשָׂא) of the locust plague (vs. 19) came in response to Pharaoh's request to Moses to נָשָׂא his sin and remove (Hiphil of הָשָּׁר) the deadly plague (vs. 17). For more discussion on this text, see Olafsson, 193-94; Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 340, n. 19.

\(^{711}\) Cf. Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 340, n. 19. God commanded King Saul to wage a holy war of extermination against the Amalekites (1 Sam 15:3 \([\text{חרם} Hiphil], 18 [\text{חרם} Hiphil and \text{כָּלָה} Piel]), but Saul failed to carry it out in terms of sacral devotion to
wrongdoer pleads with the wronged to forgive (נושא) his wrongdoings so that he might escape the consequences of his wrong actions.  

There is "no indication that the forgiver would consequently bear a weight of responsibility."\(^{713}\)

These passages are quite different from 1 Sam 25:28 in that the wrongdoers simply seek forgiveness for themselves.\(^ {714}\) Abigail asked David to forgive her rebellion (נושא לפשע), for which she claimed to be culpable (אני און-בְּי; vs. 24), but which in fact was the rebellion of her husband Nabal.\(^ {715}\) Having taken upon herself the culpability (ון) of her guilty husband, Abigail petitioned David for pardon, and finally her petition was granted (נושא פני; vs. 35).\(^ {716}\)

Just as for God to forgive man's wrongdoings is His glory (כבוד; Ps 79:9; cf. Exod 33:18-19, 22; 34:6-7; Num 14:17-21; Isa 33:17; 44:22-23),\(^ {717}\) so for man to forgive destruction (חרם Hiphil in vss. 8, 9 [2x], 15, 20; חרם in vs. 21). So Saul was punished for his rebellion (חרם in vs. 23; cf. vs. 11). Saul rejected (安全保障) the word of Yahweh, and thus Yahweh rejected (安全保障) Saul from being king over Israel (vss. 23, 26; cf. 16:1). For sacral חרם annihilation, see Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 466-67, 678, 771-74; for a detailed discussion, see Philip D. Stern, The Biblical Hĕrem: A Window on Israel's Religious Experience, BJS, no. 211 (Atlanta, GA: Scholars, 1991), 19-56. For the association of the verb מאש with the covenant בְּרִית, see 2 Kgs 17:15 (cf. Lev 26:15; Isa 33:8); for its association with covenant motifs, see, e.g., Lev 26:43; Ezek 5:6; 20:13, 16, and 24.

\(^ {712}\) Olafsson, 192. Especially for Gen 50:17, see vs. 15; for Exod 10:17, see vss. 17b and 19.

\(^ {713}\) Gane, Cult and Character, 340, n. 19. However, Olafsson mentioned that "the wronged, or a substitute, takes on himself the burden of wrongs" (194; cf. 192).

\(^ {714}\) Cf. Gane, Cult and Character, 340, n. 19. As Gane here observed, "this explains why transferable culpability (安全保障) does not come to the surface as it does" in the plea of the Tekoite woman (though with a 'juridical parable') and in the petition of Abigail (340, n. 19). However, as in the cases of the Tekoite woman and Abigail, transferability of culpability appears in noncultic settings also, even though it is primarily attested in cultic contexts (cf. ibid., 341, n. 23).

\(^ {715}\) Cf. ibid., 339-41.

\(^ {716}\) For נושא with "face" as its object, see Olafsson, 229-45 (esp. 231-35), 258-59. In regard to 1 Sam 25, the narrative of Gen 32 seems to be enlightening (esp. vs. 21; see also 33:8, 10-11), since a "gift" (ברכה/מנחה) was prepared for a process of restoration of relationship (נושא=Piel) and the successful result, i.e., נושא פני.

\(^ {717}\) To be dealt with later in this chapter.
others' wrongdoings is his or her beauty/glory (תִּפְאֶרֶת, by-form of התִּפְאָרָה; Prov 19:11; cf. פָּאַר Hithpael in Isa 44:23),\textsuperscript{718} which is a reflection of God's character (cf. Exod 34:6-7; Num 14:18).\textsuperscript{719} God expects his people to forgive each other, thereby reflecting his glory, that is, his character in dealing with each other (cf. Lev 19:17-18).\textsuperscript{720} However, all forgiveness is associated with God, while human beings participate with him in the process.\textsuperscript{721}

**Animal as Subject**

The second subcategory is the one in which an animal is the subject of the clause

\textsuperscript{718}For a juxtaposition of תִּפְאָרָה and כָּבוֹד, see Exod 28:2 and 40.

\textsuperscript{719}To be noted are the parallels between Prov 19:11, Exod 34:6-7, and Num 14:18, which show Prov 19:11 alludes to Exod 34:6-7 and Num 14:18:

- **Prov 19:11:** "slow to anger" (אָרַא Hiphil pf. plus אַפּו
- **Exod 34:6:** "slow to anger" (adj. אָרֵא m.s. cstr. plus אַפַּיִם)
- **Num 14:18:** "slow to anger" (adj. אָרֵא m.s. cstr. plus אַפַּיִם)

- **Prov 19:11:** "to pass over rebellion" (פֶּשַׁע ר עֲבֺ Hiphil pf. plus אַפְּוֹ)
- **Exod 34:7:** "bearing culpability, rebellion and sin" (שֵׂא עָוֹן וָפֶשַׁע וָחַטָּאָה)
- **Num 14:18:** "bearing culpability and rebellion" (שֵׂא עָוֹן וָפָשַׁע)

Also to be noted is the parallel of the noun שֶׂכֶל ("prudence, insight") in Prov 19:11 and of the verb שֶׂכֶל Hiphil in Isa 52:13 as well as of the same content of "forgiveness" in Prov 19:11 and in Isa 52:13-53:12. Such parallels seem to significantly contribute to the interpretation of the verb שֶׂכֶל Hiphil in Isa 52:13 (see, e.g., "deal prudently" [KJV; NKJV]; "act wisely" [NIV; YLT]). Waltke and O'Connor, 145, also rendered it into "act wisely." The same verb שֶׂכֶל Hiphil occurs in Jer 23:5, which is a prophetic text on the Messianic King. Helmer Ringgren remarked: "In [Isa] 52:13 the word here rendered by 'prosper' is a matter of controversy. The original meaning is 'to have insight' . . . In any case it is the same verb that is used of the messianic king in Jer 23:5" (**The Messiah in the Old Testament**, 48). For the expression "slow to anger," see Waltke and O'Connor, 151.

\textsuperscript{720}See also Eph 4:32-5:2; Col 3:13-14.

\textsuperscript{721}Olafsson, 302-303; cf. Gane, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 102-103, 354.
Only once in the OT, in Lev 16:22 (cf. vs. 21), is an animal the subject of the clause. The animal is specifically the live goat for Azazel on the Day of Atonement (vss. 10, 20-22). It is directly and explicitly associated with the process of the nonsacrificial sin-removal in the sanctuary ritual. Azazel's goat served only as a vehicle for carrying off/transporting (נָשָׂא) all the moral faults of Israel, which had been accumulated in the sanctuary throughout the year (cf. vs. 20), to the wilderness (vss. 10, 22-23), that is, to a "cut-off land" (גְּזֵרָה אֶרֶץ; vs. 22), an inaccessible place from which the goat could not return to the camp.724

722Gane rightly argued: "What makes the live-goat ritual nonsacrificial is the fact that the animal is not given over to YHWH as 'an irrevocable gift'" (Cult and Character, 252; cf. 251).

723Gane, Cult and Character, 261, pointed out: "It is true that in Lev 16:10 Azazel's goat has a kind of כפר function: 'לְכַפֵּר עָלָיו.' But this expression is unique in that the object of the preposition על following כפר refers here to the animal rather than to the offerer(s) or to the sanctuary and/or its sancta. So the goat is not an instrument to effect כפר on behalf of the Israelites themselves or to purge the sanctuary. Neither can the goat itself be the beneficiary of כפר. It is abandoned in the wilderness and may perish there. Rather, it is a vehicle of כפר by elimination, as shown by the fact that in Lev 16:10 לְכַפֵּר עָלָיו, 'to perform כפר upon it,' is paralleled by תֹו לַעֲזָאזֵל הַמִּדְבָּרָהאֺלְשַׁלַּח, 'to send it off to Azazel to the wilderness' (cf. vss. 21-22)." The idea of elimination/removal here seems to be strongly emphasized by the fact that besides the preposition על (vss. 10, 21 [3x], 22), which indicates the carrying aspect, both the directional ה (vss. 10, 21) and the preposition אל (vs. 22) are employed to indicate the movement (cf. Olafsson, 170, 201, n. 1, 273, 304; Whybray, Thanksgiving, 48-49; Hamilton, "נשׂא," 163; Gane, Cult and Character, 337). Also to be noted is Milgrom's observation: "The purpose of vs. 20a is to stress the fact that the purging of the sanctuary must be complete before beginning the Azazel rite" (Leviticus 1-16, 1040). In regard to the two hand-leaning rite, which is a key to understanding the function of the Azazel goat, Gane, Cult and Character, 245, convincingly maintained: "When one hand is used, the following activities transfer the victim from the offerer to YHWH for his utilization. When the high priest places two hands on Azazel's goat, this act combined with simultaneous confession transfers moral faults to the goat. The role of double hand-leaning is not to identify ownership, which has already been established by the lot ritual, but to identify the route of transfer as it takes place. So whereas the identification gesture with one hand precedes transfer, the gesture with two hands is an integral part of the transfer process." See also Spieckermann, 4.

724For a brilliant treatment of this topic, see Gane, Cult and Character, 136, 242-66, 337; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 273-74, 288-91, 295-97; cf. also Olafsson, 197-202, 273-74; Schwartz, 18. The term מָחֲנֶה "camp" occurs three times in Lev 16, once each in vss. 26-28. In terms of movement (that is, "into the wilderness," "into the camp," or "unto the outside of the camp"), see the correspondences between vss. 10, 21-22 and vs. 26 as well as between vs. 27 and vs. 28.
There are still debates on the identity of Azazel, but Satan as the initiator and instigator of sin/evil is the most likely candidate. Then, the live goat for Azazel represents him, and its doom prefigures his final destiny. As a result, the case of Azazel's goat may belong to the category in which the wrongdoer is the subject of נָשָׂא עָוֹן.

To the contrary, the goat for Yahweh, which is slain to be offered, corresponds to the Suffering Servant who bears all the sins of wrongdoers, suffers, and ultimately dies on their behalf.

**Divine Being as Subject**

The third subcategory is the one in which a divine being is the subject of the clause. First of all, four passages in the Pentateuch have divine beings as the subject of the clause פֶּשַׁע / חטא / נָשָׂא עָוֹן, and they lay theological foundations of God's forgiveness and punishment. Two passages are related to divine self-portrayal (Exod 34:7; Num 14:18), the third one is an intercessory plea (Exod 32:32), and the fourth is in the form of warning (23:21).

The intercessory plea in Exod 32:32 is related to the golden calf fiasco at Mt. Sinai. At the critical point of that fiasco Moses decided to intervene on behalf of the Israelites. He said to them, "You yourselves have committed (חָטָא) a great sin (טָאָחֵלָה); and now I am going up to Yahweh, perhaps I can make expiation (כָּפַר Piel) for your sin (חַטָּאת)" (Exod 32:30). As he returned to Yahweh, he confessed the people's sin (Judg 2:18).
apostasy to idolatry (vs. 31) and asked God to forgive (נָשָׂא) their sin (vs. 32a). Moses here offered himself to suffer the consequences of the people's wrongdoing—to be blotted out of Yahweh's book (vs. 32b), that is, to be cut off from God. Moses' intercession for the people in vs. 32 can be interpreted: "Either you, God, nāśā then (nāśā then) the wrongs of the people [i.e., bear and forgive them] or let me nāśā them and suffer the consequences [i.e., bear them and die]." Moses' desperate offer of a vicarious nature was declined by Yahweh, saying: "Whoever has sinned against me, I will blot him out of my book" (vs. 33).

However, in response to Moses' request to Yahweh for showing his "glory" (Exod 33:18), Yahweh revealed himself in Exod 34:6-7. In fact Yahweh showed Moses that his glory intrinsically lies in his character. Yahweh is shown to be God not only of mercy but also of justice. Exodus 34:7a portrays Yahweh specifically as the "One who bears culpability, rebellion and sin (שֵׂא אַדַּנְא וָפֶשַׁע וְחַטָּאָה)," that is, ultimately as the One who forgives (נָשָׂא; vs. 9) all sins. In response to Moses' desperate intercession for the Israelites (vs. 9: "... forgive [נָשָׂא] our iniquity and our sin...") and out of God's

---

728 Cf. Olafsson, 261.

729 Gane, Cult and Character, 334-35; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 612-13; cf. Olafsson, 261; Gane, Cult and Character, 334, n. 1. As Gane, Cult and Character, 334, correctly pointed out, "YHWH both bears and forgives" (cf. Num 14:19). God bears עון when he forgives (see ibid., 334-35; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 612-13).

730 Even Moses' later death is not of a vicarious nature (see Num 20:12). The passages Deut 3:25-27 and 4:21 must be understood in light of Num 20:2-13, esp. vs. 12 (pace von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:261). Thus, although there are some correspondences between Moses and the Servant, it is not correct to trace the origin of the Servant Poems back to the life of Moses (pace, e.g., von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:260-61; esp. Baltzer, 394-428).


732 In this vein Ps 99:8 refers to Yahweh as שֵׂא אַדַּנְא "God-Who-Forgives" (NKJV) or "God of forgiveness" (NJB).
abundant mercy, God's forgiveness was granted in the form of a covenant renewal (vss. 10, 27). However, God does not always forgive the wrongdoer, nor exclude him from just punishment, as Exod 34:7b clearly indicates, but it seems to depend upon his attitude as a sinner. Fundamentally God is portrayed as the One who continually bears the evils of his people, thereby subjecting himself to its consequences.733 "Forgiveness by Yahweh," thus, "carries with it a cost that he must bear,"734 that is, "divine suffering"735 in the ultimate sense.

In Num 14:18, referring to Exod 34:6-7, God is also portrayed as the "One who bears culpability and rebellion (שֵׂאנְו עָוֹן וָפָשַׁע)." "The way in which YHWH bears (נשׂא) sin (Exod 34:7)," as Roy Gane pointed out, "is illuminated by Num 14, where Moses quotes Yahweh's self-characterization back to him just before the climax of his

---

733Cf. Olafsson, 208.

734Gane, Cult and Character, 335; cf. idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 612-613. Thus Ringgren did not say enough in his "נוש אשם," TDOT, 10:37: "The meaning 'to forgive guilt' is explained from nāṣā' in the sense of 'taking away,' the association being with the removal of guilt" (referring to Johann Jakob Stamm, Erlösen und Vergeben im Alten Testament: Eine Begriffsgeschichtliche Untersuchung (Bern: Francke, 1940), 66-70; Knierim, Hauptbegriiffe, 50ff., 114-19, 218ff.).

735See Terrence E. Fretheim, Exodus, Interpretation (Louisville, KY: John Knox, 1991), 16-17; cf. idem, "Suffering God and Sovereign God in Exodus: A Collision of Images," HBT 11 (1989): 44-47, 51-52. As Fretheim in his Exodus, 16, noted, the book of Exodus is enclosed by two speeches of divine self-portrayal (3:7-10; 34:6-7; cf. 2:23-25). The first speech portrays God as a sovereign, and his sovereignty is evident in the divine initiative, the setting of the agenda, the will to deliver Israel, and the announced ability to accomplish it. Alongside this, however, as Fretheim also noticed, there are images that are not commonly associated with sovereignty, that is, images of grace, love, and mercy. Fretheim, Exodus, 16-17, rightly mentioned: "It is a divine sovereignty qualified by divine suffering, by a divine move of compassion, that enters deeply into the sufferings of the people," which is in harmony with the second speech of divine self-portrayal. Henry Leopold Ellison, Exodus, DSB (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster, 1982), 201, mentioned the divine self-portrayal in connection with the tabernacle: "The history of Christian theology shows that man cannot fathom the mystery of God's love and working, but just as the cross stands as the assurance of God's forgiveness going out to all men today, so the tabernacle with its ritual served God's first people Israel in past centuries." Note also Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 127: "The glory of the cross is what it reveals about God's character: He is willing to pay a staggering cost to maintain his absolute integrity as the God of love, who simultaneously maintains justice and offers mercy."
intercession for the Israelites when they have rebelled at Kadesh. The meaning and effect of God's bearing of the people's sins is made clear by the parallel in Num 14:19 between "forgive (סָלַח) the culpability of the people" and "you have borne (נָשָׂא) this people." This is because "forgiving (סָלַח) the (culpability) of the people is functionally equivalent to bearing (נָשָׂא) it (understood כְּעון) for them." Unlike [the high priest or] the priests," thus, "who bear the (culpability) of the people as part of the cultic process ([Exod 28:38;] Lev 10:17) that is only prerequisite to [acceptance (רָצוֹן) or] forgiveness (נָשָׂא), YHWH both bears and forgives כְּעון."739

When Yahweh forgives (סָלַח) the Israelites (Num 14:20), he demonstrates mercy that he has previously proclaimed to Moses (Exod 34:6-7a; cf. Num 14:18a), but he thereby bears the problem that this mercy can damage his reputation for justice, which he has also proclaimed to Moses (Exod 34:7b) and which Moses has reiterated to him later (Num 14:18b).740 In dealing with a nation that includes defiant sinners, God's solution for maintaining both mercy and justice is to preserve the nation but to purge the rebels...

---

736 Gane, *Cult and Character*, 334. For a more detailed interpretation, see idem, *Leviticus, Numbers*, 612.


738 Ibid.

739 Ibid. In this regard, as Olafsson pointed out in his "The Use of NŚגכ", 268-269, the entire passage of Neh 9 (esp. vss. 16-21) is enlightening: The God of forgiveness (סָלַח) in Exodus and Numbers is presented in Nehemiah as the God of forgiveness (כְּעón; vs. 17; cf. Pss 103:3; 130:4; Dan 9:9). According to J. Hausmann, "היהורָצוֹן sālah;" *TDOT*, 10:262, the term סְלִיחוֹת represents the entire sum of Israel's positive experiences of Yahweh in history. Concerning God's forgiveness, to be noted is Gane's remark: "When the Lord bears culpability (Exod 34:7; cf. Num 14:19), however, this is not prerequisite to forgiveness. It is forgiveness, which implies that when he pardons, he bears some kind of cost" (*Leviticus, Numbers*, 612-13, italics his). Here Gane mentioned the cost of God's forgiveness: (1) God's need to continue his relationship with his faulty people (Num 14:11-12, 19, 34); (2) The problem that his mercy (Exod 34:6-7a; Num 14:18a) can damage his reputation for justice (Exod 34:7b; Num 14:18b).

from it by slaying the ten negative spies and making the adult generation bear their own culpability in the wilderness until they die (vss. 22-24, 29-38).\textsuperscript{741} Thus, "all the earth shall be filled with the glory of Yahweh" (vs. 21),\textsuperscript{742} that is, his harmoniously balanced character of mercy and justice will be revealed to all people.

In the same way, God works through the sanctuary system. Gane expounded:

YHWH forgives truly guilty people at his sanctuary, in spite of the temporary consequences for himself. He is by no means ashamed of his kindness. In fact, it is a hallmark of his character, as proclaimed to Moses (Exod 34:6-7) [and then reiterated by Moses (Num 14:18)]. But it is the ritual system that explains how YHWH can maintain his justice at the same time. Although he initially bears the evils of his people through his sanctuary and their עון through his [high priest (Exod 28:38) and] priests (Lev 10:17), in a further stage enacted on the Day of Atonement, he has his sanctuary purged and the עון permanently banished [from the camp] to the wilderness (16:21-22). In this way the rituals of the Day of Atonement confirm the rightness of forgiveness already granted by YHWH so that his sanctuary is pure and his people are 'clean' from their חטאות, that is, expiable and expiated sins (vs. 30).\textsuperscript{748}

Thus, through the Hebrew cult, "the dynamics of kindness and justice" are shown in "the interactions between YHWH and his people."\textsuperscript{744} Yahweh is "not constrained by moral weakness due to his own sin or inadequate wisdom to apply justice and kindness, the two sides of love, without compromising either."\textsuperscript{745} God, as the divine King, Lawgiver and Judge (cf. Isa 33:22), is "morally responsible for his judgments, including his forgiveness of guilty people."\textsuperscript{746} He has "to deal with the cost of kindness, and there

\textsuperscript{741}Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 336; idem, \textit{Leviticus, Numbers}, 613; cf. Sakenfeld, 326-27.


\textsuperscript{743}Gane, \textit{Cult and Character}, 343.

\textsuperscript{744}Cf. ibid., 344: "In the narrative of 2 Sam 14, the dynamics of kindness and justice parallel to a significant extent the interaction between YHWH and his people."

\textsuperscript{745}Ibid.

\textsuperscript{746}Ibid.
was nobody to bear it but himself, as represented by his cult."747  "At the sanctuary," therefore, "justice and kindness were intertwined, reflecting harmonious balance in the character of God" (cf. Ps 85:10-11 [H 11-12]).748

Exodus 23:21, however, issues a warning to the Israelite people during their wilderness wandering as to the danger of rebelling against (מָרַר Hiphil plus בְּ) the angel of Yahweh (אָ מַלְיָהוֹ) whom he promised to send before them to guard them on the way and to bring them into the Promised Land (cf. vss. 20, 23).749  Von Rad pointed out that the angel of Yahweh is "the personification of Yahweh's assistance to Israel"750 and obviously "God himself in human form."751  Therefore, the angel of Yahweh "is to be obeyed, trusted, and respected" (cf. vss. 21a, 22a).752  The angel of Yahweh "will not bear their rebellion "(אֲיִשָּׂא לְפִשְׁעֲכֶם) against him, that is, "will not forgive it," since it is rebellion against God himself (cf. vs. 21b).  This is the only passage in the Pentateuch in which God's נָשָׂא of wrongdoings is denied.753

As Olafsson rightly mentioned, thus, the question arises "Why will he not forgive?" since God already established himself as forgiver of the people and their wrongdoings (cf. Exod 34:7; Num 14:18).754  Deuteronomy 29:20 [H 19] speaks of

747Ibid.
748Ibid.
749Cf. Olafsson, 212.
750Gerhard Von Rad, "אָ מַלְיָהוֹ, B. בּיָקֶפֶר in the OT," TDNT, 1:77.
752Olafsson, 213.
753Also pointed out by Olafsson (ibid.).
754Ibid.
someone who has turned away from Yahweh to serve other gods (cf. vs. 18 [H 17]), and thus whom Yahweh will not be willing to forgive (Qal inf. cstr. of סָלַח). Besides these two passages in the Pentateuch there are six passages outside that corpus not only with similar content but also with God as the subject: three passages each with נָשָׂא and with סָלַח. The determining factor of God's negative reaction is the human attitude of rebellion. The same is true with the passages outside of the Pentateuch in the OT.

In Ps 25, King David, reminding himself and then Yahweh of His merciful character, petitions to Him, "Forgive (נָשָׂא) all my sins (pl. of חַטָּאת)" (vs. 18b).

In Ps 32, David, mentioning the blessedness of the man who is forgiven by Yahweh (vss. 1, 2a), says to Him, "You forgave (נָשָׂא) the culpability of my sin (עֲוֹן חַטָּאתִי)," which 756...
came after his confession of sins and true repentance (vs. 5). In Ps 85, praising Yahweh for restoring the captivity of the people (vs. 1 [H 2]), the poet says to Him, "You have forgiven (נָשָׂא) the iniquity (עָוֹן) of your people" (vs. 2a [H 3a]). Isaiah 33:24 portrays Zion/Jerusalem restored through Yahweh's salvation, "the inhabitant" of which "shall not say, 'I am sick,'" and in which "the people who dwell" "shall be forgiven (נָשָׂא) their iniquity (עָוֹן)." Hosea the prophet admonished Israel to return to Yahweh and to ask Him to "forgive (נָשָׂא) all iniquity (עָוֹן)" (Hos 14:2 [H 3]) for reconciliation and for their blessed existence (vss. 4-7). By reminding us of Yahweh's Sinaitic self-declaration (Exod 34:7; cf. Num 14:18), the prophet Micah praises Yahweh in Mic 7:18a: "Who is a God like You, 'who forgives iniquity and passes over the rebellion' (נָשָׂא עָוֹן) of the remnant of His possession?"

Nevertheless, questioning, "Have I sinned (חָטָא)? What have I done to Thee, O

---

760 See David's experience before the confession and repentance (vss. 3-4) and his instruction after being forgiven (vss. 6a, 9). Our sins hide (סָתַר Hiphil) God's face from us (cf. Isa 59:2). If, however, we do not hide (כָּסָה Piel) our sins (vs. 5), then God covers (כָּסָה Piel) them (vs. 1) and hides (סָתַר Hiphil) his face from them (Ps 51:9 [H 11]), that is, God forgives them.

761 This verse parallels vs. 2b [H 3b], "You have covered (כָּסָה Piel) all their sin (חַטָּאת)." See also the very significant passage Ps 85:10 [H 11]: "Mercy and truth have met together; Righteousness and peace have kissed each other." Here the balance and harmony between justice and mercy, that is, the unity of the two sides of God's character is mentioned in His dealing with people.

762 Freedman and Willoughby, 36, rightly pointed out: "The focal point here is probably the parallel view of forgiveness [vs. 24b] and the healing of sickness (vs. 24a) as a sign of the messianic age."

763 Israel's asking of God to "forgive (נָשָׂא) all iniquity (עָוֹן)" (vs. 2) parallels God's promise to "heal (רָפָא) their apostasy (שׁוּבָהמְ)" (vs. 4). Thus here forgiveness is significantly associated with healing.

764 Even vss. 18b-19aα remind us of God's Sinaitic self-declaration to Moses. "He does not retain His anger (אַף) forever, because He delights in mercy (חֶסֶד). He will again have compassion upon (Piel of רַחַם) us" (Mic 7:18b-19aα; cf. Exod 34:6). The terms אֱמֶת and חֶסֶד in vs. 20 are also reminders of the Sinaitic theophany (cf. Exod 34:6). See the beautiful passage that describes God's forgiveness in a pictorial way: "He will tread (כָּבַשׁ, "subdue"; cf. Gen 1:28) our iniquities under foot. You will cast (Hiphil of שָׁל) all their sins into the depths of the sea" (Mic 7:19αβ-b).
watcher of men?" (Job 7:20a), Job complained to God in the anguish of his soul, "Why then dost Thou not (א) pardon (נָשָׂא) my פֶּשַׁע and take away (Hiphil of עָבַר) my עָוֹן?" (vs. 21a). One can say of God that He does not (א) forgive (נָשָׂא) (Josh 24:19). However, ultimately there is no difference in this understanding of God from that of Micah the prophet in Mic 7:18a. Rather God's will to forgive is thwarted by the human attitude of refusal to recognize their guilt (cf. Josh 24:20), and thus the human attitude is the determining factor of God's negative reaction.

As investigated so far, the clause נָשָׂא פֶּשַׁע, which has 31 occurrences in the OT, occurs 10 times in Leviticus, 7 times in Numbers, and 6 times in Ezekiel, and thus it occurs predominantly (23x out of the total 31) in the so-called cultic writings. Especially the clause נָשָׂא חֵטְא, which appears 9 times in the OT, is used only in Leviticus (19:17; 20:20; 22:9; 24:15), Numbers (9:13; 18:22, 32), and Ezekiel (23:49) except in Isa 53:12. More specifically, the clause נָשָׂא פֶּשַׁע occurs 17 times (out of the total 31) in cultic contexts and 12 in connection with cultic sins, and the clause נָשָׂא פֶּשַׁע occurs 6 times (out of the total 16) each in cultic contexts and in connection with

---

765 Freedman and Willoughby, 35.

766 Ibid.

767 Ibid.

768 Besides, there are three occurrences with the negative particle א attached (Ezek 18:19, 20 [2x]).

769 Including the three occurrences with the negative particle א attached.


771 Exod 28:43; Lev 7:18; 17:16; 19:8; 22:16; Num 18:1 [2x], 23; Ezek 14:10 (cf. vss. 3-4, 6-7); 44:10, 12; Hos 14:2 (cf. vss. 3, 8).

cultic sins. Thus, the clause shows a high frequency of its usage in relation to the cult, and thus it reveals its strong cultic relation.

Furthermore, its strong cultic relation is much more confirmed by its paralleling verbs. Among the paralleling verbs especially the verbs (Piel of כפר) and are closely related to the cult.

First, the close cultic relation of the verb is to be shown as follows. The verb כפר occurs 101 times in the OT; predominantly (92 times) in the Piel, 7 times in the Pual, once each in the Hithpael and in the Nithpael. Even though there


774 The paralleling verbs (in addition to כפר and סלח) are נשק (Piel; Exod 34:7; Num 14:18; cf. Nah 1:3; 2 Sam 14:9 [adj.]), סלח (Qal, Ps 32:1; Piel, 85:2 [H 3]), רכפר (Hiphil, Job 7:21; Qal, Mic 7:18) and כפר with א with attached (Qal, Ps 25:7 [cf. vs. 18]). See Fabry, "נשׂא nāšā", 27-28; Stolz, "נשׂא nśā", 772.

775 See Exod 32:30 (cf. vs. 32); Lev 5:6 (cf. vs. 1), 18 (cf. vs. 17); 10:17; cf. Num 8:19 (cf. 18:22-23).

776 See Exod 34:9 (cf. 32:32); Lev 5:18 (cf. vs. 17); Num 14:19a, 20 (cf. vss. 18, 19b); Ps 25:11 (cf. vs. 18).

777 Mandelkern, 596-97; Lisowsky, 696-97; Even-Shoshan, 560; VOT, 131, 346.

778 The Piel form appears 14 times in non-cultic contexts (Gen 32:20 [H 21]; Exod 32:30; Deut 21:8; 32:43; 2 Sam 21:3; 2 Chr 30:18; Pss 65:3 [H 4]; 78:38; 79:9; Prov 16:14; Isa 47:11; Jer 18:23; Ezek 16:63; Dan 9:24). If its subject is God, it can be translated as "forgive" (Deut 21:8; 32:43; 2 Chr 30:18; Pss 65:3 [H 4]; 78:38; 79:9; Jer 18:23; Ezek 16:63; Dan 9:24; cf. F. Maass, "כפר kpr pi. To atone," TLOT, 2:631; B. Lang, "כפר kipper," TDOT, 7:292; Gane, Cult and Character, 213, n. 65; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 126, 628; for a more precise translation of it in Deut 21:8 and 32:43 as "purge," see Gane, Cult and Character, 31, 265). If its subject is an ordinary person other than the priest, it can be translated as "appease" (Gen 32:20 [H 21]; Prov 16:14; for the interpretation of "wipe off [the wrath from] the face" in the sense of "appease," see Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 60; Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 1084; for כפר as a prerequisite to interpersonal reconciliation, see Maass, "כפר kpr pi.," 632; Lang, 292, 295-96; Gane, Cult and Character, 194; Olafsson, 258-59). However, especially when it is used in relation to Moses, though not in the cultic context, it seems to reflect the priestly cultic usage in the sense of "effect expiation" (Exod 32:30 [cf. vs. 32; 34:9]; cf. Maass, "כפר kpr pi.," 631-32; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 725, 796). The usage of the Piel form in the cultic context will be dealt with later in this chapter.

779 Exod 29:33 (cf. כפר in Lev 8:34 for the same ordination of the high priest and the priests, which will be dealt with in the text); Num 35:33 (cf. Deut 32:43; 2 Sam
is still a debate regarding the etymology and meaning of the verb, כִּפֶּר is more likely associated with Akkadian kuppuru "wipe off, cleanse/purify" rather than Arabic kafara "cover, hide." The term כִּפֶּר very frequently occurs in the so-called cultic writings, 21:3-4; Gane, Cult and Character, 31, n. 16; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 796); Prov 16:6; Isa 6:7; 22:14; 27:9; 28:18.

780 I Sam 3:14. This text says about Yahweh's decision that "the עָוֹן of Eli's house shall not be expiated for by זֶבַח or מִנְחָה forever." "Pentateuchal law does not mention a kipper ('expiation/purgation/ransom') function of well-being offerings anywhere else," but the text seems to mention it (cf. also Ezek 45:15, 17), which Gane pointed out in his Leviticus, Numbers, 304.

781 Deut 21:8. The Nithpael form of כפר is used here for the purgation/removal of moral culpability from the midst of Israel in regard to an unsolved murder, which is done through a nonsacrificial elimination ritual with a heifer (cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 67; idem, Cult and Character, 61, 265).

782 For more detailed discussions on the etymology and meaning of the verb, see Maass, "כפר kpr pi.,” 624-25; Lang, 289-90; R. Laird Harris, "כפר (kāpar) I, Make an Atonement, Make Reconciliation, Purge," TWOT, 1:452-53; Richard E. Averbeck, "כפר," NIDOTTE, 2:689-705; Jacob Milgrom, "Kipper (Heb. כפר)," Enchud, 10:1039; idem, "Atonement in the OT [כפר, kippēr].” IDBSup, 78, 80; idem, Leviticus 1-16, 1079-81; Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 56-63, 123-27; Gane, Cult and Character, 193-94; Jay Sklar, Sin, Impurity, Sacrifice, Atonement: The Priestly Conceptions, HBM 2 (Sheffield: Sheffield Phoenix Press, 2005), 1-7, 44-45; cf. BDB, 498; HALOT, 2:494-95; CAD, 8:178-80; CDA, 147; AHw, 1:442-43.

Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 57, quite convincingly demonstrated that כפר and its related forms "do not reflect the motif of covering or concealing sins, but rather the sense of cleansing, and the elimination which results from it." Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 1079, rightly observed: "In biblical poetry its parallel synonym is usually māḥā 'wipe' (Jer 18:23) or hēṣīr 'remove' (Isa 27:9), suggesting that kippēr means 'purge,' Ritual texts also support the meaning, for they regularly couple kippēr with ħitar 'purify' and ħēṭēṯ 'decontaminate' (Lev 14:48, 52, 58)." Through a survey of כפר and its juxtaposed words such as חיטא, טהר, and קידש, Kiuchi, 95-98, showed that "the beneficiary of the kipper-act is the same as the object of purification." However, Harris argued in his "כפר (kāpar) I," 452-53: "There is an equivalent Arabic root meaning 'cover' or 'conceal.' On the strength of this connection it has been supposed that the Hebrew word means 'to cover over sin' and thus pacify the deity, making an atonement (so BDB). It has been suggested that the OT ritual symbolized a covering over of sin until it was dealt with in fact by the atonement of Christ. There is, however, very little evidence for this view. The connection of the Arabic word is weak and the Hebrew root is not used to mean 'cover.'" Lang, 290, mentioned: "In contrast to the Bible, the Mesopotamian cult knows nothing of sin offering or guilt offering; the kuppuru rituals have nothing to do with any sacrificial cult; and finally, blood does not play an essential role in either the Babylonian sacrificial system or the kuppuru rituals. Despite these differences, discussed by Janowski, both he and Levine suggest an historical relationship between Akk. kuppuru and Heb. kipper." Gane also mentioned: "Whereas Heb. כפר in ritual contexts represents the goal/meaning of activity, Akk. kuppuru denotes the physical activity itself: 'wipe/rub' or 'purify by wiping' (Cult and Character, 372; cf. 192).
Leviticus (49x), Numbers (15x), and Ezekiel (6x). 783

The term כפר 784 occurs at the beginning of the sanctuary's ritual function: 785 (1)

Nevertheless, the debate on the etymology and meaning of the verb seems to be still open in that Gen 32:21 (especially in comparison with Gen 20:16, in which כשם, the derivative noun from כשם, occurs with a gift in the phrase, "a covering of the eyes") and Jer 18:23 (cf. Neh 3:37, in which כשם Piel appears as a substitute for כשם Piel) are often cited as the strongest OT support for the basic meaning "cover" (cf. Maass,"כשם," 625; Milgrom, "Kipper [Heb. כפר]," 1039), that the argument for it thus seemed to be quite reasonable and convincing, and that the protest against it seemed to be not so convincing yet (see, however, Sklar, 44-45, for a most convincing protest). Milgrom mentioned: "Perhaps both these meanings [that is, 'cover' and 'wipe'] go back to an original common notion of rubbing. Since a substance may either be 'rubbed on' or 'rubbed off,' the derived meanings 'to wipe' and 'to cover' may be complementary rather than contradictory" (ibid.). Showing that both usages are attested in Akkadian medical/magical texts, Benno Landsberger already contended that "the step between 'auswischen' [rub off] and 'ausschmieren' [rub on] is so short that we cannot distinguish between cleaning and treatment" (The Date Palm and Its By-products According to the Cuneiform Sources, ed. Ernst Weidner, AfO, Beiheft 17 [Graz: Ernst Weidner, 1967], 32; cf. 32-34). However, Milgrom observed: "In Israel . . . the meaning 'to rub off' predominates in the ritual texts, whereas that of 'to cover' probably never occurs" ("Kipper [Heb. כפר]," 1039). Against Mary Douglas's argument in her article "Atonement in Leviticus," JSQ 1 (1993-94): 116, that "cleanse" is a misleading translation of כפר and that the rendering "cover" is preferable, Gane convincingly argued that "the crucial linguistic fact remains that in Leviticus, כפר goal formulas of purification offerings include privative מן + evil, referring to removal of evil from the offerer . . . . The meaning is closer to that of Akkadian kuppuru than to Arabic kafara, 'cover'" (Cult and Character, 194, italic his). Besides, Maass, "כפר kpr pi.," 626, mentioned that "the hapax legomena כפר 'asphalt' and kpr qal 'to coat with asphalt' in Gen 6:14 represent another root; it has precise equivalents in Akk.": "kəpru II 'to coat with asphalt,'" "a denominative from kupru 'asphalt'" (cf. AHw, 1:443, 509).

Even the book of Exodus, in which כפר occurs 7 times, has the term 6 times in the cultic context (29:36, 37; 30:10 [2x], 15, 16) and once in association with the cultic sin of idolatry (32:30).

It refers to "removal, that is, expiation, of evil that stands in the way of reconciliation," but not to "atonement" in the sense of full reconciliation (Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 64; cf. 65, 249, 304; idem, Cult and Character, 194). Milgrom rendered cultic כפר as "effect purgation" (for his rendering of its first Piel perfect in Leviticus [4:20], see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 227; idem, Leviticus 17-22, 1272) whereas Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 73, argued that it means "perform rites of expiation." Kiuchi, 88 (cf. 98), translated it into "atone for" or "make atonement," against which Gane rendered it as "make expiation" (Leviticus, Numbers, 102). Gane argued that "kipper does not describe a complete process of reconciliation as 'make atonement' does, so kipper does not mean 'make atonement'" (ibid., 64). Actually, Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 1079-83, made a sharp distinction between the sense of kipper in the context of the purification offering, in which it means "purge," and other kinds of sacrifices, in which he rendered it as "atone" or "expiate." Gane, Cult and Character, 119 (cf. 120), partly agrees with Milgrom in that, even though other sacrifices, such as burnt, reparation, and even grain offerings, also accomplish various kinds of כפר on behalf of offerers, only...
purgation of the sacrificial altar for its initial consecration (Exod 29:36-37; Lev 8:15; cf. Ezek 43: 20, 26) \(^{786}\) and (2) purgation of the high priest and the priests for their ordination (Lev 8:34; cf. כָּפַר Pual in Exod 29:33). \(^{787}\)

The term כָּפַר is also used for the sanctuary's ritual function throughout the year: (1) the priest's purgation/expiation of the offerer's expiable moral faults prerequisite to Yahweh's forgiveness (סלח), \(^{788}\) (2) the priest's purgation of the offerer's physical ritual impurities prerequisite to purity (טהר), \(^{789}\) and (3) the priest's purgation of the offerer's purification offerings purge/remove evil, which is confirmed by the fact that מִן is privative, and that מִן + evil following and syntactically governed by כִּפֶּר occurs only in formulas of the purification-offering sacrifices. For a critique against Milgrom's sharp distinction, see Kiuchi, 100-101.

\(^{785}\) In this case the offerer and the officiant are the same: Moses.

\(^{786}\) Cf. כָּפַר Piel in Exod 29:36, 37, Lev 8:15, and Ezek 43:20; כָּפַר Piel in Ezek 43:26; כָּפַר Qal in Exod 29:36; בָּטָה Piel in Exod 29:36, 37, and Lev 8:15; כָּפַר Piel in Ezek 43:26. See Gane, Cult and Character, 110, 130-33, 196-97; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 164, 166. For several questions which this initial purgation of the altar raises, see Gane, Cult and Character, 131-32. For the reason of the consecration of the sacrificial altar, note Gane's argument in his Cult and Character, 9: "YHWH established the function of the outer altar as an object to which blood was applied (cf. Lev 17:11). This explains why the altar had to be consecrated to him before this function could commence (Lev 8:11, 15)."

\(^{787}\) Cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 164-66.

\(^{788}\) Purgation with a purification offering (Lev 4:20, 26, 31, 35; 5:10, 13; Num 15:25, 28 [2x]; cf. Lev 5:6; 6:30 [H 6:23]; 9:7 [2x]; 10:17; Num 6:11; Ezek 45:20), or expiation with a reparation offering (Lev 5:16, 18; 6:7 [H 5:26]; 19:22; cf. Num 5:8); cf. Gane, Cult and Character, 110-11, 119-20, 123-29; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 96-110, 118-23, 144, 177, 190-91, 533-34, 621-22; Milgrom, Leviticus I-16, 331, 410, 1079-83. For the possibility of ritual incense's expiatory function (even though outside the tabernacle), see Num 16:46-47 [H 17:11-12]; cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 645-46; idem, Cult and Character, 237-38. For Phinehas's purgation for Israel by spearing Zimri and Cozbi (outside the tabernacle) out of zeal for YHWH, see Num 25:13; cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 717-19; idem, Cult and Character, 204, 265, 331.

\(^{789}\) For the case of a mother's physical ritual impurity following her childbirth, see Lev 12:7-8; for the case of the scaly skin disease, see Lev 14:18-21, 29, 31; for the case of a man or a woman with an abnormal bodily discharge, see Lev 15:15, 30; for the case of the authorization of the Levites, see Num 8:12, 21; cf. vss. 7, 15; 19:9, 11-20. For all these cases, see Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 220-23, 246-48, 258-60, 555-56; idem, Cult and Character, 112-23. For the case of scale disease in a house resulting from fungus, see Lev 14:53; cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 248-49.
expiable moral faults or physical ritual impurities.790

The term כִּפֶּר appears in a concentrated way (16 times) for the sanctuary's annual ritual on the Day of Atonement (Lev 16; cf. 23:28), and that with remarkable variations of the syntactical construction:791 (1) purgation of the sanctuary from moral faults and physical ritual impurities,792 (2) purgation of moral faults and physical ritual impurities on behalf of the offerers,793 (3) purgation of the outer altar from moral faults and physical ritual impurities for its re-consecration,794 (4) expulsion of all of Israel's moral

790Lev 7:7; Num 28:22, 30; 29:5; 1 Chr 6:49 [H 6:34]; 29:24; Neh 10:33 [H 34]; cf. Ezek 45:15, 17. See Gane, Cult and Character, 62-63, 110-11, 130, 197; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 304, n. 13. In Lev 1:4 (כִּפֶּר Piel inf. str.) the burnt offering is assigned an expiatory function which is attested in only a few cultic texts (Lev 9:7; 14:20; 16:24) and in one narrative (Job 1:5; 42:8), as Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 153, mentioned.

791Six times with הָעָל (vss. 10, 16, 18, 30, 33b, 34; cf. 23:28), 4 with כִּפֶּר (vss. 6, 11, 17b, 24), 3 with הֹז ( nota accusativi; vss. 20, 33aa, 33ab), 3 with no object (vss. 17a, 27, 32), 2 with כ (beth loci; vss. 17a, 27); 2 with כִּפֶּר (min privativi; vss. 16, 34; cf. 30); cf. Maass, "כִּפֶּר kpr pi.," 629. For syntactic studies of prepositions in regard to כִּפֶּר, see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 255-56; idem, Studies in Cultic Theology and Terminology, 76; repr. from "Israel's Sanctuary: The Priestly 'Picture of Dorian Gray,'" RB 83 (1976): 391; Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 63-67; Kiuchi, 87-94; Gane, Cult and Character, 106-43.

792Exod 30:10 [2x] (purgation of the outer sanctum represented by the incense altar [the inner altar]); Lev 16:16 (16a, purgation of the inner sanctum; 16b, purgation of the outer sanctum); 17a (purgation of the inner sanctum); 18 (purgation of the outer altar, that is, the sacrificial altar; cf. vs. 19); 20 (purgation of the three parts of the sanctuary, that is, the inner sanctum, the outer sanctum, and the outer altar); 27 (purgation of the inner sanctum with the blood of the purification offerings of bull and goat); 33 (purgation of the three parts of the sanctuary, which is resumptively repeated in 34a); 34a (purgation of the sanctuary). See Gane, Cult and Character, 30, 45-46, 110-111, 133-35, 225-28, 277-79; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 272-73, 275-77.

793Lev 16:6, 11 (an extension of vs. 6; purgation on behalf of the priestly community), 17b (purgation on behalf of the priestly and lay communities), 24 (supplementary burnt offerings on behalf of the priestly and lay communities), 33b [2x] (33ba, purgation on behalf of the priestly community; 33bβ, purgation on behalf of the lay community); 23:28 (purgation on behalf of the Israelites). See Gane, Cult and Character, 30-31, 84-85, 98, 110-11, 129, 218-19, 221-22, 226, 230, 263, 272, 278, esp. 129; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 272-73, 275-77.

794Lev 16:18 (cf. כִּפֶּר Piel and שׁפֶּר Piel in vs. 19). See Gane, Cult and Character, 76-77, 140-41, 180-81, 228, 230, 238-39; 343-44; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 168-70, 272.
faults through the purification ritual of Azazel's goat,\textsuperscript{795} and (5) the resultant moral purification (טהר) of the Israelite people.\textsuperscript{796}

The term כפר is even used in the sense of "ransom" in relation to the cult: (1) the Levites as ransom for the Israelites,\textsuperscript{797} (2) the ransom money of a half shekel as מטבע, seized from the war against the

\textsuperscript{795}Lev 16:10. Gane convincingly argues in his Cult and Character, 265: "The customary rendering of כפר as 'atone,' coupled with the powerful association between 'atonement' and substitution in Christian theology, has obfuscated the meaning of the live-goat ritual for many Christians. But once we realize that כפר refers to removal of evil and does not specify substitution which is only one kind of 'atonement,' the purification ritual of Azazel's goat makes good sense." Gane, Cult and Character, 276-77, concluded: "Following completion of sacrificial כפר, the nonsacrificial ritual of Azazel's goat accomplishes a third stage of כפר for the moral faults (but not the physical ritual impurities) of the Israelites: expulsion of these evils from the camp to Azazel (Lev 16:5, 10, 21, 22)." For a meticulous treatment of the purification ritual of Azazel's goat, see Gane, Cult and Character, 242-66 (cf. 136); idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 273-74, 288-91, 295-97.

\textsuperscript{796}Lev 16:30 (טהר in the Piel and then in the Qal); cf. vs. 34. See Gane, Cult and Character, 82, 124-27, 129, 175, 231-34, 241, 263, 265, 274-75, 277-78, 284, 291, 293, 296, 301, 306, 310-11, 317-18, 322, 343-44.

\textsuperscript{797}Num 8:19 (cf. 18:23). This seems to be a very special case of כפר, but it makes sense in that "ransom is life for life" according to Lev 17:11 (cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 303). The Levites are to do the work of the tent of meeting on behalf of the Israelites and are to ransom (כפר) them so that no plague will strike the community if some Israelites approach (נגש Qal) the sanctuary, that is, cross boundaries of authorized access (cf. קרב Qal in Num 1:51; 3:10, 38; 18:7, 22). The Levites are in charge of guarding the sanctuary against lay encroachment at the peril of their own lives. If they don't stop the encroachment by putting the offender(s) to death (Num 1:51; 3:10, 38; 18:7), they will bear the culpability (cf. 18:23), but the other Israelites will be spared. Thus the Levites are ransom for the Israelites. See Milgrom, Numbers, 342-43, 369-71; idem, Studies in Levitical Terminology, I, 28-31; Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 555-56.

\textsuperscript{798}Exod 30:15-16 (cf. the cultic context of vs. 10, 18). In this study of the term כפר, I found that in Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers it refers to expiating/purging a person or part of the sanctuary from moral faults or physical ritual impurities. However, a special usage of כפר appears, which is closely followed by the sg. or pl. of נשא ("life"), even though it does so only once in each of the books (Exod 30:15-16; Lev 17:11; Num 31:50). For the connection between kipper for life (kipper al nepeš) and "ransom," see Gane's argument in his Leviticus, Numbers, 303-304: "Exodus 30 nails down the connection between kipper for life and 'ransom.' God stipulates that when the Israelites take a census, 'each one must pay the LORD a ransom [koper] for his life [nepes] at the time he is counted. Then no plague will come on them when you number them' (Ex. 30:12). Here the word for 'ransom' is the noun from the root kpr. Verses 15 and 16 use the Piel verb from the same root to describe the function of the same ransom: 'to ransom [kipper] your lives [pl. of nepes]' (cf. Num 31:50)." See also Milgrom, Leviticus
Midianites,799 and (4) the sacrificial blood on the altar.800

The close relation of the root כפר to the cult is also clearly shown by its derived nouns and their usage: כפר, 801 תקפר, 802 and כפר. 803

I-16, 1082-83; Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 67-68.

799Num 31:50 (cf. the cultic context of vss. 51-54 and the terminology in vs. 54, which exactly corresponds to that in Exod 30:16). See Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 771.

800Lev 17:11. See Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 302-305. For an exegetical study of Lev 17:11, see Kiuchi, 101-109. As Gane, Cult and Character, 171, contended, the rationale in Lev 17:11 that blood carries life and therefore Yahweh assigned it to ransom human lives on the altar stands not only behind the prohibition against eating the blood of well-being offerings in particular and blood in general (vss. 10, 12; cf. 13-14; 3:17; 7:26-27) but also behind the command to bring all the animal sacrifices to Yahweh's altar in the sanctuary (17:3-9). Kiuchi, 107, argued that "the principle of substitution is at work: animal life takes the place of human life." "The 'ransom' effect of blood in Leviticus 17:11," thus, "applies to all Israelite blood sacrifices" (Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 304; cf. Harris, 453). However, the effect of blood manipulation should not be identified with the concept of kipper, even though it certainly constitutes the central part of the concept of kipper, as mentioned by Kiuchi, 98.

801The term כפר as the plural of כפר occurs 8 times in the OT: 3 times each in relation to the purification offering ("a purification offering for purgation" in Exod 29:36 and "the purification offering of purgation" in Exod 30:10 and Num 29:11, which designates "the two special purification offerings performed on the Day of Atonement, one [i.e., with a bull] on behalf of the priests and the other [i.e., with a goat] on behalf of the lay community" [Gane, Cult and Character, 221; cf. 218, 222]) and especially in the phrase "Day of Atonement/Purgation" (Lev 23:27, 28; 25:9), and once each in relation to the reparation offering ("the ram of purgation" in Num 5:8; cf. Gane, Leviticus, Numbers, 520) and in the expression "atonement money" for the service of the tent of meeting (Exod 30:16). Thus, the term is totally related to the Hebrew cult. See Maass, "כפר kpr pi.,” 625-26; Lang, 299.

802The term כפר occurs 27 times in the OT: predominantly (18x) in Exodus (25:17, 18, 19, 20 [2x], 21, 22, 26:34; 30:6; 31:7; 35:12; 37:6; 7, 8, 9 [2x]; 39:35; 40:20), 7 times in Leviticus 16 (vss. 2 [2x], 13, 14 [2x], 15 [2x]), and once each in Numbers (7:89) and in 1 Chronicles (28:11). It always refers to the golden cover of the ark of the covenant in the most holy place of the tabernacle or temple and thus it is a terminus technicus for the cover of the ark. Harris, 453, argued: "The translation 'mercy seat' does not sufficiently express the fact that the lid of the ark was the place where the blood was sprinkled on the day of atonement. 'Place of atonement' would perhaps be more expressive." Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 63, contended that "the kappôret was so called because of its function as that artifact related to the granting of expiation, and not because of its structure" (cf. Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 1014). For other interpretations of כפר, see Lang, 298; Maass, "כפר kpr pi.,” 626.

803The term כפר occurs 13 times in the OT and it signifies "ransom" (11x; Exod 21:30; 30:12; Num 35:31, 32; Job 33:24; 36:18; Ps 49:7 [H 8]; Prov 6:35; 13:8; 21:18; Isa 43:3) or "bribe" (2x; 1 Sam 12:3; Amos 5:12; cf. Job 36:18; Prov 6:35). The term
As shown so far, the concept of כפר is directly related to physical ritual impurities or expiable moral faults. Jay Sklar convincingly has shown that both major impurities and inadvertent sins not only endanger (requiring פֶרכֺּ) but also pollute (requiring purgation) and that they require a sacrificial כִּפֶּר-rite, that is, כפר-purgation, the dual role of which is due to the dual role of life-containing blood, which both purifies and ransoms. Especially the ritual activity of eating the flesh of the outer altar purification offering was necessary for the priests to bear (תָשׂא) the culpability (עון) of the people, and by so doing, the priests effect the purgation (כפר) process on their behalf (cf. 10:17b) by which Yahweh through his חֶסֶד (Exod 33:6-7; Num 14:18-19; cf. Prov 16:6) extends forgiveness (סלח) to his people. As clearly shown now, therefore, the verb occurs in parallel with the terms פָּדָע ("deliver") in Job 33:24 and פָּדָה ("redeem") in Ps 49:7 (cf. in Exod 21:30). Lang, 301 argued that it "is a legal term" (cf. also Maass, כפר pi., 626). Maass, כפר pi., 625 (cf. 626), contended that it "has nothing to do with the cultic realm," that it "should more likely be regarded as a secondary derivation from kpr pi. (before its cultic fixation)," and thus that the derivation of the verb כפר from the noun כפר "is usually refuted." However, Harris, 453, contended that the verb כפר "is never used in the simple or Qal stem [contra HALOT, 2:494; CHALOT, 163; DCH, 4:455], but only in the derived intensive stems," and that the "intensive stems often indicate not emphasis, but merely that the verb is derived from a noun whose meaning is more basic to the root idea." Thus, Harris here continued: "From the meaning of kōper 'ransom,' the meaning of kāpar can be better understood [pro BDB, 497; Eichrodt, 2:444]. It means 'to atone by offering a substitute" (453; cf. also Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, 61-62). In this regard, Milgrom's argument, Studies in Levitical Terminology, I, 30-31, is to be noted: "The case of kippur money is more informative since it relates כפר לפשisateur (Exod 30:15, 16) and כפר נשוא (vs. 12). Thus the many-faceted root כפר is tied by context to its qal noun whose meaning is undisputed, i.e., kippur money as ransom. Therefore, there exists the strong possibility that all the texts which construe kippur with כפרס ('God's wrath or plague) have כפר in mind: innocent life spared by the ransom of the guilty parties or their representatives."


805 Sklar, 139-59, esp. 153-59. Kiuchi, 101, observed that the concept of cultic כפר probably consists of two main elements, purification and bearing culpability.

806 Sklar, 163-87.

807 Cf. Gane, Cult and Character, 99 (cf. 70, 96, 98, 100-105). Kiuchi, 98, argued that the priestly bearing of culpability is also done by means of reparation offering in the same manner (see Lev 5:17-18; 7:6-7). Both Milgrom and Gane did not make any mention of it (see Milgrom, Leviticus 1-16, 407-408, 410; Gane, Cult and Character, 65-67; 119-20; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 144-45), implying that Lev 10:17 does not
and even its derivatives are shown to be fundamentally and essentially related to the Hebrew cult.

Second, the close cultic relation of the verb סלך is to be shown as follows. The verb סלך occurs 46 times in the OT: 33 in the Qal and 13 in the Niphal. In addition to these verbal occurrences, the root סלך appears once as the verbal adjective סלח, and three times as the abstract substantive סלח. The adjective סלח "ready to forgive, forgiving" occurs in Ps 86:5, which describes Yahweh as good, forgiving, and abundant in kindness. The substantive סלח "forgiveness" occurs in Neh 9:17, Ps 130:4, and Dan 9:9. Nehemiah 9:17 portrays God with סלח plural as God of forgiveness (אֱלֹהִי סלחות), while Ps 130:4 and Dan 9:9 use it (sg. and pl. respectively) as the subject, which is available only from God to whom it alone belongs. The basic meaning of the verb סלך may not be entirely clear, but it is usually regarded as a terminus technicus for forgiveness, since it is used only in that sense and has only Yahweh as its subject.

apply to the reparation offering. However, to be noted are the lexical similarities between Lev 5:17-18 and 7:6-7, passages for the reparation offering, and Lev 10:17, a passage for the purification offering.

808Mandelkern, 799; Lisowsky, 998; Even-Shoshan, 809-10; VOT, 179, 460. The verb סלך in the Qal occurs 6 times each in 2 Chronicles (6:21, 25, 27, 30, 39; 7:14) and Jeremiah (5:1, 7; 31:34; 33:8; 36:3; 50:20), 5 times each in Numbers (14:19, 20; 30:5 [H 6], 8 [H 9], 12 [H 13]) and 1 Kings (8:30, 34, 36, 39, 50), 3 times in 2 Kings (5:18 [2x]; 24:4), twice in Psalms (25:11; 103:3), and once each in Exodus (34:9), Deuteronomy (29:18 [H 19]), Isaiah (55:7), Lamentations (3:42), Daniel (9:19), and Amos (7:2). The verb סלך in the Niphal occurs 10 times in Leviticus (4:20, 26, 31, 35; 5:10, 13, 16, 18; 6:7 [H 5:26]; 19:22) and 3 times in Numbers (15:25, 26, 28).


810Cf. Hausmann, 262-63; Stamm, "slaḥ," 800-801; Kaiser, "סלח (sālah)," 626.

811Cf. Hausmann, 259; Stamm, "slaḥ," 797-98.

812Cf. Hausmann, 259; Stamm, "slaḥ," 798; Kaiser, "סלח (sālah)," 626; Olafsson, 265. Hausmann, 259, observed: "It is striking that there is no evidence of secular use. Rather, the one who grants slaḥ is consistently Yahweh, and slaḥ is not used in reference to forgiveness among human beings." Stamm, "slaḥ," 798, also mentioned: "sālah is the only OT term for 'to forgive'. . . . It has only Yahweh as subj.
The root סלח is utilized for the following main areas:

denial of forgiveness,
granting of forgiveness, Yahweh's willingness to forgive, and plea for forgiveness.

Especially to be noted is the granting of forgiveness in the cultic text, which has all 13 occurrences of סלח Niphal (Lev 4:20, 26, 31, 35; 5:10, 13, 16, 18; 6:7 [H 5:26]; 19:22; Num 15:25, 26, 28). The feature common to all these passages is that the prerequisite expiatory (כפר) cultic ritual is performed by the priest. Each individual the qal explicitly states Yahweh's involvement, yet the ni. also implies it unmistakably."

Then Stamm continued: "With 46 occurrences sālah is not a frequent verb and it appears much less often than appropriate for the significance of the message of forgiveness in the OT... In fact, several roughly synonymous expressions parallel the specific sālah:" (ibid.).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>225</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
case concludes with לָהֶם ולָהוֹנִים, in which the verb סָלַח is used in the Niphal, so that no direct subject is specified for it. Based on the usage of this verb elsewhere, however, though in the Qal, one may conclude that here, too, the subject of this forgiveness is none other than Yahweh.

As shown above, the verb סָלַח is closely related to the Hebrew cult. In addition, other Semitic attestations of the root סלח also show its cultic connotation and usage.

purity (ibid., 50, 52, 125).

This final element in the two-part structure of the so-called kipper formula appears only in Lev 4:1-5:13 and Num 15:22-29 for the purification offering and in Lev 5:14-6:7 [H 5:26] and 19:20-22 for the reparation offering. Cf. Gane, Cult and Character, 49, n. 13.

821 Cf. Hausmann, 260.

822 The verb סָלַח first occurs in Exodus, only once in the Qal for Moses' plea for God's forgiveness (34:9). Besides, in Numbers סָלַח Qal occurs as well (5x; 14:19, 20; 30:5 [H 6], 8 [H 9], 12 [H 13]). Thus, the usage of סָלַח Qal in the Pentateuch, including the one (Qal inf. cstr.) in Deut 29:18 [H 19], implies that the forgiver in the cases of סָלַח Niphal is Yahweh. Note also the literary position of Num 14:19-20 (סָלַח Qal) close to 15:25-26, 28 (סָלַח Niphal).

823 Cf. Hausmann, 260; Gane, Cult and Character, 51; idem, Leviticus, Numbers, 102-103; Sklar, 81-82. The passive verbal form here may function as a Semitic passivum divinum (divine passive) suggesting that the forgiving is a divine act (cf. Christian Macholz, "Das 'Passivum divinum,' seine Anfänge im Alten Testament und der 'Hofstil'," ZNW 81 (1990): 247-53, especially 248; Ranko Stefanović, The Backgrounds and Meaning of the Sealed Book of Revelation 5, AUSDDS 22 [Berrien Springs, MI: Andrews University Press, 1996], 143, 309). Macholz, 248, pointed out that סָלַח is like בָּרָא in that it takes only Yahweh as its subject (cf. also Kaiser, "סָלַח [sālah]," 626). Gane correctly mentioned: "Unlike the inevitable effect of purity from a properly performed ritual to remove physical impurity (e.g., Lev 12:7-8), forgiveness for moral fault does not automatically result from sacrifice. Since God alone decides whom to forgive, he is free to reject a hypocritical sacrifice that is unaccompanied by sincere penitence and a desire to obey him (see, e.g., 1 Sam 15:22; Isa 1:11-20)" (Leviticus, Numbers, 103).

824 Cf. Hausmann, 259; Stamm, "סָלַח slkh," 797-98; Kaiser, "סָלַח (sālah)," 626. Hausmann, 259, mentioned: "Akk. salâhu(m) probably represents the original, concrete meaning of the verb: 'asperse, sprinkle'. . . . Objects can also include cultic utensils. Differently than in Hebrew, the root slkh is used in Akkadian especially in non-religious contexts." Kaiser also noted: "The Akkadian salâhu means 'sprinkle' in cultic and medical contexts" ("סָלַח [sālah]," 626). To be noted in this vein is Gane's argument in his Cult and Character, 52: "Although we naturally tend to think of forgiveness in legal terms, another metaphor may stand behind סָלַח. The Akkadian cognate salâhu refers to sprinkling water or other substances for purificatory or apotropaic purpose, or 'to moisten,
Furthermore, as Stamm contended, prayers, in which the term סָלַח and/or its derivatives occur(s), are related to and more or less bound to the cult. 825

Therefore, in light of the observations so far, F. Stolz was right in arguing that the expressions אָסַפְתָּא/אָסַפְתָּא אָסַפְתָּא clearly belong to cultic phraseology. 826 As previously observed, just as the clauses אָסַפְתָּא/אָסַפְתָּא אָסַפְתָּא occur frequently not only in cultic contexts but also in relation to cultic sins per se, so the clause אָסַפְתָּא אָסַפְתָּא is exclusively (except in Isa 53:12) used in the so-called cultic writings (Leviticus, Numbers, and Ezekiel) just like their frequently occurring clause יַעַשׂ אָסַפְתָּא. Thus, the clauses יַעַשׂ אָסַפְתָּא and אָסַפְתָּא אָסַפְתָּא seem to be specifically employed to underscore the cultic intention of the Suffering Servant Poem.

Significantly, although the clause יַעַשׂ אָסַפְתָּא is not employed here, forgiveness has been provided for יַעַשׂ (Isa 53:5 [pl.], 8 [sg.]) and thus for יָשִׁיָּה (vs. 12). This is really innovative, since forgiveness has never been granted to יָשִׁיָּה through the Hebrew cult, 827 despite the usage in the LXX's אָסַפְתָּא וּאָסַפְתָּא. 828

wet, saturate a dressing.' Although Biblical Hebrew uses the root only in an extended sense that has to do with restoration of the divine-human relationship, the original basic idea may have been 'washing away' sin." See also AHw, 2:1013.

825Stamm, "סָלַח slh," 800. See 1 Kgs 8:30, 34, 36, 39, 50 (//2 Chr 6:21, 25, 27, 30, 39); Neh 9:17; Pss 25:11 (cf. vss. 7, 18); 86:5; 103:3; 130:4; Dan 9:9, 19.

826Stolz, "נָשָׂא nś̄.general," 772; cf. Knierim, Die Hauptbegriffe, 50-54, 114-19, 193-94, 202-204, 216-23, 226; Mowinckel, 210. For the LXX's αυξαφερω of the MT's יָשִׁיָּה in Isa 53:11 and יָשִׁיָּה in vs. 12 and its cultic implications, see Ekblad, 259-60, 265. Ekblad, 260, argued: "From the context it appears that αυξαφερω is best rendered by the English 'take upon himself.' . . . it must be kept in mind that αυξαφερω clearly evokes the ritual offering of sacrifices in the Septuagint. In the Greek Pentateuch it is the technical term used to describe the priests offering of sacrifices. Its use here and in 53:12 is hardly accidental and clearly reflects intertextual exegesis that links the servant's work to that of Israel's priests." Ekblad, 265, again maintained: "In the LXX αυξαφερω occasionally matches the MT's יָשִׁיָּה. The LXX's verb choice here clearly reflects both contextual exegetical harmonizing with 53:11 and intertextual exegesis with the scriptures involving ritual sacrifice evoked in 53:11."

827As Koch, "חָטָא chātā." 315-16, rightly asserted, the usage of יָשִׁיָּה in the Suffering Servant Song is unique in that Isa 53:12 is the only passage in which (1) a person bears the יָשִׁיָּה of others, (2) as a result he suffers undeservedly and intensely, and (3) above all things, he ultimately dies. See also Hamilton, "יָשִׁיָּה," 163.

828For more in detail, see Gane, Cult and Character, 295-98; idem, Leviticus,
as already mentioned. It is also significant that, although expiation through the Hebrew cult essentially focuses on Israel as the covenant people of Yahweh, forgiveness has been provided for the "many" through the Servant. The Servant of Yahweh went above and beyond the scope of the Hebrew cultic system by providing forgiveness for the "many" beyond Israel as well as by forgiving פֶּשַׁע, as in Exod 34:7 (but not in Lev 4-5, etc.). In this Servant who bears their sins and carries their pains/diseases, and thus who makes forgiveness and healing available to them, can we recognize the God by whom the Israelites are borne and carried, that is, the merciful, living God contrasted with the useless, burdensome idols of the Babylonians in Isa 46?829 And in this Servant as "the plenipotentiary of God,"830 can we recognize the God who bears/carries sins in Exod 34:7, that is, the God who is just but merciful, who is merciful but just, and who is just and merciful? Then, what is the identity of the Servant? Is he God in human flesh, God the incarnated (cf. his whole "righteous" life [Isa 53:7, 9b, 11]; his life after death [vs. 10]; his exaltation831 [52:13b, "high and lifted up, and greatly exalted"])? In the Numbers, 280-83.

829Cf. Hanson, 18-19.

830In the words of Mowinckel, 256.

831Oswalt also observed: "One must not overlook the significance of these words. 'High and lifted up' (rwm and nś) are used in combination four times in this book (and no place else in the OT). In the other three places (6:1; 33:10; 57:15) they describe God. Whom do they describe here? The same point may be made concerning exalted. The section 2:6-22 speaks forcefully against every exaltation of the human; vs. 17 says that God will humble the exaltation of man, so that only God will be lifted up. Is it here, then, being said that the nation of Israel will be exalted to the place of God? Is it a prophet of Israel? In each case the answer must be no. This is the Messiah or no one. Paul's great hymn in Phil 2:5-11 is almost certainly a reflection on this passage (taking the form of a slave,... he humbled himself), and his declaration that God has 'highly exalted' Jesus (vs. 9) gives us his understanding of the referent here" (378-79). Cf. also Acts 2:33-34. As Oswalt rightly indicated, "Dahood's argument that the text must be emended here (despite the lack of any evidence), because these words refer to God elsewhere [in 57:15a] and so could not be correct here since they refer to the Servant, is an example of altering the evidence to suit the conclusion" (ibid., 379, n. 79). See Mitchell Dahood, "Phoenician Elements in Isaiah 52:13-53: 12," in Near Eastern Studies in Honor of William Foxwell Albright, ed. Hans Goedicke (Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1971), 63, 65.
light of the unfolding drama of God's plan to redeem not only Israel but also the world in Isaiah 40-55, the vicarious expiatory role of Yahweh's Servant lies at the very heart of this prophetic message as "the exegetical key" to unlock the awesome mystery of these profound chapters.\textsuperscript{832}

**Summary**

This lexical study has been carried out by lexicographical, text-critical, and contextual investigations for nine terms (מִשְׁחַת, שֶׂה, יַזֶּה, אָשָׁם, יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ, מָשְׁחָת, חֵטְא, עָוֹן) and the three major sin terms (אָשָׁם, יַצְדִּיק, וּפּשַׁע) and the two clauses (סָבַל, עָוֹן and נָשָׂא, חֵטְא). The term מִשְׁחַת in Isa 52:14 is shown to be a noun from the verb תשָּׁחַת and thus means "disfigurement." The term seems to have cultic overtones at least for three reasons. First, another nominative מָשְׁחָת is applied in Lev 22:25 (cf. Mal 1:14) to animals unfit for sacrifice due to some physical defects, and that in synonymous parallelism with a more common term מום ("blemish/defect"). The cultic association of מָשְׁחָת is reinforced not only by the fact that its parallel term מום designates priests disqualified for his office because of certain physical defects (Lev 21:17-23) but also by the fact that מום shows itself as an antithetic parallel of תָּמִים ("unblemished/without defect"), a technical term of cultic acceptability for sacrificial animals (Lev 19:20-21; Num 19:2).

Second, the verb תשָּׁחַת Piel is significantly used with a cultic connotation by Yahweh to depict Israel's spiritual corruption due to their golden calf worship at Mt. Sinai (Exod 32:7/Deut 9:12).

Third, the verb תָּשָׁחַת also occurs with a cultic connotation in the unique text Deut 32:15, which, though irrelevant to physical requirements for sacrificial animals or priests, puts תָּשָׁחַת Piel (though not תָּשָׁחַת) in parallel with מום.

\textsuperscript{832}Cf. Childs, 418.
Isaiah, in the introduction of his prophetic book, denounced the sinful, iniquitous, and rebellious people as children who act corruptly (שָׁחַת Hiphil, Isa 1:4), and thus they were doomed to God's destruction. However, through the metaphor of transfer (נָשָׁא/סֶבֶל) not only Israel's corruption (i.e., sins) but also God's punishment upon it was transferred to Yahweh's Servant. Thus, as a result of his vicarious suffering under God's punishment, the Servant had his appearance/form "disfigured" (52:14). From the human perspective, the Servant of Yahweh was (morally and physically) suitable for neither a sacrificial victim nor a priest. However, the Suffering Servant Poem makes it clear that it is not Yahweh's Servant himself (morally; cf. 53:7, 9b) but his "appearance/form" itself (physically) that was "corrupt/disfigured," and that the disfigurement is due to his substitutionary suffering. Thus, while intentionally underscoring all the cultic overtones of the term מִשְׁחַת, the Poem does not let it go beyond the fact that the Servant of Yahweh underwent hideous and gruesome sufferings under God's judgment.

The term יַזֶּה in Isa 52:15 is a Hiphil form of the verb נָזָה. Apart from Isa 52:15, in the OT the verb נָזָה Hiphil occurs only in the Pentateuch (Lev [13x out of the total 20]; Num [5x], Exod [1x]), and that significantly as a cultic term, meaning "sprinkle." In the Pentateuch it always refers to intentional sprinkling of liquids (blood, oil, or water) in cultic contexts, and the sprinkling itself is a significant cultic performance. The sprinkling is not associated only with consecration of liquids, objects or persons, but also with purification of objects or persons, or the sanctuary itself. Ultimately the sprinkling is inextricably bound up with the כְּפָר process, in which the priest was to be involved for purification and expiation on behalf of the Israelite people and the sanctuary. Therefore, נָזָה Hiphil is without a doubt a technical cultic term in a very significant sense, and thus the verb יַזֶּה in Isa 52:15 has been generally taken to mean "sprinkle."

However, this traditional view seems to have largely been abandoned on the basis of three main reasons, and two kinds of alternatives have been basically proposed:
(1) textual emendations of the verb יַזֶּה; (2) a second root meaning for יַזֶּה derived from the hypothetical Arabic nazā, "spring/leap." As for the textual emendations, there is no scholarly unanimity of opinion as to the correct emendation, while the Arabic hypothesis is not only without any real etymological ground but also without any unanimity of opinion as to the exact force of יַזֶּה. Besides, both of the alternatives are essentially based on the LXX and thus share its weaknesses. Furthermore, Qumran Isaiah Scrolls (1QIsa and 1QIsb) read יַזֶּה, supporting the MT, and all the other ancient versions also lend support to the rendering "sprinkle," but not to the LXX.

The alleged textual problem of the term יַזֶּה itself is due to an irregular construction of יַזֶּה Hiphil with the accusative of person sprinkled, but the irregular construction is now to be regarded as "certainly possible" (cf. יָרָה Hiphil in Ps 64:4 [H 5], 7 [H 8], and Hos 6:3). Besides, the alleged textual problem is largely brought about by the difficult syntactical structure of Isa 52:14-15 in the MT (ךָכָּשׁ. . . כָּנָּה . . . כָּנָּה), which is attested by Qumran Isaiah Scrolls and the LXX. The structure seems to be the prophet's purposeful intention partly shown by the sonorous effect of alliteration in vss. 14-15 (cf. 54:9). Thus, we have to consider both of the two כָּנָּה's as corresponding to the comparative particle כָּשׁ, interpreting Isa 52:14b and 15a as parenthetical, explanatory clauses. Therefore, the interpretation is to be: "Just as previously, due to the terrible disfigurement of the Servant, many were appalled at him, so now, because of his purificatory and expiatory work for many nations, kings will shut their mouths."

The term יַזֶּה succinctly portrays the Servant's priestly activity of purification and expiation, which is also supported by the chiastic structure of Isa 52:13-15 with the parenthetical, first כָּשׁ clause as its center. Besides, the significant position and function of Isa 52:13-15, which is a kind of prologue to and a summary of the main themes (along with the motif of a great reversal) of the Poem, also supports the Servant's priestly activity of יַזֶּה. Furthermore, the correspondences between Yahweh's speech sections
(52:13-15 and 53:11b-12) seem to lend support to the rendering "sprinkle" here.

Contextually the antecedent cultic overtones in Isa 52 (vss. 1, 11) prepares us for the cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant pericope, and particularly the term יַזֶּה, in turn, for further cultic language later in the pericope.

It is so natural, therefore, that the verb יַזֶּה here should be regarded as a cultic terminus technicus in accordance with all the other passages where it is used in the OT, and that it should be interpreted in its proper cultic sense, that is, "sprinkle."

The term נְשֶׁה in Isa 53:7 alludes to a cultic animal. It is the young or kid of either sheep or goats and of either gender. In the OT the term נְשֶׁה occurs 25 times (out of 47) in cultic contexts and it is used for שְלָמִים, פֶּסַח, לָהע, זֶבַח, and חַטָּאת. Besides, the term נְשֶׁה, which occurs four times in Isaiah, is clearly used twice (apart from Isa 53:7) as a sacrifice in cultic contexts (Isa 43:23; 66:3).

Isaiah 53:7-8a gives us through its parallelism the impression that the Servant of Yahweh "was taken away"(נָקַח; Qal pass. pf. of לָקַח) "like a lamb" or "like a ewe," that is, that just like an innocent, sacrificial animal he was killed innocent. The Servant's willing and waiting submission forms a striking contrast to the iniquitous disobedience of the Israelites, whether individually or corporately, to the will of God (53:6a). Thus the Servant must have taken the place of the iniquitous, disobedient people, since they were not taken to the slaughter (cf. Jer 12:1-3, esp. 3b; Isa 65:11-12). The Servant far surpasses the cultic sacrificial animal in that he surrendered his own life as Victim to the will of God consciously, willingly and hopefully.

The term אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is a very significant cultic term. In the OT אָשָׁם occurs mostly (36x out of 46) in the so-called cultic writings, Leviticus (predominantly, 27x), Numbers (5x), and Ezekiel (4x). Besides, in 29 occurrences (apart from the one in Isa 53:10) out of the 46, אָשָׁם is employed as a technical term for an offering, i.e., reparation offering (so-called "guilt offering"). Furthermore, all the usages of אָשָׁם
"reparation" (12x) are in cultic contexts.

The אָשָׁם offering is one of the two main exclusively expiatory sacrifices, since the expiatory sacrifices are primarily the חַטָּאת and the אָשָׁם. The situations requiring the אָשָׁם offering are set out in Lev 5:14-6:7 [H 5:26], and the instructions for its ritual procedure are mentioned in Lev 7:1-7.

The answer to the question not only about the specific occurrence of אָשָׁם in the Suffering Servant Poem but also its particular cultic significance and function seems to have many dimensions. It is shown to depend not only on the understanding of the reparation offering itself in Pentateuchal ritual texts but also particularly on the Isaianic prophetic text in its own context. First, the אָשָׁם offering in the Poem may be thought to be related to the Israelites' desecration of Yahweh as "the Holy One of Israel" as well as to their desecration of the Servant, "My Servant," as his holy property. Second, the employment of the term here partially lies in its comprehensiveness to make ourselves right with God as well as our fellows. Third, אָשָׁם was probably used here to provide expiation not only for inadvertent sins but also for intentional sins, although the חַטָּאת offering also expiates some deliberate sins as well as inadvertent sins. Fourth, it is possible that the author of the Suffering Servant Poem must have known the Messianic passage Ps 40:6-8 [H 7-9] very well, and that thus he has referred to the offering אָשָׁם, which is not mentioned as an offering that God has not desired/required. Fifth, it is highly possible that the author of the Poem employed the term from the perspective of Judah's Babylonian captivity due to מעל, the key word occurring in ritual texts only with the reparation offering, which also occurs in relation to the three Judahite kings Uzziah (2 Chr 26:16, 18), Ahaz (2 Chr 28:19, 22; 29:19) and Hezekiah (2 Chr 29:6; 30:7) significantly mentioned each in the narratives of Isaiah (6, 7, and 36-39). Sixth, the use of the term אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 seems to be relevant to Israel's socio-economic injustice as a main issue for Isaiah, requiring מִשְׁפָּט, a key term in the Servant poems (42:1, 3, 4; 49:4; 53:10).
Seventh, the employment of the term אָשָׁם in Isa 53 seems to be related to the healing aspect of restoration to the covenant community and Yahweh in regard to the state of humans' mortality resulting from sin (cf. אָשָׁם for a case of physical ritual impurity in Lev 14 [9x]). Eighth, the priestly doctrine of repentance seems to be related to the use of אָשָׁם in the Servant Poem, because the doctrine demands remorse (ממֶס 'feel guilt'; due to the action of conscience) and rectification (מְשָׁפָט "reparation, reparation offering"), which is reinforced by confession in Num 5:7, and that will flower in Israel's prophets.

In regard to the sacrificial death of the Servant as an אָשָׁם (vs. 10aβ), to be noted is specifically the leitmotif נָפְשׁוֹ ("his life/self") in vss. 10-12, that is, the Servant's נֶפֶשׁ. Significantly, the most basic, concrete meaning of נֶפֶשׁ is "throat (of humans or animals)," and it is an animal's throat that was slit in a sacrifice (cf. שָׁחַט, "slit the throat"; for the אָשָׁם ritual slaughter see Lev 7:2 [2x]). Sinners have incurred damages to God as well as to their community by their sinning, but Yahweh's Servant, by giving his life as Reparation Offering, makes full compensation for the damages. Thus Yahweh's Servant provided for sinners a legal aspect of restoration to the right relationship with God as well as their community. What has been left for Israel and the nations to do now is only their confession and repentance (even though, in Pentateuchal ritual texts, these precede the sacrifice), which is depicted not only in the confession of the "we" in the Suffering Servant Poem (Isa 53:4-6) but also in the prophetic appeal for repentance (שַׁבָּה) along with God's promise of forgiveness (סָלַח) in 55:7.

Concurring with most scholars who have emphasized the cultic dimension of the language in the Poem (esp. אָשָׁם), we would ask a question, "Are there any other better terms than sacrificial cultic ones to describe the substitutionary suffering and death of the Servant, which ultimately have the effect of vicarious expiation of sins not only of Israel but also of the nations?" Therefore, אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is to be interpreted as the cultic technical term for reparation offering, carrying all its cultic significance, which succinctly
and significantly reveals the Servant's vicarious expiatory death. However, אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is different from the אָשָׁם as prescribed for the Hebrew cult not only in that it is a "human sacrifice," but also in that the אָשָׁם sacrifice here is heightened to a corporate offering, whereas elsewhere in the OT the animal sacrifice is only for the individual, not part of the corporate offerings (e.g., Num 28-29). Furthermore, although the expiatory system provided for the physically, ritually impure the healing aspect of restoration to the covenant community and Yahweh, neither חַטָּאת offerings nor אָשָׁם offerings nor the Hebrew cultic system itself could provide healing even for the wounds or sicknesses/diseases which speak of humans' mortality resulting from sin. On the contrary, the vicarious suffering and death of Yahweh's Servant as an אָשָׁם provides not only the wounds but also the sicknesses/diseases (cf. Isa 53:3aβ, 4-5, 8bβ, 10aα) with healing (vs. 5b; cf. 30:26b; 33:24a), which includes spiritual restoration (e.g., Ps 103:3-4a; Isa 33:24b; cf. 53:11). In this respect also Yahweh's Servant far surpasses the Hebrew cult beyond all questions.

The term יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11, which is a Hiphil form of the verb צָדַק, seems to have legal-cultic connotations. Just as all its other verbal forms are primarily forensic, so is צָדַק Hiphil. The forensic connotation of the verb צָדַק seems to be most clearly shown in its frequent occurrences in Job, which is particularly about justice, both the possibility of righteous humans before God and the nature of divine justice. Just as the Hiphil of צָדַק never occurs in the so-called cultic writings, so does neither of the other verbal forms in the Pentateuch except Genesis. The forensic aspect of צָדַק Hiphil is more clearly shown by its contrasting parallel רָשַׁע Hiphil as well as the juxtaposition of the two contrasting legal parties צַדִּיק and עָרָשָׁ. Deut 25:1 inculcates the "universal principle" that in a legal dispute one should acquit (צָדַק Hiphil, "declare righteous") the innocent (the "righteous," צַדִּיק) and condemn (רָשַׁע Hiphil, "declare guilty") the guilty (the "wicked," רָשַׁע). The forensic connotation of צָדַק Hiphil is also confirmed by its related terms רִיב, שָׁפַט, מִשְׁפָּט.
and צְדָקָה. Therefore, the verb צָדַק is definitely a legal/forensic term.

Cultic associations of the legal term צָדַק seem to be possible only because of the wide semantic range of the rootצדק, which is shown by its parallel occurrences with terms for cleanliness/purity, that is, נָקִי (cf. its by-form נָקַ,), בר (cf. its verb בָּרַר), טָהֵר, and נָקִי. Especially to be noted is that the verb רָפֵא and its derivatives, being used more broadly also for material/physical or ethical/moral cleanness, are the typical, technical OT terms for cultic-ritual cleanness or cleansing. The verb רָפֵא is significantly used not only for the cleansing of the sanctuary (specifically the outer altar, Lev 16:19) but also for the resultant communal moral cleansing/purification of the Israelite people on the Day of Atonement (vs. 30).

In the Hebrew cult physical ritual impurities are strictly differentiated from moral faults. After his cultic investigation the priest could pronounce his cultic declarations only in certain cases of physical ritual cleanness (טָהֵר Piel) or uncleanness (טָמֵא Piel). As for the cases of moral cleanliness, however, there is not a single case for the priestly declaration of cleanness or forgiveness in the OT. On the contrary, the Servant of Yahweh is portrayed in the Suffering Servant Poem as pronouncing his declaration in regard to the moral cleanness of the "many" as a result of his moral cleansing of them. Thus Yahweh's Servant clearly seems to be far above and beyond the priest of the Hebrew cultus.

The Servant's act in regard to יַצְדִּיק cannot be an acknowledgment that the "many" are righteous by themselves, because the Poem, by mentioning their iniquities (53:11bβ) and sin (vs. 12cα), makes it clear that they have been guilty. Thus, from a purely legal perspective, the "many" should be acknowledged and declared guilty/unrighteous, since the priest's declaring someone righteous in a judicial case is a legal acknowledgment of someone's innocence, but not making someone righteous. On the contrary, in the case of Isa 53:11bα, the Servant's declaring the "many" righteous
involves making them righteous.

Therefore, here in the Suffering Servant Poem, another perspective, that is, a cultic perspective should be also taken into consideration. Such a fact seems to be hinted even in the literary features of vs. 11b, not only by the parallelism of vs. 11bα-β but by the internal chiasm of vs. 11b. The cultic perspective of vs. 11b seems to be much more confirmed by the chiasm that it makes with vs. 12c, where the Hebrew cult clearly stands in the background. Verses 11b-12c also seem to make a chiasm with the Servant as Priest as well as Victim. Thus vs. 11bα should be interpreted in the sense that the Servant "shall declare/make the many righteous" by his taking upon himself the sins of the many.

The term יַצְדִּיק seems to indicate a priestly-judicial function, particularly in light of the fact that by bearing their iniquities the Servant justifies the many. Therefore, although a very significant text of promise Isa 45:25 leaves us to question the "how" of "all the seed of Israel" being justified, we now come to see the Suffering Servant Poem answer it. Isa 53:11bα reveals not only the objects of the acquittal and justification but also its agent, whereas vs. 11bβ reveals the ground for it. Yahweh's Servant, the Righteous One, acquits and justifies the many by bearing their sins. The many who are acquitted and justified seem to be portrayed in vs. 12a as a portion or booty of the Servant as Victor. The answer of Isa 53:11b seems to be confirmed in the chapter following the Poem, specifically by the righteous standing of "the servants of Yahweh" in 54:14 and 17.

The term יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 is a significant term with legal-cultic connotations, not only in that it denotes the Servant's function of judicial character as Priest but also in that it has a firm basis in his vicarious expiatory sacrifice as Victim. Such a legal-cultic interpretation of יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 seems to be supported by another significant OT passage Dan 8:14, which shows a unique usage of the legal term יִצְדָּק (נִצְדַּק), and that not
only in a cultic context but also with the sanctuary as its subject. For the term ניצדק in Dan 8:14 seems to reflect Daniel's understanding of its legal-cultic connotations. Although righteousness and expiation are not closely related in the OT, the term יツציק seems to be employed in the Suffering Servant Poem to emphasize the forensic aspect of his justifying work as Priest, which is accomplished by his vicarious expiatory sacrifice as Victim.

The term יניצג in Isa 53:12 is a Hiphil form of the verb ינפגע, the basic meaning of which is "meet." To be noted in connection with יניצג here is the usage of ינפגע Qal employed with a positive sense that refers to a meeting or an encounter with request, and thus that means "entreat, press, plead." The verb ינפגע Qal with the preposition ב is used in the sense of intercession in Jer 7:16 and 27:18. Significantly ינפגע Qal with ב parallels ינפגע Hithpael with ינפגע in Jer 7:16. The parallel verb ינפגע Hithpael, which is the most common term for "pray" in the OT, is frequently used for intercessory prayers (39x out of 80), but it also points to the direction of priestly intercessions (10x).

The verb ינפגע Hiphil with the preposition ל in Isa 53:12 is used in the sense of intercession, specifically as a priestly intercession, as the immediately preceding and paralleling cultic clause (חטآنשא) in the same verse suggests. However, the Servant's intercession is far above and beyond a priestly intercession, because he did not intercede for the transgressors simply with prayers of intercession or rituals but with his life, suffering, and death. His intercession was done by bearing the sin of the many, which is clearly emphasized by the semantic connection (between vss. 6 and 12) made by the same verb ינפגע Hiphil. In verse 6 God's will through the Servant is expressed by ינפגע Hiphil plus ב, whereas in verse 12 the Servant's will is expressed by ינפגע Hiphil plus ל. The semantic connection evidently shows that there was a mutual agreement between God's will and the Servant's, that is, the agreement regarding the vicarious event. The Servant was to be the vicarious 'intercessor' (מนอกจาก, Hiphil ptep. m. s. of יפגע; cf. Isa 59:16).
Strictly speaking, originally the verb פָּגַע in the Qal or in the Hiphil may not be a cultic technical term per se. Especially the usage of פָּגַע Qal plus בְּ in Jer 7:16, however, points to the direction of a priestly intercession by its paralleling major intercession verb פָּלַל Hithpael with בַּעַד. Besides, one of two basic distinct meanings of פָּגַע Hiphil is "entreat passionately" or "intercede." Thus, the verb פָּגַע is similar in its usage to another major intercession verb עָתַר (Qal as well as Hiphil). So פָּגַע Hiphil with לְ plus someone (Isa 53:12) points to the Servant's intercession, more specifically his priestly intercession. Therefore, it seems quite natural that the verb פָּגַע Hiphil, although it may not be a cultic technical term, is elevated to a cultic status through Isaiah's unique and innovative employment of it and thus that it is clearly used here with a cultic connotation.

In the Suffering Servant Poem three major sin terms (חֵטְא, עָוֹן, and פֶּשַׁע) significantly occur. They are generally regarded as representative terms for sin in the OT, and they seem to be complementarily used in the OT, a phenomenon evident in that they occur together 15 times almost as a triad. Although the formulaic triad may have the effect of summarizing the totality of moral faults, the three terms have been very recently shown especially by Gane to represent distinct categories of evil with different dynamic properties, which follow different trajectories into the sanctuary and then out of it and away from the Israelite camp on the Day of Atonement.

The significant sin term חֵטְא occurs in Isa 53:12, the root of which is חטא, the most frequent Hebrew root for sin. The concrete basic meaning of חטא is "miss (a mark or a way)," where the concept of failure is implied. Thus, originally sin as denoted by חטא was viewed as a failure, a lack of perfection in carrying out a duty. Even though the aspect of failure to keep the law cannot be excluded, the foremost notion is failure of a person-to-person or a person-to-God relationship. Sin as denoted by חטא includes both inadvertent and intentional sins.

In the OT the root חטא and its derivatives provide the most common means of
expressing religious disqualification of specific human acts and modes of conduct. All of its verbal forms and nominal forms (except חַטָּאָה) are shown to have close cultic relations, differing only in degree. Especially two of its verbal forms (Piel and Hithpael) and its predominant noun חַטָּאת show very close cultic relations. Two verbal conjugations of חָטָא (Piel [so-called "privative Piel"] and its reflexive Hithpael) signify the purgation of sin or uncleanness through the cult.

The representative noun חַטָּאת, just like חֲטָאָה, has the peculiarity that it can refer to either sin or purification offering. Especially in Leviticus and Numbers חַטָּאת appears many times alternating in meaning between "sin" (24x) and "purification offering" (96x).

Therefore, not only the verb חָטָא but also its nouns became the most frequent words in the language of the Hebrew cult. It has been recently pointed out by Gane that, in the Pentateuchal ritual law, the חטאת sin is restricted to expiable nondefiant sins, excluding sins committed "high-handedly," that is, defiantly. The expiable nondefiant sin חטאת is removed from its perpetrators by their purification offerings throughout the year (Lev 4:26; 5:6, 10), purged from the sanctuary and camp on the Day of Atonement (16:16, 21), and consequently cleansed from the people (vss. 30, 34).

In the OT specifically the term חֵטְא in Isa 53:12 occurs predominantly (17x out of 33) in the Pentateuch and 9 times in the so-called cultic writings. The term occurs very frequently (at least 13x) in cultic contexts, 6 times for cultic sins per se, and 3 in association with idolatry through pagan cults. Particularly significant is its frequent association with the verb נָשָׂא (9x), exclusively in the so-called cultic writings (except Isa 53:12). Thus, חֵטְא is considered as the most momentous of the derivatives of חטא, which occurs particularly in the realm of the Hebrew cult. Therefore, it can be concluded that the term חֵטְא (along with all the other cultic-related derivatives of חטא) without doubt belongs to cultic terminology.

Another significant sin term עָוֹן occurs twice in the Poem (Isa 53:5 [sg.], 6 [pl.]).
Its verb עָוָה has the basic meaning "bend, twist, distort," from which the figurative sense "distort, make crooked, pervert" derives, and when the distortion or perversion pertains to the law, it means "do wrong, commit iniquity." The masculine noun עָוֹן as the main derivative of the verb עָוָה is shown to be a central term for human sin, guilt, and fate in prophetic and cultic writings. Being rarely used for iniquity or guilt before humans (1 Sam 20:1, 8; 25:24), the term עָוָה is almost always used to indicate iniquity or guilt before God, and thus it is a very religious term.

The term עָוָה occurs 7 times (out of 231) for cultic sins, 28 in association with idolatry through pagan cults, and 38 in cultic contexts. The term עָוָה appears 84 times (out of 231) with the verb קָפַל or its nouns חָטָאת, חֵטְא, and חַטָּאָה that belong to cultic terminology. Therefore, just as the verb קָפַל and its nominal derivatives belong to cultic terminology, so does the term עָוָה.

Especially to be noted in this connection is that in Lev 1-16 the term עָוָה is restrictedly used for blame in the sense of "culpability," that is, "consequential liability to punishment" that a perpetrator must bear (קָפֵל; 5:1, 17; 7:18) unless a priest bears it (10:17). In the Hebrew cultic system עָוָה is removed from its perpetrators by their purification offerings throughout the year (Lev 5:1, 6), borne by priests (10:17), and then purged from the camp on the Day of Atonement (16:21). Thus, it is very significant that almost one-fifth (44x) of all occurrences of the term עָוָה are in the book of Ezekiel in the light of the fact that, for this prophet, who himself comes from a priestly family, עָוָה constitutes "the great problem upon which life turns."

Yet another significant sin term פֶּשַׁע occurs twice in the Suffering Servant Poem (Isa 53:5 [pl.], 8 [sg.]), just as its verbal form (פָּשַׁע Qal act. ptcp. m.p.) does in vs. 12 (2x). The verb פֶּשַׁע, which means "rebel, revolt," is used in the OT for rebellion not only against an earthly suzerain (1 Kgs 12:19//2 Chr 10:19; 2 Kgs 1:1; 3:5, 7; 2 Kgs 8:20; 22//2 Chr 21:8, 10) but also against God (predominantly [24x out of the total 28] in the
Prophets; cf. most frequently [9x] in Isaiah). Thus, the verb פָּשַׁע is essentially a covenant term.

The masculine segholate פֶּשַׁע ("rebellion, revolt"), just like its verb, is used in the OT (predominantly in the Prophets [44x out of 93]; cf. most frequently [11x] in Isaiah), but almost all the occurrences are used for rebellion against God. The term פֶּשַׁע entails the violation of a sacred covenant, and in a fundamental sense it represents covenant treachery, that is, breaking the covenant, the main pillar of Israelite religion. Thus, the term פֶּשַׁע is the key word for sin to the prophets, and both the verb and the noun occur predominantly in the prophetic books (60x out of 133x; cf. most frequently [20x] in Isaiah). The prophets defined their prophetic mission as "notification of פֶּשַׁע" (see, e.g., Mic 3:8; Isa 58:1), and thus their ministries devoted significant attention to Israel's covenant treachery (see, e.g., 2 Kgs 17:13; Jer 11:2-10). They indicted Israel, Yahweh's vassal for disrupting their covenant relationship with Yahweh, Israel's suzerain.

In the OT פֶּשַׁע is the most serious term for sin not only because of Israel's covenant relationship to Yahweh but also because of the motives of its perpetrators and their willfulness. The term פֶּשַׁע ultimately signifies the revolt/rebellion against God as a deliberate act of disloyalty and disobedience to him. Especially to be noted in this connection is the recent observation that in the Pentateuchal ritual law the term פֶּשַׁע shows up only twice (Lev 16:16, 21) in the context of the Day of Atonement and that פֶּשַׁע as the "inexpiable defiant sin" does not reach the sanctuary through daily purification offerings throughout the year.

It seems to be an admitted fact that the term פֶּשַׁע is fundamentally and essentially a covenant term. However, it is not to be overlooked that the covenant is inextricably bound up with the cult, and thus that the cult cannot be thought of without being associated with the covenant. The verb פָּשַׁע and the noun פֶּשַׁע show their cultic relations through their association with the other two major sin terms that belong to cultic
terminology. In addition, they occur quite often in cultic contexts as well as in association with sins of idolatry through the pagan cult. Furthermore, the three major verbs for sin occur together, though once, in the OT, and that in the cultic context (1 Kgs 8:47), where confession of sins are made. Also to be noted is that, although not reaching the sanctuary via daily purification offerings, the פֶּשַׁע sin somehow defiles the sanctuary so that it must be purged from the sanctuary and from the camp through cultic rituals on the Day of Atonement (Lev 16:16, 21). Especially to be noted in this connection is that the three major nouns for sin occur together in the significant passages of the solutions to the sin problem (Lev 16:21; Isa 53:5-12; Dan 9:24), and that against the cultic background. Only through Pentateuchal ritual law פֶּשַׁע is distinctly identified as "inexpiable defiant sin," which does not reach the sanctuary via purification offerings throughout the year, and thus the term פֶּשַׁע as such a special term distinguished itself in the Hebrew cult. Therefore, it is scarcely too much to say that פֶּשַׁע is a quasi-cultic term in the OT.

The three major terms for sin are shown to have close cultic relations, differing only in degree. Their close cultic relations are much more confirmed by their usage in cultic clauses that significantly occur in the Suffering Servant Poem.

There are two significant cultic clauses involving sin terms in the Suffering Servant Poem: עָוֹן סָבַל (Isa 53:11) and אֲשֶׁר נָשָׂא (vs. 12). The usage of סָבַל and נָשָׂא not only in ANE texts but also in Isa 46 (vss. 4, 7) and 53 (vss. 4, 11-12) indicates that the clause עָוֹן סָבַל is without a doubt interchangeable with the clause עָוֹן נָשָׂא, and that they can be dealt with together. For convenience' sake, thus, all the סָבַל/נָשָׂא + sin clauses were dealt with together here in the sense of sin-bearing.

The clause אֲשֶׁר נָשָׂא occurs predominantly in the so-called cultic writings, and especially אֲשֶׁר נָשָׂא is exclusively (except in Isa 53:12) used in them. The clause אֲשֶׁר נָשָׂא frequently occurs not only in cultic contexts but also in relation to cultic sins.
Therefore, the clause shows a high frequency of its usage in relation to the cult, and thus it reveals strong cultic relations.

Furthermore, its strong cultic relation is much more confirmed by its paralleling verbs, especially כִּפֶּר (כָּפַר Piel) and סָלַח. The verb כִּפֶּר is the key term for purification/expiation in the cult, and the verb סָלַח Niphal is exclusively used for the granting of forgiveness in cultic texts (Lev [10x]; Num [3x]).

It can be concluded, therefore, that חֵטְא and עָוֹן נָשָׂא belongs to cultic phraseology, and that the clauses עָוֹן and חֵטְא נָשָׂא seem to be specifically employed to underscore cultic intentions of the Suffering Servant Poem.

The subject of the clause (the sinner himself/herself or someone else) has been regarded as the decisive factor to determine its meaning, but the context (with the subject included) should be the decisive factor to determine its precise meaning. According to the context in which the idiomatic clause occurs, the consequences of sin-bearing are diverse in the OT.

When the sinner himself/herself is the subject of the clause, there are several cases in which remedial expiation is prescribed for a person who עָוֹן נָשָׂא, thereby obviating punishment (Lev 5:1, 17; 22:16). But, in most cases remedial expiation was impossible and thus the sinner had no choice but to die or be "cut off." In the cases of the sinner's consequential sin-bearing, the sinner "carries" the weight of his/her own sin, which will ultimately lead to his/her death by human or divine agency.

When a representative in a real sense, but not the sinner himself/herself, is the subject of the clause, there are four kinds of sin-bearings: (1) prophetic symbolic; (2) priestly mediatorial; (3) divine exonerative/forgiving; (4) interpersonal reconciliatory. Priestly mediatorial sin-bearing (Exod 28:38; Lev 10:17) and divine exonerative/forgiving sin-bearing (Exod 34:7; Num 14:18) are shown to be related to the Suffering Servant Poem.
The sin-bearing of Yahweh's Servant in the Poem is shown to be significantly unique in many respects. First, the Servant (as the subject of the idiomatic clause) did sin-bearing, but he did not bear his own sins and died for them. Although he was righteous, he bore sins of the "we"/"many," suffered and died for them (Isa 53:11-12; cf. vss. 4-6, 8). In this respect especially the goat for Yahweh on the Day of Atonement (along with all the other daily expiatory sacrifices), which was slain to be offered, corresponds to the Suffering Servant who bore all the sins of wrongdoers, suffered and ultimately died on their behalf. Second, the Servant was allowed to bear others' sins and die for them (cf. vss. 6b, 10a), which is unique in that Yahweh declined not only Moses' offer of vicarious sin-bearing (Exod 32:32-33; cf. Deut 24:16) but also refuted against Israel's public consciousness of substitutionary sin-bearing (Ezek 18:19-20; cf. vss. 2-4). Third, the Servant's sin-bearing is totally different from the prophetic symbolic sin-bearing in that the Servant went far beyond symbolism to make his sin-bearing a reality of vicarious expiatory suffering and death. Fourth, the Servant's sin-bearing may share some aspects of the priestly mediatorial suffering, but unlike the priest or the high priest, the Suffering Servant went further and beyond to free others by bearing and then dying for their culpability (עָוֹן; 53:5 [pl.], 6 [sg.], 11 [pl.]), thereby obtaining for them acceptance or justification (vs. 11). As for evidence of the vicarious nature of the Suffering Servant's expiation, there is no need to look further than the fact that as Priest he bore others' sins upon himself and as Victim he died for those sins. Fifth, just as Yahweh bears sins of the people and grants forgiveness to them, so the Servant bears the sins of the "we"/"many" and makes/declares them righteous. Thus, far above and beyond the priest or the high priest the Suffering Servant uniquely and vividly represents Yahweh himself. Sixth, it is significant that, although expiation through the Hebrew cult essentially focused on Israel as the covenant people of Yahweh, forgiveness has been also provided for the "many" through the Servant. Last but not least, the Servant
reminds us of Yahweh who bears all evils of the people. Significantly, although the clause פֶּשַׁעְּנַ תָּאַשְׁי is not employed in the Poem, forgiveness has been provided for פֶּשַׁע (Isa 53:5 [pl.], 8 [sg.]) and thus for פֶּשַׁע (vs. 12). This is really innovative, since forgiveness has never been granted to פֶּשַׁע through the Hebrew cult. Forgiveness for such a sin and sinner is totally outside the cultic system and it has been directly granted by God if the sinner repented (e.g., 2 Chr 33:12-13).

The Servant of Yahweh, therefore, went beyond the scope of the Hebrew cultic system especially not only by forgiving פֶּשַׁע, as in Exod 34:7, but also by providing forgiveness for the "many" beyond Israel. Forgiveness by Yahweh carries with it a cost that he must bear, that is, "divine suffering" in the ultimate sense, which is dramatically shown by the suffering and death of his Servant, the Servant of Yahweh. In this Servant who bears their sins and carries their pains/diseases, and thus who makes forgiveness and healing available to them, can we recognize the God by whom the Israelites are borne and carried, that is, the merciful, living God contrasted with the useless, burdensome idols of the Babylonians in Isa 46? And in this Servant as "the plenipotentiary of God," can we recognize the God who bears/carries sins in Exod 34:7, that is, the God who is just but merciful, who is merciful but just, and who is just and merciful? More precisely, then, what is the identity of the Servant? Is he God in human flesh, God the incarnated (cf. his whole "righteous" life [Isa 53:7, 9b, 11]; his life after death [vs. 10]; his exaltation ["high, lifted up, greatly exalted" [52:13b] just like God])? In the light of the unfolding drama of God's plan to redeem not only Israel but also the world in Isa 40-55, the vicarious expiatory role of Yahweh's Servant lies at the very heart of this prophetic message as "the exegetical key" to unlock the awesome mystery of these profound chapters.

As clearly shown through this lexical study, the terms and clauses investigated here can be divided into two categories, cultic technical terms and terms that, although
not technical cultic terms, can be similarly used in cultic contexts. To the former belong מִשְׁחַת, יַזֶּה, אָשָׁם, חֵטְא, עָוֹן, and the two clauses עָוֹן סָבַל and חֵטְא נָשָׂא; to the latter יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ, and a major sin term פּשַׁע.

Not all of the terms and clauses investigated here in this lexical study have proven to be equally convincing with respect to the main point at issue here. Their cumulative weight, however, must be impressive, especially when all these terms and clauses appear in a single pericope of the Suffering Servant Poem. In view of the fact that even a single word or phrase is significant in the intertextual allusion of the Hebrew Bible, the remarkably high density of cultic allusions in the Poem cannot escape our attention. Without considering their intertextuality with Pentateuchal ritual texts, the Suffering Servant Poem would simply be unintelligible in many respects. Thus, here in the lexical study we have tried to find out the specific, ultimate loci of the allusive words and clauses, i.e., their original cultic contexts, to show their significations and concepts in those contexts, and then to reveal their meanings and functions as authorial intentions in the context of the Suffering Servant Poem.

Therefore, we can conclude that, although the Suffering Servant Poem is to be prophetically understood, it should be interpreted from the perspective of the Hebrew cult, specifically through the concepts and functions of the allusive terms and clauses in the Hebrew ritual texts. The reason is that only by identifying and understanding each of the antecedents of those allusions we can say for sure what it meant to the author of the Poem, and then what he intended to his readers/hearers. However, we have to recognize that those cultic allusions only provide the means to facilitate an innovative new idea that far transcends all that are cultically alluded in the great Poem of Yahweh's Suffering Servant.
CHAPTER IV

LITERARY ANALYSIS

Introduction

The first concern of this chapter is to study the literary context of the Suffering Servant Poem (Isa 52:13-53:12), that is, its wider and immediate contexts. As to its wider context, its placement in Isa 40-55 as a whole and among the Servant Songs in particular is to be investigated. As for its immediate context, its placement between the preceding text and the following is to be examined.

The second concern is to do a literary analysis of the Suffering Servant Poem itself. Thus its literary genre, literary structure, and the speakers and their audience in it are to be investigated.

Literary Context

The Wider Context of the Suffering Servant Poem

The Place of the Suffering Servant Poem in Isaiah 40-55

The Suffering Servant Poem is to be interpreted at least in light of the total message of Isa 40-55 as its wider context. It is very important to see the Suffering Servant Poem in its wider context as well. As Hendrik Carel Spykerboer observes, the Suffering Servant Poem is "a part of a larger whole, a part of a larger argument, a part of a larger context." (see, e.g., Hendrik Carel Spykerboer, The Structure and Composition of Deutero-Isaiah: With Special Reference to the Polemics Against Idolatry (Meppel, Netherlands: Krips Repro, 1976), esp. 170, 175; C. Hassel Bullock, An Introduction to the Prophetic Books (Chicago: Moody Press, 1986), 147-49; Childs, 410-11, 418. For the rhetorical unity of Isa 40-55, see, e.g., Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 384-86. John F. A. Sawyer also observed that chapters 40-55 "constitute the most distinctive and homogeneous part of the book, both stylistically and theologically" ("Isaiah, The Book of," The Oxford Companion to the Bible, ed. Bruce M. Metzger and Michael D. Coogan [New York: Oxford University Press, 1993], 327). Sawyer, Prophecy and the Prophets,
Servant Poem in the big picture of Isa 40-55. Only in this way can we properly interpret it and clearly perceive its contribution to Isa 40-55 as a whole.

Based on his holistic study of the Hebrew text of Isaiah as it is received, Motyer recently argued that the Book of Isaiah is built around three Messianic portraits: the King (chaps. 1-37), the Servant (chaps. 38-55), and the Anointed Conqueror (chaps. 56-66).^2

85-86, although seemingly concurring with the view that they "are best studied as an independent unit," strongly argued: "The case for separating chapters 40-55 from their context in the book of Isaiah is as weak as that for considering J or P only as independent literary units within the Pentateuch. . . . Whatever the case for separate authorship and date, it is an integral part of Isaianic tradition. What has just been concluded about Deutero-Isaiah . . . applies even more to the four so-called 'Servant Songs'. . . . More recently, continuity between these passages and their contexts has been stressed." Roy F. Melugin already maintained: "Although chapters 40-55 manifest a literary integrity of their own within the Book of Isaiah, the fact remains that these chapters are somehow related to the whole of Isaiah. Thus our understanding of the kerygmatic significance of chapters 40-55 will remain incomplete until their theological relationship with the entire book is explored" (The Formation of Isaiah 40-55, BZAW, Beth. 141 [Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1976], 176).

Specifically in regard to the Servant of Yahweh, Richard Schultz correctly argued: "Only in the context of the thematic development of the book of Isaiah as a whole can the identity and work of the 'servant of the LORD' in Isa 40-55 be understood correctly" ("Servant, Slave," NIDOTTE, 4:1196). Therefore, it would be much more correct to say that the Suffering Servant Poem is to be interpreted in light of the total message of Isa 1-66 as its wider context. For only by seeing the Suffering Servant Poem in the big picture of the book as a whole we can properly interpret it and clearly perceive its contribution to the book. However, because of the double limit of time and space, my literary analysis is primarily limited to Isa 40-55.

Thus he entitled Isa 1-37 the "book of the King," Isa 38-55 the "book of the Servant," and Isa 56-66 the "book of the Anointed Conqueror." He proposed a structure of the "book of the Servant" (Isa 38-55), in which the Suffering Servant Poem is placed:

A  Historical prologue: Hezekiah's fatal choice (38:1-39:8)

B  Universal Consolation (40:1-42:17)
   b  The Consolation of Israel (40:1-41:20)
   b' The Consolation of Gentiles (41:21-42:17)

C  Promises of redemption (42:18-44:23)
   c  Release (42:18-43:21)
   c' Forgiveness (43:22-44:23)

Brownlee's structural model, though rightly criticized by Edward J. Young, "Isaiah 34 and Its Position in the Prophecy," *WTJ* 27 (1965): 94, n. 11, was endorsed by Joseph A. Callaway, "Isaiah in Modern Scholarship," *RevExp* 65 (1968): 403-7, and Roland K. Harrison, *Introduction to the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1969), 764, 787-88, and supported by Evans, 146. Gileadi was actually introduced to Brownlee's model and challenged by Harrison to analyze it for his doctoral dissertation, as mentioned by him (*Literary Message of Isaiah*, 34). Gileadi twice modified Brownlee's model, but Gileadi's structure was almost overlooked only with the exceptions of Bullock, 130, and J.D.W. Watts, 71, and then criticized by O'Connell, 18, n. 1. O'Connell's model was justly criticized by Melugin in his book review on O'Connell's *Concentricity and Continuity* in *JBL* 116 (1997): 345-46. Oswalt's analysis of the Isaianic structure may be regarded as his notable contribution (see Mark D. Futato's book review on Oswalt's *Isaiah 1-39* in *WTJ* 49 [1987]: 420), but because of his concentration on the theme of servanthood, a much more important subject, that is, the Messianic theme seems to have been neglected (see Jean Marc Heimerdinger's book review on Oswalt's *Isaiah 1-39* in *Churchman* 100 [1986]: 348). Besides, as Oswalt was aware of it (see *Isaiah 1-39*, 55, n. 2), some points like Isa 7-39 in his structure are too broad to be very helpful, whereas other cases like Isa 40-48 are forced into artificial categories (see Gene M. Tucker's book review on Oswalt's *Isaiah 1-39* in *CBQ* 50 [1988]: 121; Robert L. Hubbard's book review on Oswalt's *Isaiah 1-39* in *TJ* 8 [1987]: 97).

See Motyer, 35, 287, 459. Motyer also showed how each of these portraits is integral to the section in which it is set. "Standing back from the portraits," he argues, "we discover the same features in each, indicative of the fact that they are meant as facets of the one Messianic person" (ibid.). For his brief discussion on the same features and the relationship of the three portraits, see ibid., 13-16.

Cf. ibid., 289. As to the structure of the Isaianic literature, Motyer, 24, mentioned that his commentary "is based on concentrated 'structurist' study." For the structures of the "book of the King" and the "book of the Anointed Conqueror," see ibid., 38-39, 40-41, 461-62.

For the inclusion of this section as the introduction to the "book of the Servant," see ibid., 285-86, 289-90, 295-97.
Agents of redemption (44:24-53:12)
  c1 Cyrus: liberation (44:24-48:22)
  c1' The Servant: atonement (49:1-53:12)

Universal proclamation (54:1-55:13)
  b1 The call to Zion (54:1-17)
  b1' The call to the world (55:1-13)

Against the division between Isa 37 and 38 Marvin A. Sweeney argued that it "is completely unwarranted in that it plows through chaps. 36-39, the most unified and consistent text in the entire Book of Isaiah!"6 Although Sweeney contended that such a division seems to be determined by Motyer's external theological criterion of messianism,7 it actually results from his serious consideration of the arguments concerning the relationship of Isa 36-39 with 2 Kgs 18:13-20:19.8 Just as the

---

6 Marvin A. Sweeney in his book review on Motyer's *The Prophecy of Isaiah* in *CBQ* 57 (1995): 568. However, in regard to the relationship among Isa 36-39, Childs, 264 (cf. 286), argued, even though from his canonical perspective: "There is agreement that chapters 36 and 37 belonged originally closely together. The same cannot be said for chapters 38 and 39. Chapter 38 is only very loosely related to chapters 36 and 37 by means of a vague chronological formula, 'in those days.' Moreover, 38:6//2 Kings 20:6 imply that the deliverance of Jerusalem reported in chapters 36-37 still lay in the future. This would indicate some likely chronological dislocation within the larger narrative. The sickness theme is then picked up in chapter 39, but the linkage seems wooden. The function of chapter 38 is determined largely by its relation to the Kings parallel as well as the poetic expansion of the 'writing of Hezekiah' (38:9-20), which is lacking in Kings." Besides, as indicated by Childs, 272-73, chapters 36 and 37 are structured by a close repetition of a very similar pattern.

7 Sweeney, "The Prophecy of Isaiah by Motyer," 568.

8 See Motyer, 285-86. Motyer, 285, argued: "It is particularly important to ask why, if the material moved from Kings to Isaiah [according to the majority view on the relationship of the pericopes], the historian/editor of Kings allowed the material to appear out of chronological order." The significance of the question is revealed in light of the fact that the Merodach-Baladan incident (2 Kgs 20:12-19; Isa 39) and its antecedent in Hezekiah's illness and divine healing (2 Kgs 20:1-11; Isa 38) must be earlier than the Sennacherib incidents. After a detailed comparison of the two pericopes, Motyer, 286, maintained: "The theory which best fits the facts ['which cannot be explained on any theory of either borrowing from the other'] is that both Isaiah and Kings had access to annals and records and used them to suit their own purposes as historians." It is difficult to understand why Kings perpetuates the placing of Hezekiah's illness and healing and Merodach-Baladan's embassy account after Sennacherib's invasion and fall, since there is no justification or textual support for this in the Kings narrative. Thus, Motyer, 286, contended that this reversed chronological order is the only one that perfectly suits Isaiah's purpose: "The Sennacherib stories form the perfect capstone to chapters 28-35,
Sennacherib incidents form, as an interim fulfillment of the deliverance of Israel, the historical epilogue to the "book of the King," so Hezekiah's flirting with Babylon shown in the Merodach-Baladan incident forms, as an anticipatory link to the Babylonian captivity of Israel, the historical prologue to the "book of the Servant." Motyer thus made such an attractive proposal that the reversed chronological order which places the Sennacherib incidents before Hezekiah's fatal illness and divine healing is explicable only in that context of Isaiah's rhetorical concerns. Motyer's literary structures have been generally acknowledged to be quite convincing and vital to the understanding of the Book of Isaiah. Thus they will be mainly employed with some minor modifications, if...
necessary, for this study.

If we partially accept Sweeney's objection by including Isa 38-39 in the so-called "historical interlude" (Isa 36-39) and then the interlude in the first part of the Book of Isaiah (Isa 1-39), we can have the Book of Isaiah structured around three Messianic portraits: the King (chaps. 1-39), the Servant (chaps. 40-55), and the Warrior (chaps. 66). The unusual way he has divided part the book: chaps 1-37 (instead of 1-40 [sic]). Wegner, 655, however, paid high regard to Motyer's literary analyses of chaps. 40-66. Though observing that Motyer's work is written at the expense of much attention to the course of specialist debate, Williamson, 576, commented: "Critical scholars would be unwise to ignore this work... Motyer frequently shows himself to be a perceptive 'reader', and in terms of the final form of the text he often proposes approaches which are more convincing and illuminating than a number of recent post-critical attempts to do justice to the present form of the book. Furthermore, he has a good eye for literary structure; while sometimes his suggestions in this area seem to be contrived, they are certainly worth consideration, whether on a single paragraph or on larger sections of the book. Thus, ... his commentary deserves a hearing in these days when many of the issues which were determinative of an earlier stage in Isaianic research are being reconsidered."

11For Isa 7:10-17, 9:1-7 [H 8:23-9:6], and 11:1-16, in which the messianic King is prophesied, see especially the perceptive study of Childs, 65-69, 79-81, and 99-106 respectively. There are many significant links between the King in Isa 1-39 and the Servant in Isa 40-55 to give us many hints to the identity of the Servant: (1) the mention of mother (עַלְמָה, 7:14; אִמִּי, 49:1); (2) the term "light" (9:2 [H 1; 2x]; 42:6; 49:6); (3) the term "peace" (9-6, 7; 53:5); (4) the terms "justice" (9:7; 42:1, 3, 4; 49:4; 50:8; 53:8) and "righteousness" (9:7; 11:4; 42:6; cf. 50:8; 53:11); (5) endowment with Yahweh's spirit (11:2 [4x]; 42:1); cf. the term "root" (11:1; 53:2). Moreover, specifically the remarkable links between Isa 33 (Yahweh: Judge, Lawgiver, and King [vs. 22]) and the Suffering Servant Poem also give us some hints to the identity of the Servant: (1) terms of exaltation (שָׂגַב Niphal; רוּם Hithpolel/אָשָׂא Niphal, vs. 10; וְאֵל Qal/עָשָׂא Niphal, 52:13); (2) metaphor of arm (זְרוֹעַ, 33:2; 53:1; cf. וְרָם/שָׁלַל, 51:9; וְרָם/גָּבַהּ Qal, 52:10); (3) terms of sickness (חָלָה, 33:24; זָעִי, 53:3-4; cf. מָרָח Niphal, vs. 5); (4) metaphor of forgiveness (עָוֹן, 33:24; נָשָׂא, 53:11; מַגְּלָה, vs. 12); (5) metaphor of victory (שָׁלַל, "spoil/booty" [33:4, 23b; 53:12a]; חָלַק, "divide" [33:23b; 53:12b]).

Apart from dissimilarity between the Servant and Israel, we can mention a subtle but profound difference even in similarity. As for Yahweh's calling/forming of the Servant (49:1βa, 5) and Yahweh's making/forming of Israel (44:2), we can notice such a difference. Although the expression "from the womb" was used in both of them, in the case of the Servant not only his mother (cf. Gen 3:15; Isa 7:14; Mic 5:3 [H 2]; Ps 22:10 [H 11]; Rev 12:2, 4b-5, 13b) but also the mentioning/calling of his name is indicated: "From the bowels of my mother He has made mention of my name" (49:1βb); cf. "she will call his name Immanuel" (7:14). Significantly this subtle but profound difference also differentiates the Servant from Jeremiah (cf. Jer 1:5). Although in Jer 20:14-15 not only his mother but also his father is mentioned, its Gattung is totally different from that of Jer 1:5.
Thus it can be said that the "book of the Servant" (chaps. 40-55) is placed in the thematic (not quantitative) center of the Book of Isaiah. Significantly, after observing lexical, thematic, and theological relationships between the three parts of the book of Isaiah, Rolf Rendtorff concluded:

First of all, it has been shown, in my view, that the second part of the book, chaps 40-55, occupies a dominant position in the book as a whole. Both in the first and in the third part it is clearly evident that the compositional work takes its bearings from the second part, either drawing on it directly or orientating its own utterances toward it. This is confirmed by the insight (acquired independently of this postulate) that chaps 40-55 present a unified and self-contained unit. Consequently it would seem reasonable to assume that chaps 40-55 form the heart of the present composition and that the two other parts have been shaped . . . in its light, and point toward it.13

12 There are many significant links to help us identify the Servant in chaps. 40-55 with the Warrior in chaps. 56-66. First, we can mention similar situations to necessitate their interventions: (1) Israel's charge against no justice in 40:27 (cf. vs. 14; 41:1) and Yahweh's servants' recognition of no justice in 59:8, 9, 11, 14, 15 (the Leitwort מִשְׁפָּט "justice"); (2) the situation of "none" (אֵין) in Isa 41:28 (cf. vs. 17), 59:16, and 63:5; (3) the situation of "none" and God's refutation in 50:2 and 59:1, 16 (note the external chiasm which the verses make: A: 50:2a/B: vs. 2b/B1: 59:1/A1: vs. 16a); (4) the prophetic refutation of Israel's charge (40:27) and that of Yahweh's servants' charge (59:1).

Second, we can observe many lexical and thematic links: (1) the motif of Yahweh's "arm" (53:1; 59:16); (2) the root הָרָע (53:11; 59:16); (3) the verb עֲנָא Hiphil with the meaning of "intercede" (53:12; 59:16); (4) the term "covenant" (42:6; 49:8; 54:10; 55:3; 59:21); (5) the term "seed" (53:10; 54:3; 59:21); (6) the root מֵשׁ (52:14; 59:16); (7) the contrasting usage of the verb מִים (52:15; 63:3); cf. the usage of the verb עֲנָא "defile" (63:3), which makes a striking contrast with its homonym מֵשׁ "redeem."

In addition, we can observe several significant links between Yahweh as Warrior in Isa 34 and the Warrior in Isa 63 so that we can get some hints to the identity of the Warrior: (1) the names "Edom" and "Bozrah" (34:5; 6; 63:1; cf. Jer 49:22; Amos 1:11-12), which make an external chiasm only once in the same book in the OT (34:5; A: "Bozrah"/B: "Edom"/63:1; B1: "Edom"/A1: "Bozrah"); (2) the phrases "day of vengeance"/"year of retribution" (34:8) and "day of vengeance"/"year of redemption" (63:4); (3) the terms "anger" and "wrath" (34:2; 63:3, 5, 6); (4) the terms "blood" (34:3, 6 [2x], 63:3, 6) and "life-blood" (63:3, 6).

Now we can have a perfect chiastic structure of Isa 40-55, which has two parallel elements in each section of 40:1-42:17, 42:18-44:23, 44:24-53:12, and 54:1-55:13, that is, with Cyrus and the Servant contrasted with each other in its chiastic center:

A  Universal Consolation (40:1-42:17)
   a  The Consolation of Israel (40:1-41:20)
   a' The Consolation of Gentiles (41:21-42:17)

B  Promises of Redemption (42:18-44:23)
   b  Release (42:18-43:21)
   b' Forgiveness (43:22-44:23)

B'  Agents of Redemption (44:24-53:12)
   b'  Cyrus: Liberation (44:24-48:22)
   b'  The Servant: Atonement (49:1-53:12)

A'  Universal Proclamation (54:1-55:13)
   a'  The Call to Zion (54:1-17)
   a'' The Call to the World (55:1-13).

The Place of the Suffering Servant
Poem among the Servant Poems

In order to find out the relationship of the Servant Poems and the function of the Suffering Servant Poem vis-à-vis the other Servant Poems, it is important to understand where the Suffering Servant Poem is placed in regard to the other Servant Poems and how they are related to each other.14

Though the precise delimitation and number of the Servant Poems has been open to discussion, four units have generally been recognized as Servant Poems, which are delimited as follows: 42:1-9; 49:1-13; 50:4-11; 52:13-53:12.15

---

14Janowski also observed: "It is highly significant for interpretation that Isaiah 52:13-53:12 has many connections with the other Servant Songs" (54). For his helpful observations on the relationships between the Servant Poems, see ibid., esp. 54-57, 60, 66.

According to my observations, the four Servant Poems seem to be literally interrelated and thus their relationship can be diagramed as follows:

I. 42:1-9

"Behold, my servant" (vs. 1)

motif of "justice" (vss. 1, 3, 4)

"a covenant for the people" (vs. 6)

"a light to the nations" (vs. 6)

II. 49:1-13

---


On the one hand, in light of the many similarities between Isa 61:1-3 and the Servant Poems in Isa 40-55 (see especially Cannon, 287-88; cf. France, 42-43, 42, n. 83, 43, n. 84), the most prevalent interpretation that the figure in Isa 61:1-3 is not a messianic figure but the prophet (Third Isaiah) himself is unlikely. On the other, although Beuken argued that the speaker in Isa 61 is a prophetic embodiment of the servants of Yahweh (i.e., the offspring of the Suffering Servant), who can be an individual as well as a collective entity, his argument does not seem to be correct (pace Childs, 503). Above all things, Beuken seems to have missed at least one subtle but profound difference by considering Isa 44:3bα as the parallel of 61:1aα (i.e., the endowment of the Spirit), but by disregarding the significant verb מָשַׁח ("anoint") in the latter's paralleling 61:1aβ. When the verb מָשַׁח (69x in the OT) has persons as its accusative, they are mostly kings (33x), then priests (10x), and prophets (1x). In 1 Kgs 19:16 the prophet Elijah was commanded by Yahweh to anoint Elisha as prophet in his place, but there was not the actual anointing ceremony; Elijah passed over unto Elisha, and cast his mantle upon him (vs. 19). However, the case of Isa 61:1aβ ("Yahweh has anointed me") makes a striking contrast with that of 1 Kgs 19:16 (cf. 19). It is Yahweh Himself who has anointed the speaker here. That is the one subtle but profound difference.
motif of "justice" (vs. 4)
"a light to the nations" (vs. 6)
humiliation motif (vs. 7)\textsuperscript{16}
universal response (kings/princes) (vs. 7)
"a covenant for the people" (vs. 8)

III. 50:4-11
humiliation motif (vs. 6)\textsuperscript{17}
motif of "hiding of the face" (vs. 6)
motif of "justice" (vs. 8; cf. vs. 9)

IV. 52:13-53:12
"Behold, my servant" (52:13)
universal response (the many/kings) (vss. 14-15; cf. 53:11-12)
motif of "hiding of the face" (53:3)
humiliation motif (especially vss. 3, 7-9)
motif of "justice" (vs. 8; cf. vss. 9, 11)

As shown above, the introductory phrase of the Servant, "Behold, my servant" (42:1; 52:13), above all things, seems to play the role not only as the architectonic bridge to connect the first Servant Poem with the fourth but also as the outer bracket to categorize the four Servant Poems.\textsuperscript{18} The expressions "a covenant for the people"\textsuperscript{19}

\textsuperscript{16}The verb \textit{בָּזָה} is used twice at Isa 53:3 in the Suffering Servant Poem.

\textsuperscript{17}The verb \textit{נָכָה} is used once at Isa 53:4 in the Suffering Servant Poem.

\textsuperscript{18}The Hebrew word for the interjection "Behold" at 42:1 is \textit{הֵן}, which "follows the twofold judgment against nations, likewise introduced by this word (41:24, 29)" (Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 464). Isa 41:24 opens with \textit{הֵן}, which links it with the parallel vs. 29, thus bringing the judgment against the idols to a finale, and makes it prefatory to 42:1 (see ibid., 461, 463; Motyer, 316, 318). Motyer, 314-315, cogently argued: "It is insufficient for Yahweh merely to make a claim to direct world history (vss. 1-7, 8-20)—all the gods would have registered the same claim. It is therefore essential to offer some proof. Isaiah proposes a test case: to predict an event and then fulfil the prediction would demonstrate control of the historical processes. The idol-gods fail this
test (41:21-24), but the Lord succeeds. In the course of exposing the hollowness of the idol-gods, the plight of their devotees becomes apparent (vss. 24, 28-29) and a second question arises: If the Lord is the only God and sovereign in world history, has he no care for Gentile humanity in its desperate need? The answer is given in the link between 'See' (הֵן) in 41:29, pointing to Gentile need, and 'Here is' (הֵן) in 42:1 pointing to the servant who 'will bring justice to the nations'. The Lord speaks in confirmation of this world-wide task of his servant (42:5-9), and the world is called to sing in responsive joy (vss. 10-17)."

The Hebrew word for the interjection "Behold" at 52:23 is הִנֵּה, which "concludes the series of commands which began at 51:1," "makes a contextual link with 'Behold me!' ('Yes, it is I') in 52:6," and "brings to a rounded climax the revelation of the Servant which began with הֵן "ֶאֱבֹדִי ('Behold my Servant') in 42:1" (Motyer, 424; cf. Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 615). Since there are two significant lexical links (נִגְלָה, "revealed," and עֹזְרָה, "his arm" [which make their debut here in chaps. 40-55]), between 40:5, 10 and 53:1, הֵן at 52:13 also seems to have a contextual link with the threefold הֵן at 40:9-10 (see also Motyer, 299-302). In this way the rhetorical device of the particle "behold" (הֵן or הִנֵּה) is significantly used in Isa 40-55, especially in relation to not only the entrance of Yahweh's Servant upon the stage of world history in 42:1 but also the climax of his revelation in 52:13.

Janowski, 56, however, went too far in arguing: "The connection between 50:4-9 and 42:1-4, the third and first Songs, is established by means of the הֵן formula ('behold'). The double 'behold' of 50:9 . . . that brings the first three Songs to an emphatic close may be a backward reference to the 'behold' of 42:1a. At the same time it may mark a break before the 'behold' of 52:13" (cf. Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-55," 387; Koole, 119; Motyer, 400). For the rhetorical role of the particle הֵן or הִנֵּה, see especially Muilenburg, "Form Criticism and Beyond," 14-15; idem, "Isaiah 40-66," 387.

Motyer, 14, observed: "The Servant is introduced as the vehicle of divine revelation to the Gentiles (42:1-4), but the developing portrait shows that he performs this work by restoring Israel/Jacob (49:1-6) and thus himself becoming the Lord's salvation to the ends of the earth (49:6)." For a more detailed explanation of the expression "a covenant for the people," see ibid., 322; for a history of its interpreation, see Jan L. Koole, Isaiah, Part 3, vol. 1, trans. Anthony P. Runia, HCOT (Kampen: Kok Pharos, 1997), 230-32.

The expression "a light to the peoples" in 51:4 seems to play a role, by linking itself to the expression "a light to the nations" (42:6; 49:6) and thus making the two expressions brackets, to connect not only the first and second Servant Poem but also the third with the immediate context of the fourth, that is, the Suffering Servant Poem. Besides, the plural "peoples" in the phrase "a light to the peoples," which designates the Servant's universal mission for the Gentiles, makes a striking contrast to the singular "people" in the phrase "a covenant for the people," which indicates his mission for the Israelites (see also 49:5b, 6aba, 8cd; pro, e.g., Koole, Isaiah, 1:230-31; 2:38-39; pace, e.g., Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 468-69; D. W. van Winkle, "The Relationship of the Nations to Yahweh and to Israel in Isaiah 40-55," VT 35 [1985]: 446-58, esp. 455-57). For the history of interpretation of the expression "a light to the nations," see Koole, Isaiah, 1:232-33; 2:23-24; for "a light to the peoples," see ibid., 2:148.
first and second Servant Poems, clearly showing the interrelatedness of the first and second Servant Poems. The motif of "hiding the face" in 50:6 and 53:3 relates the third and fourth Servant Poems, whereas the universal response in 49:7 (respect and honor) and 52:14, 15 (astonishment and marvel) correlates the second and fourth Servant Poems. The humiliation motif in 49:7, 50:6, and 53:3, 7-9 links the second, third, and fourth Servant Poems and identifies the Servant as the Suffering Servant. The suffering of the Servant gradually becomes intensified and portrayed in detail so that the Suffering Servant Poem can be said to be the climax of the Servant Poems. The motif of "justice," which is the primary Leitwort for the intervention of Yahweh's Servant into world history and thus for his ultimate task in it, ironically keeps running throughout the Servant Poems, from the first Servant Poem to the fourth.

---

21The Servant in 50:6 testifies, "I hid not my face from shame and spitting," thus expressing his resolution to be willing to suffer, whereas in 53:3 "it seems to the people that they see the God turning his face away from the suffering Servant is the Lord himself" (Heller, 264 [cf. 263-66 for a more detailed discussion]).

22Motyer, 422, also mentioned: "As for the Servant himself, the suffering which began to cast its shadow over [the first Song (42:4) and] the second Song (49:4; cf. 49:7), and which formed the heart of the third Song (50:6), is now [in the fourth Song] explained as the wounding and bruising [and killing] of one who bore the sins of others."

23Von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:258, asserted that "the only way to understand the [Servant] songs completely is by understanding the nature of the office allotted to the Servant," but Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," much more precisely observed: "The dramatic movement of the first three poems [40:1-11, 12-31; 41:1-42:4], which form a kind of eschatological trilogy . . . , comes to a climax with the entrance of the servant of the Lord upon the stage of world history. . . . The true significance of the servant's entrance is grasped only when it is seen in its total literary context and 'situation in life'—the dramatic trial scene" (cf. ibid., 447, 467, for more in detail). The two Leitwörter for the intervention of Yahweh's Servant into world history are the primary term מִשְׁפָּט and the secondary, rhetorical particle הִנֵּה or הֵן.

In terms of מִשְׁפָּט ("justice") Israel's theodicean challenge/accusation is clearly reflected right from the first chapter of Isa 40-55, specifically 40:27 ("my way is hidden from Yahweh and my justice מִשְׁפָּט is passed over from my God"); cf. the contrasting "My justice" in 51:4), to which the prophet already prepares his response/rebuttal by the rhetorical question in 40:14 ("who taught him [i.e., Yahweh] in the path of justice מִשְׁפָּט"). Thus, מִשְׁפָּט as a key term paves the way to the first Servant Poem, and then to the other Servant Poems. See Muilenburg, "A Study in Hebrew Rhetoric," 110-11; Beuken, "Mišpat: The First Servant Song and Its Context," 1-30; Jörg Jeremias, "Mišpat im ersten Gottesknechtslied (Jes 42:1-4)," VT 22 (1972): 31-42; W. J. Dumbrell, "The
In regard to the four Servant Poems, Motyer provides a diagram of their relationships: 24

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Biography</td>
<td>Autobiography</td>
<td>Autobiography</td>
<td>Biography</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Servant's task</td>
<td>The Servant's task</td>
<td>The Servant's commitment</td>
<td>The Servant's completion of his task</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He is endowed with the Spirit and the word</td>
<td>He is endowed with the word</td>
<td>He is endowed with the word</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He experiences despondency</td>
<td>He experiences suffering</td>
<td>He experiences suffering</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

When it comes to the genre of the Servant Poems, neither "biography" nor "autobiography" seems to be suitable, but Motyer's diagram briefly shows the outlines and relationships of the Servant Poems. It clearly reveals not only their thematic and structural interrelatedness but also the progression in their contents.

In order to clearly understand the position of the first Servant Poem, the structure

---

24 Motyer, 15. He noted that the first and second Servant Poems are followed by tailpieces concerned with divine confirmation of the Servant's task and promises of its success, whereas the third and fourth Servant Poems are followed by the tailpieces concerned with invitations to respond to the Servant and what he has done (see ibid., 401, 443-44). For the diagram of coinciding presentations of the Servant and the Anointed Conqueror, see ibid., 15-17. Motyer, 15-16, observed: "In each series the first appearance of the Messianic personage is unheralded: he suddenly steps onto the stage. In each case the third Song is anonymous; only the context makes it clear who the speaker is."
of the section "the consolation of the world" (40:1-42:17), at which it is located, needs to be noted:\textsuperscript{25}

I. The consolation of Zion (40:1-41:20)

A Three voices of consolation (40:1-11)
   B The God of Israel: the Creator (vss. 12-31)
   B\textsuperscript{1} The God of Israel: the Lord of history (41:1-7)
   A\textsuperscript{1} Three pictures of consolation (vss. 8-20)

II. The consolation of the Gentiles (41:21-42:17)

A The non-existence of idols and the plight of the world (41:21-29)\textsuperscript{26}
   B Remedy: the Servant as Yahweh's answer to the world's plight (42:1-9)\textsuperscript{27}
      b Yahweh speaks of his servant, describing his task (vss. 1-4)
      b\textsuperscript{1} Yahweh speaks to his servant, confirming his task (vss. 5-9)
   A\textsuperscript{1} The new song: the world's joy in Yahweh's victory (vss. 10-17)\textsuperscript{28}

In order to precisely understand each position of the second, third, and fourth Servant Poems and thus to notice their relationships, the structures of the following sections are to be grasped: 42:18-44:23; 44:24-53:12; 49:1-53:12 together with

\textsuperscript{25}Cf. Motyer, 298-325.

\textsuperscript{26}A court scene appears in this section, and it shows three procedures of two court cases: one, a general case: Yahweh's summons and challenge (vss. 21-22α), test (vss. 22β-23), and sentence (vs. 24); the other, a particular case: Yahweh's claim (vs. 25), test (vss. 26-28), sentence (vs. 29). The subdivision of three procedures here is a little bit different from Motyer's. Verse 22α should be included in Yahweh's summons, and the subdivisions beginning with הֵן might be the sentences of the two cases.

\textsuperscript{27}As Motyer rightly observed, each of the parallel sections within 41:21-29 ends with הֵן: "Look at the idol-gods" (vs. 24); "Look at the idolaters" (vs. 29); and now "Look at my servant" (42:1). "The servant steps onto the stage," as Motyer, 318, added, "specifically to perform a world-wide task of revelation, the Lord's remedy for the emptiness, and particularly the absence of a sure word of God (41:28), which marks the Gentile world."

\textsuperscript{28}Especially the theme of 42:10-12 is reflected in 49:13, the concluding verse of the second Servant Poem, as also noticed by Motyer, 389.
Isaiah 42:18-44:23 has as its themes two promises of the redemption of Israel, the promise of national redemption (release from Babylonian bondage, 42:18-43:21) and that of spiritual redemption (forgiveness of sins, 43:22-44:23). The coherent and parallel development of the two themes is evident, as is shown in the parallels of this section:

A National redemption (42:18-43:21)
   a Israel, the blind servant (42:18-25)
   b Disaster reversed: Israel redeemed (43:1-7)
   c The certainty of Yahweh's promise (43:8-13)
   d Redemption from Babylon: a new exodus (43:14-21)

A' Spiritual redemption (43:22-44:23)
   a' The totality of Israel's sin exposed (43:22-24)
   b' Israel's past forgotten, its future blessed (43:25-44:5)
   c' The certainty of Yahweh's promise (44:6-20)
   d' Redemption from sin (44:21-23)

Such a double need of Israel is met by Yahweh's double reply of liberation (44:24-48:22) and atonement (49:1-53:12) in the section 44:24-53:12, the agents of which are respectively Cyrus and the Servant. Like the previous section, this one shows a coherent and parallel development of the two agents, which is evident in the parallels between the two agents involved:

A The work of Cyrus (44:24-48:22)
   a The task stated and the agent named (44:24-28)
   b The task confirmed: to Israel and the world (45:1-8)
   c Israel's disquiet (45:9-22)
      Yahweh's purpose affirmed (45:9-13)
      Israel and Gentiles (45:14-22)

---

29See ibid., 326.
30Cf. ibid. Goldingay mentioned: "I have long found analyses such as that of 42:18-44:23 into two fourfold sequences quite convincing and vital to an understanding of the chapters" (160).
31Note the parallel of the last verse of each part, that is, Isa 43:21 and Isa 44:23.
32The diagram is slightly modified from the one in Motyer, 352, in order to make the Servant in Isa 50 conspicuous.
33For the chiastic structure of this part, see Motyer, 353.
Those who find righteousness and strength in Yahweh and those who oppose him (45:23-25)

Yahweh's care for Israel—from the beginning through to the coming salvation (46:1-3)

Babylon: from the throne to the dust (47:1-15)

Redemption from Babylon (48:1-22)

The work of the Servant (49:1-53:12)

The task stated and the agent named (49:1-6)

The task confirmed: to Israel and the world (49:7-13)

Israel's despondency (49:14-50:3)

Yahweh's love affirmed (49:14-16)

Israel and Gentiles (49:17-50:3)

The Servant, the exemplar of those who find strength and vindication in Yahweh (50:4-11)

Yahweh's care for Israel—from the beginning through to the coming salvation (51:1-16)

Zion: from the dust to the throne (51:17-52:12)

Redemption from sin (52:13-53:12)

From chap. 49 onward neither the name Cyrus (כּוֹרֶשׁ, 44:28; 45:1) nor the name Babylon (בָּבֶל, 43:14; 47:1; 48:14, 20) occurs again, as Franz J. Delitzsch already correctly observed. What Yahweh has in mind for Cyrus meets its fulfillment: "The irresistible conqueror of 45:1-8 conquers Babylon (47:1-15); the rebuilder of Zion (44:24-28) releases the captives (48:1-22)." However, chap. 48, "the very chapter which announces their liberation, is a storm-center of denunciation" of Israel's sin.

---

34 Note the parallel of Isa 45:8 and Isa 49:13.


36 Motyer, 371.

37 Ibid., 352. Right here in Isa 48 the significant text vs. 16c reveals "an anticipatory interjection" of the Servant of Yahweh as the agent of the "new things" of its matching vss. 6b-7 (cf. ibid., 381). The significance of the text can be noted through an analysis of the parallels in vss. 1-22 (see ibid., 376). For more detail on the interpretation of Isa 48:16c, see Webb, 192; Koole, Isaiah, 1:591-92, 595, 605; Childs, 377-78, 394. Especially to be noted is the observation of Childs, 377: "The key [to the interpretation of vs. 16c] is found... in the literary context of the entire corpus of Second Isaiah and, above all, in the specific role played within the book of the chapter 48. The theme of the part assigned to Cyrus within the purpose of God is central to chapters 40-47. Yet in chapters 49-55 the figure of Cyrus has disappeared from the scene, and the role of the servant now dominates. Chapter 48 functions to rebuke the transition. Babylon has fallen and yet Israel is rebuked, like Babylon in chapters 46 and 47, for failure to understand the sovereignty of God and the nature of his redemption of the world.
Liberation from Babylonian captivity solves only one problem, the national/physical one, but the deeper problem of sin, the universal/spiritual one, remains unresolved. Cyrus's task, the deliverance from physical/national bondage, is accomplished, whereas the greater task, the greater deliverance from spiritual/universal captivity, is about to be enacted by the Servant. 

Thus, Cyrus now leaves the stage of history, and instead the Servant suddenly steps back onto the stage.

Motyer presented a diagram of Isa 49:1-55:13 that not only portrays the final movement in the "book of the Servant" but also locates the Suffering Servant Poem in its immediate context:

A  The Servant's double task: Israel and the world (49:1-6)
B  Comment: the task to the world and Israel confirmed (49:7-13)

Chapter 48 turns the traditional oracles of disputation and trial into an accusatory call for Israel's repentance. God confirms his absolute sovereignty over nature and history. His calling of Cyrus will succeed. But now something new is planned. There is a new movement within the divine economy. It is signalled by the introduction of a new messenger. Chapter 48 gives no immediate description of his mission. Rather, the reader is forced to wait until chapter 49 in order to understand the identity of the one sent. Then suddenly one is made aware that his identity is that of the servant, who now speaks autobiographically with the same first person pronoun of 48:16c to set forth in detail his calling and mission both to the house of Jacob and to the nations of the world. The one sent by God and endowed with the spirit (cf. 42:1) in vs. 16c has an immediate task to perform in chapter 48. From the context it is clear that he is the one who delivers the divine oracle in vss. 17-19, and in this role assumes a prophetic function. However, he remains fully anonymous apart from his identity as the servant of chapter 49."


38 Motyer, 353, 383.

39 Ibid., 16, 353, 381. Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, is the only non-Israelite in the entire OT that is mentioned as Yahweh's servant (Jer 25:9; 27:6; 43:10). However, Cyrus of Persia is mentioned as "My shepherd" (Isa 44:28) and "His anointed" (45:1) rather than "My/His servant." This fact clearly shows that Isaiah significantly employed the term "servant" in close relation to Yahweh in the book of Isaiah, especially in the "book of the Servant" and that it reveals a very significant aspect of Isaianic theology.

40 Ibid., 383.

41 Isaiah 49:1-13 constitutes a chiasm: Israel/the world (vss. 1-6)//the world/Israel
(vss. 7-13); and it shows that the second Servant Poem is a unity as a whole. Besides, theologically, it describes the balance of particularism and universalism in regard to the salvific task of the Servant, emphasizing its universal scope without disregarding Israel as its national scope.

42 Isaiah 50:4-9 contains no reference to the Servant, but vss. 10-11 reveal who the speaker is. Besides, Isa 50:4-11, the third Servant Poem, is divided into four subsections by the title הניאֲדֺ נָיֲדֺ, which is in the emphatic position at the beginning of the line (vss. 4a, 5a, 7a, 9a). In regard to the contents, all four subsections reveal the Sovereign Yahweh acting on behalf of His Servant. The first two show how He prepared the Servant for ministry and the second two how he stands by the Servant in adversity. It is evident, therefore, that Isa 50:4-11 makes a unity as a whole. Such aspects were also noted by Motyer, 398. For a more detailed literary structure of the third Servant Poem, see Motyer, 393.

43 This pattern is incomplete in that it lacks B2, as mentioned by Motyer, 383. Motyer argued: "Within the overall unity of the Isaianic literature, this gap is filled by chapters 56-66. The pattern of the Servant Songs (established in 42:1-4, 5-9, i.e., Song followed by comment) is repeated in each of the three Songs here. The Songs are not extraneous insertions but the pivots on which the section turns" (ibid.).

44 Von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:251 (cf. 257-58), rightly asserted that, for all their close connection with the rest of Isa 40-55, the Servant Songs "still stand in a certain isolation within it, and have their own peculiar enigmas enshrouding them." On the one hand, however, it is not a sound interpretive approach to deal with the Songs independently from their contexts. Nevertheless, on the other, to be noted is that in Isa 40-55 the individual servant, i.e., Servant of Yahweh, appears in sharp contrast to the collective servant, i.e., the servant Israel (see esp. Johann Fischer, Das Buch Isaias: Übersetzt und erklärt, 2 vols., ed. F. Feldmann, HSAT 7/1 [Bonn: Peter Hanstein, 1937-39], 2:10-11; Oswalt, Isaiah 40-66, 287, n. 14; cf. von Rad, Old Testament Theology, 2:259-60; pace Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 408-410; Mettinger, Farewell, esp. 29-43; Hans M. Barstad, "The Future of the 'Servant Songs': Some Reflections on the Relationship of Biblical Scholarship to Its Own Tradition," in Language, Theology, and the Bible: Essays in Honour of James Barr, ed. Samuel E. Balentine and John Barton [New York: Oxford University Press, 1994], 261-70).
significant aspect of Isaianic theology.\textsuperscript{45} Furthermore, it is evident that the Suffering Servant Poem, "which is the longest of all the Servant Songs, marks their literary and thematic climax."\textsuperscript{46}

The Immediate Context of the Suffering Servant Poem

In order to properly interpret a text, the relationships are to be perceived between the text and its immediately surrounding texts, that is, the preceding text and the following. For the immediate context of the Suffering Servant Poem (Isa 52:13-53:12), therefore, its relationships to Isa 51:1-52:12 and Isa 54:1-55:13 are to be grasped.\textsuperscript{47}

\textsuperscript{45}\textit{Contra}, e.g., Mettinger, \textit{Farewell}, 14, 28, 45-46. See Whybray's book review on Mettinger's \textit{Farewell} in \textit{JBL} 104 (1985): 706-707. Whybray here rightly argued: "Few scholars, probably, would question Mettinger's view that the 'Songs' belong to different \textit{Gattungen}; but it is difficult to see why this means that they cannot constitute a separate group" (ibid., 706). Whybray criticized: "He fails, however, to give an adequate account of the case for an individual interpretation, nor does he consider the possibility that the 'Songs' may be the work of the same author as the rest of the book and still form a distinct group of passages expressing a particular aspect of his theology" (ibid., 707). See also S. Greenhalgh's book review on Mettinger's \textit{Farewell} in \textit{CBQ} 48 (1986): 117-118. Greenhalgh pointed out, "Mettinger has highlighted the verbal and thematic correspondences between the songs and the prophecy but failed to answer the real problem of the degree of difference that separates them from the other \textit{ebed} passages, e.g., the undeniable individual style of the songs as opposed to the overt identification with the nation made frequently elsewhere" (ibid., 118). See also Frederick J. Gaiser's book review on Mettinger's \textit{Farewell} in \textit{Interpretation} 40 (1986): 311-312. Gaiser maintained: "Mettinger's primary problem is in trying to make all the passages identical in their witness to the Servant. In his zeal to this, he overlooks genuine distinctions as, for example, between the Servant consoled by Yahweh and the Servant commissioned by Yahweh or between the Servant addressed in the second person and the Servant who speaks or who is spoken of in first or third person" (ibid.).

\textsuperscript{46}Jacques B. Doukhan, \textit{The Messianic Riddle} (forthcoming), 23.

\textsuperscript{47}As for the rationale of such a delimitation of the Suffering Servant Poem as Isa 52:13-53:12, three things can be mentioned as follows:

First, Masoretic clues. According to the MT, the Book of Isaiah comprises 26 sections divided by סדר associated with the Babylonian tradition. In the broad context, thus, the text of Isa 52:13-53:12 is in the 22nd section, 52:7-55:12. In the immediate context, סדר comes at the end of 52:12 and 53:12, and there is no Masoretic clue to divide Isa 52:13-53:12 except פסוק סוף that signifies the end of a verse. Therefore, according to the Masoretic indication, Isa 52:13-53:12 is a distinct, self-contained pericope.

Second, structural hints. (1) Isa 52:13-53:12 does not have any imperatives but mainly indicatives, whereas both 51:1-52:12 and 54:1-55:13 have many imperatives; thus,
Isa 51:1-52:12, which is characterized by its escalating suspense and excitement,\(^48\) can be divided into eight sections.\(^49\) The first three (51:1-3, 4-6, 7-8) are linked as a coherent unit\(^50\) by their initial imperative to listen (vss. 1, 4, 7), respectively with a double vocative.\(^51\) Each section ends with divine promises of imminent salvation

---

\(^48\)See Motyer, 402, 416.

\(^49\)Ibid., 402.

\(^50\)For a structural analysis showing not only many concatenated interrelations of key terms and phrases, metaphors, and themes but also parallel patterns in 51:1-8, see Hyun Chul Paul Kim, *Ambiguity, Tension, and Multiplicity in Deutero-Isaiah*, SBL, vol. 52 (New York: Peter Lang, 2003), 174-76.

\(^51\)Cf. Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 589; Motyer, 402; Kim, 175; esp. Childs,
The last three sections (51:17-23; 52:1-10, 11-12) are linked by their

401-403. Isaiah 51:1-8 is closely linked to both the preceding and following passages in terms of words, phrases, and content. On the one hand, in its connection with the preceding passage, Isa 51:1-8 shares contextual continuity with chap. 50. Melugin, The Formation of Isaiah 40-55, 159, pointed out not only the verbal repetition of 50:9b in 51:6a, 8a, but also a contextual juxtaposition of 50:4-11 and 51:1-8, by which "pursuers of righteousness" (51:1) can be interpreted as not simply "Israelites" but rather "the faithful" as opposed to those who neither "fear Yahweh nor obey the voice of the servant" (50:10-11). "Of central importance is," furthermore, as Childs, 402, acutely observed, "the continuity of context established in the preceding passage," especially in all the preceding Servant Poems. Isa 50:10-11 challenges those "who fear Yahweh," "who obey the voice of His Servant" to come forward to become identified with the obedient Servant, and thereby to separate themselves from those who heap abuse on the Servant for their personal aggrandizement. Isa 51:1-2 commands those "who pursue righteousness, who seek Yahweh," to return to Abraham and Sarah, to the roots of the faith. The addressee named as "my people," "my nation," in vs. 4 is clearly those who faithfully respond to the Servant. They are commanded to listen to the presentation of God's salvation that has the same goal set forth first to the Servant in 42:1-4. God's law will go forth, for which the coastlands wait (51:4-5//42:4), and his justice will be for "a light to the nations/peoples" (51:4//42:6; 49:6). Childs, 402, pointed out: "The effect of this promise is that the sharp line once separating Israel from the nations has been overcome, and the new people of God emerges as encompassing all those responding in faith to God." The final imperative to listen in vs. 7 further defines the heart of God's people as those "who know righteousness," "the people in whose heart is my law" (cf. 42:4, 6). God's new people, like Israel of old (10:24; cf. Gen 15:1 [Abraham]; 26:24 [Isaac]; 46:23 [Jacob]), is commanded neither to fear the reproach of men nor to be dismayed at their revilings.

On the other hand, Isa 51:1-8 is closely linked to the following passage, as Kim, 175, mentioned, in that it functions as an overture for 51:9-52:12, which anticipates the continuous chains of double imperatives (cf 51:9, 17; 52:1, 11). For the identification of the addressee in 51:1-8, see Kim, 177-86.

52Cf. Motyer, 402; Childs, 402. The double usage of the verb "comfort" clearly echoes its double usage in Isa 40:11. In order to understand the "how" of the comforting, it is to be noted that the central section of the first three makes a chiasm of its key eschatological terms in vs. 5-6: A: righteousness/B: salvation/C: my arms/ D: me/C1: my arm (vs. 5)/B1: my salvation/A1: my righteousness (vs. 6). Its chiastic center highlights the "arm of Yahweh" as a significant eschatological symbol (contra McKenzie, Second Isaiah, 123; Kim, 200) of God's intervention, which is the very "how" of the comforting. Besides, it clearly shows that the "arm of Yahweh" is inextricably bound up with Yahweh Himself or rather it is none other than Yahweh Himself, the source and origin of that comforting. Motyer, 404, also shows that the central section has a focus on the "arm of Yahweh":

A Summons to hear (4a)
B Light to the peoples, salvation speeding (4b-5a)
C The arm of Yahweh (5b)
A1 Summons to look (6a)
B1 The world and its inhabitants transitory, salvation eternal (6bc).
initial double imperatives (51:17; 52:1, 11), respectively commanding people to awake to a new situation which Yahweh has brought about. The two intermediate sections consist of a fervent call to the "arm of Yahweh" to awake (51:9-11) and "a meditative message of reassurance" (51:12-16). The passionate cry to the "arm of Yahweh" to awake (51:9) forms the bridge between the two sets of three sections. The urgent divine imperatives of the preceding sections and the repeated divine promises of imminent salvation have roused a deep longing for their immediate fulfillment—hence the passionate cry to Yahweh for action. The impassioned cry first evokes, without the usual initial imperatives, Yahweh's immediate answer of reassurance (51:12-16),

53 Motyer, 402.
54 See Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 589, 595-96; Motyer, 402.
55 Motyer, 402. Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 597, also mentioned: "The invocation of the 'arm of the LORD' (cf. vs. 5 [in chap. 51]) brings this motif, first sounded in the prologue (40:10), to its highest point thus far and prepares the way for its remarkable development in the two following poems (52:10; 53:1; cf. Luke 1:51)."
56 See Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 595-96; Motyer, 402. Childs, 403-404, correctly observed: "It is crucial to recognize from the larger context of vss. 9-11 within chapters 50 and 51 that the people of God have continued to be defined as the new order of those who seek the Lord and identify with the obedient response of the servant. Verses 9ff. thus emerge as the voice of the new people of God, who now bring forth a prayer for God finally to usher in the long awaited eschatological hope of joy and gladness."
57 To be noted is the remark of Childs, 404-405: "The new element in the divine response to the prayer in vss. 9ff. lies precisely in the new role assigned to those who have responded to the Lord by following in the footsteps of the servant (vss. 1ff.). . . . However, . . . vs. 15a forms a bracket by means of a chiasm with vs. 16b by repeating Israel's ancient covenant formula: I am Yahweh your God (vs. 15a), and you are my people (vs. 16b). This appeal to the Sinai covenant is not strange or out of place for Second Isaiah when one recalls the major role the law plays in the portrayal of the new order of justice (vs. 7). The God of creation who can stir up the sea in obedient response to his will—Yahweh of hosts is his name (Amos 9:5b)—assigns a new role to the faithful remnant [with a promise of his protection]: 'I have put my words in your mouth and hidden you in the shadow of my hand.' For this commission, see also Deut 18:18; Jer 1:9-10, 17-19; 5:14; Isa 49:2; 59:21; cf. Rev 10:9-11. Those who walk in the footsteps of the Servant are assigned a new prophetic task in bringing the good news to Zion, which is an extension of the Servant's task (49:5-6, 8), that is, "to restore the remnant of Israel," and to be "a light to the nations." The execution of this commission is then seen in vss. 17-23 as the message of impending deliverance and restoration for
which opens with "I, even I" (vs. 12), "as if to say 'But I am as alert as ever you might require!'"\textsuperscript{58} However, Yahweh's next reply is humorously dramatic: "You call me to wake up to perform works of salvation, but it is rather for you to wake up to what I have already done: the day of salvation has dawned" (51:17; 52:1, 11).\textsuperscript{59} And then, finally, as if to answer the unspoken question how all this has happened, "Behold, My Servant . . . " (52:13).\textsuperscript{60}

The "arm of Yahweh" (cf. 51:5 [2x; first pl. and then sg.], 9; 52:10; 53:1), which is the most significant key phrase here as an eschatological symbol of God's intervention, makes Isa 51:1-52:12 a unitary whole, and then relates it with the Suffering Servant Poem. The internal chiasm of Isa 51:5-6 makes it clear that the "arm of Yahweh" is inextricably bound up with Yahweh Himself or rather is none other than Yahweh Himself. In light of this it might be said that the identity of the Suffering Servant is already hinted at.

The literary analysis of Isa 51:1-52:12 can be given as follows:\textsuperscript{61}

I. Commands to listen: promises of salvation (51:1-8)

---

\textsuperscript{58}Motyer, 410. See also Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 598; Childs, 404.

\textsuperscript{59}Motyer, 402. Motyer, 414, asserted that they had called on Yahweh (51:9) as if he was asleep, but actually it was they who had slept while momentous things were happening. Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 603, also mentioned: "The fervent mood of 51:9ff. has its counterpart in 52:1ff."

\textsuperscript{60}Motyer, 402.

\textsuperscript{61}Cf. ibid. The diagram is a slightly corrected and modified form of Motyer, especially to supplement a significant element of "My people" in Isa 51:16.
God's comfort for Zion (vss. 1-3)
Zion renewed like Eden (vs. 3)

World revelation: eternal salvation (vss. 4-6)
My people/my nation (vs. 4)
The arm of Yahweh (vs. 5)
Universal salvation (vss. 4-6)

Eternal salvation: human transiency (vss. 7-8)
Fear man not! (vs. 7)

II. Appeal and reassurance (51:9-16)

Israel's appeal (vss. 9-11)
The arm of Yahweh (vs. 9)

God's reassurance of salvation (vss. 12-16)
Why fear man? (vss. 12-13)
My people (vs. 16)

III. Commands to respond: experience of salvation (51:17-52:12)

The cup of God's wrath (vss. 17-23)
The end of God's wrath (vs. 22)

Holy Zion: universal salvation (52:1-10)
My people (vss. 4-6)
The arm of Yahweh (vs. 10)
Universal salvation (vs. 10)

The greater Exodus (vss. 11-12)
Departure without fear (vs. 12)

As shown in the diagram above, the parallel between the promises of salvation in Isa 51:1-8 and the commands in Isa 51:17-52:12 suggests that the promises have been fulfilled and that nothing remains but to enter into the experience of salvation.\(^{62}\) Thus, Isa 51:1-3 promises Zion will be renewed like Eden, and Isa 51:17-23 declares the cup of Yahweh's wrath removed, and therefore the way is open to awake to what Yahweh has already done (51:17).\(^{63}\) However, as Motyer correctly observed, this view of Isa 51:17-52:12 raises a question: How has the wrath of Yahweh been removed?\(^{64}\)

---

\(^{62}\)See ibid., 402, 413.

\(^{63}\)See ibid., 402-404, 413-15.

\(^{64}\)Ibid., 413.
similar way, Isa 52:1-2 calls Zion to enter into a new status of holiness (vs. 1) and royalty (vs. 2) because redemption has been accomplished (52:3-10). How has it been accomplished? A totally new Exodus is called for (52:11-12). How is it possible?

No light is cast on these questions until Yahweh finally summons His people to "behold My Servant" (52:13), with whom finally the "arm of Yahweh" is significantly and

65 As Childs, 406, correctly pointed out, the striking feature of the oracle in vss. 7-10 is its close relation to the prologue of Isa 40-55 (40:1-21, especially the herald of good tidings announcing the return of God to Zion in power as well as the theme of comfort). Arguing, "In a very real sense, vss. 7-10 [in chap 52] form a suitable conclusion to the eschatological drama first announced in chapter 40 and then unfolded in chapters 40-55," Childs cogently explained: "The structure of the oracle makes clear the summarizing function of the unit. The call in vs. 7 evokes a response to the coming messengers of good news who announce the inbreaking of the rule of God. Verse 8 then calls attention to the watchmen seeing the return of Yahweh to Zion, who is shortly to be seen by all. Finally, vss. 9-10 invite all Jerusalem to sing a song of praise because God has comforted his people (cf. 40:1) and all the world will see his salvation. The oracle thus climaxes the prophetic history that has spanned all the succeeding chapters from the prologue of chapter 40" (ibid., italics mine). Finally he pointedly observed: "Nevertheless, the role of 51:7-10 is not simply a rehearsal of what preceded, but it has been decisively shaped by the drama that has unfolded, particularly from chapter 49 onward. Earlier in the corpus the invitation to sing the praises of God had been issued (42:10-12; 44:23; 48:20). However, it is only following the response evoked by the servant that the voice of those who seek the Lord is heard in bringing to Jerusalem the message of God's good news. This is the voice of those confessing God as King, and singing in joy with the watchmen at the return of God to Zion. The prologue had announced the prophetic vision of God's rule. The victories of Cyrus in defeating the oppressor Babylon had confirmed the entrance of God's sovereign rule. However, in 52:7-10 the voice of the new divine order is heard in its song of praise. The reign of God has not just been announced, but the prophetic drama testifies to its actual reception by Zion for all the earth to see" (ibid., italics mine).

66 Motyer, 413, 415-17.

67 Ibid., 413, 420-22.

68 Ibid., 413. Motyer, 424, correctly observed: "See' (hinnēh, 'Behold') has a threefold function: (i) By beginning this Song with hinnēh "abdî ('Behold my Servant') Isaiah brings to a rounded climax the revelation of the Servant which began with hēn "abdî ('Behold my Servant') in 42:1. (ii) The command to 'Behold' concludes the series of commands which began at 51:1; the Servant is the awaited explanation of the predicted universal salvation with all its related blessings. (iii) hinnēh makes a contextual link with 'Behold me!' ('Yes, it is I') in 52:6. The Lord there promised action on behalf of his people in which he would be personally present, and this was followed by this personal coming to Zion (8) after he had bared his arm in salvation (10). It is in the Servant that the Lord fulfills these promises."
conspicuously linked (53:1). In this way the divine promises of salvation in Isa 51:1-8 become the divine commands to enter into the experience of salvation in Isa 51:17-52:12, and all alike rest on the atoning work of the Suffering Servant in Isa 52:13-53:12. 69

Isaiah 54:1-55:13 has human responses as its keynote, as Motyer rightly pointed out: "Many divine acts are spoken of but the only human acts envisaged are responses: to sing (54:1), to enlarge the tent (54:2), to come to the banquet (55:1), to seek the Lord (55:6)." 70

Isaiah 54, which opens with three imperatives to sing for joy over a supernaturally gathered family, is divided by three motifs: "family" (vss. 1-5), "marriage" (vss. 6-10), and "city" (vss. 11-17). 71 In vs. 5 the family section concludes with a reference to Yahweh as Husband and this forms a bridge into vss. 6-10 with their marriage-renewal theme. 72 The concluding note of peace (vs. 10) prepares for the final section in which the storm-tossed city comes to security in peace and righteousness. 73

In the family section 74 two keywords from Isa 52:13-53:12 occur: "the many"

69Ibid., 413.


71Motyer, 444-52. The significance of the present position of chap. 54 within the larger structure of chaps. 40-55 was found not only by observing the depiction of Zion as an abandoned wife in the chapter closely related to the portrayal in 49:1-6 and 51:17-52:12, but also by focusing on the close continuity between the chapter and the Suffering Servant Poem (52:13-53:12) as well as chap. 55. However, as Childs, 426, argued, "the harder question lies in determining the exact nature of the continuity within the context of the larger prophetic drama of Second Isaiah," and "the key may well be in vs. 17 and in 'the heritage of the servants of the LORD.'"

72Motyer, 444-49.


74This section is linked with its previous context of Isa 49:14-26 (see Simon, 223; Motyer, 393).
(52:14-15; 53:11-12) are now become the "many" (more) sons of the barren (54:1); and the "seed" (53:10, "offspring") of the Suffering Servant are now the "seed" (54:3, "descendants") of Zion, which are the results of the atoning work of the Suffering Servant. In the marriage section, the new situation of a restored marriage relationship is summed up as a "covenant of my peace" (54:10), which clearly refers back to the Suffering Servant's peace-making work by the punishment which fell on him (53:5). In the city section, the city's foundation of righteousness (54:14), its people's enjoyment of peace (vss. 13-14), and their status of righteousness before YHWH (vs. 17) doubtlessly refer back to the work done by the Servant (53:5, 11). The city and all its blessings are now declared to belong to "the servants of Yahweh" (54:17), who are

75 Cf. Motyer, 444-45. Motyer remarked: "Those who become the Servant's beneficiaries through the reparation-offering become his children (his offspring/ 'seed'). In 49:21 Zion asked 'Who bore me these?' Here is the answer (cf. 54:1-3, 13ff.). . . . We stray as sheep (vs. 6), we return as children" (ibid., 440, italics his). See also Childs, 426; Seitz, 467.

76 This section is linked with its previous context of Isa 50:1-3, which portrays a broken marriage relationship in which the alienated husband came and "called" (vs. 2) his erring wife to be restored. See Simon, 225; Motyer, 447.

77 Cf. Motyer, 430-31, 447, n. 1, 448-49; Childs, 426. Motyer, 431, argued: "Isaiah opened this sequence of oracles against the background of a peace that was lost (48:18). The Servant stepped forward (49:1) precisely because the wicked cannot enjoy peace (48:22) but needed one to bring them back to God (49:5-6). This has now been done by his substitutionary, penal death. Where there was no peace (48:22) there will be, through the Servant's peace-making work (53:5), a covenant of peace (54:10)." Motyer, 449, asserted: "Just as the Noahic settlement [after the Flood] was formalized into a perpetual covenant, so the work of the Servant leads to a covenant pledging peace in perpetuity." Motyer, 449, rightly contended: "Throughout its history, the divine covenant has always been linked with sacrifice (Gen 8:20ff.; 9:8ff.; 15:9-18; Exod 24:4-8; Ps 50:5). The link here between covenant and peace implies a peace resting on sacrifice--the death of the Servant" (italics his).

78 Cf. Motyer, 449-52, Childs, 426. As Motyer, 449, observed, the city section, the third section of Isa 54, is linked with the first section, the family section, by the theme of Zion's sons (vss. 1, 13) and with the second section, the marriage section, by the note of peace (vss. 10, 13), and "in this way it is a summary and conclusion to the whole [of the chapter 54]."
clearly the offspring (53:10) of the Suffering Servant as a result of his saving work. 79

The servants of Yahweh are identified by the observation of the usage of the term
"servant": "Up to this point Isaiah has used 'servant' only in the singular, but from now on
it is used only in the plural."80 They are also identifiable by the literary structure of the
city section in which Zion's sons (54:13) correspond to "the servants of Yahweh" (vs.
17).81

Isaiah 55, which starts with a threefold imperative to come, is divided by two
main sections (vss. 1-5, 6-13), each of which opens with an invitation (vss. 1, 6-7),
proceeds to the thought of the word of Yahweh as the key factor (vss. 2-3a, 8-11),

---

work of the Servant creates servants. Whatever their blessings, their chief dignity is to
share his title. . . . According to 53:11, the Servant 'provides righteousness' for those for
whom he died. Now the Lord himself validates this gift by affirmation (lit.) 'and their
righteousness is from me'. . . . Their status before God ('servants') could not be more
honourable, nor could their acceptance before him ('righteousness') be more complete."

80Ibid., 451. As for the usage of the term 'servant' only with regard to Yahweh,
Motyer's observation is right. However, the characteristic phenomenon was already
noticed by Elliger, *DeuteroJesaja*, 162. See also J.D.W. Watts, 244; Ralph L. Smith,
Holman, 1993), 416; Kim, 253-56. It has long been recognized that the expression
"servant of Yahweh" is unique in Isa 40-55. As Childs, 430, pointed out, Elliger,
*DeuteroJesaja*, 162, succinctly summarized the issue: Second Isaiah never used the plural
form, but names the servant always in the singular, whereas Third Isaiah never used the
singular, but always speaks of "servants" of Yahweh (54:17; 63:17; 65:8, 9, 13, 14, 15;
66:14). Then, Elliger suggested that 54:17 must therefore be ascribed to the author of
Third Isaiah (ibid., 162-63). Thus, he failed to understand the significance of vs. 17 as a
conclusion to chap. 54. As Childs, 430, lamented, a more disastrous case of exegesis is
that of J.D.W. Watts, 241, 244-45, who designated vs. 17b as the introduction to chap. 55,
thus cutting the crucial link of the "servants" with chap. 54. For the double function of
54:17b not only as a crucial link between Isa 53 and 54 but also as an organic link to Isa
56-66, especially see Childs, 430-31; for the theme of the servants of Yahweh as a major
role in Isa 56-66, especially see W.A.M. Beuken, "The Main Theme of Trito-Isaiah: The

81Cf. Motyer, 450. As Motyer, 450, proposed, the literary structure of the city
section is as follows:

A The beautified city (vss. 11-12)
B Its foundation of righteousness (vss. 13-14)
A' The secure city (vss. 15-17b)
B' Its status of righteousness (vs. 17c).
promises a new world (vss. 3b-5a, 12-13a), and concludes with a statement about Yahweh (vss. 5b, 13b).\footnote{Ibid., 452. For the demarcation of Isa 55 from its preceding and following chapters, see Childs, 433. Childs added: "Verses 12-13 form a conclusion to the chapter, but also to the larger corpus of chapters 40-55" (ibid.).}

The first section (vss. 1-5), which opens with the threefold "come" (vs. 1) followed by a threefold "listen" (vss. 2b, 3a), closes with a threefold guarantee: the covenant (vs. 3bα), the king (vss. 3bβ-5a) and Yahweh (vs. 5b).\footnote{Motyer, 452.} Not only the emphasis on the fact that the feast is gratis, the essence of which is love and forgiveness (see vs. 7), but also the repeated hint of a purchase with a price, though not paid by the invited, inevitably reminds us of Yahweh's salvation with the Servant at its center (see vss. 3-5).\footnote{Ibid., 453.} Verse 3bα gives an explanation of the promise in vs. 3aβ that life is found within the blessings of an "everlasting covenant," further defined as the promises to "David," the world's king (vs. 4).\footnote{Ibid.} Those invited to the feast enter into the blessings of Davidic, world-wide and enduring rule, within which they find the promised soul-renewal.\footnote{For a brief and cogent argument from Ps 89, see ibid., 453-55. See also Otto Eissfeldt, "The Promises of Grace to David in Isaiah 55:1-5," in Israel's Prophetic Heritage: Essays in Honor of James Muilenburg, ed. Bernhard W. Anderson and Walter Harrelson (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1962), 196-207; Childs, 434-37.}\footnote{As Motyer, 454, maintained, the idea of world testimony is rooted in Davidic psalms, among which Ps 18 is particularly relevant to the present passage (see the parallel of Ps 18:43 [H 44], "a people I do not know will serve me," with Isa 55:5, "a nation you [sg.] do not know you will call"). Motyer, 454-55, argued: "But even if Isaiah is not innovating in the thought of a Davidic call to the world, it is still proper to ask why it receives such prominence. The answer is that the book of the King (chapters 1-37) portrayed the Messiah as the fulfillment of the ideal in its royal aspects, but now Isaiah brings the values of the Servant-Messiah within the basic Davidic-Messianic model."} The Davidic world-wide rule is stated in terms of "a witness to the peoples" (vs. 4a),\footnote{Ibid.} and the role of Davidic witness to the world is fulfilled by the
Servant with his prophetic task (42:1-4; 49:2-3; 50:4). Now the Servant here in 55:4 witnesses to the world, not only as the one who suffered for the salvation of the world but also as the one who is to reign as the divinely nominated king. Thus Motyer argued: "It is for this reason that the soul-renewing blessings of verses 1-3 are to be found within David's reign, for the Servant and David are the same person." The phrase "because Yahweh" in vs. 5 indicates that Yahweh is the "magnet drawing the nations into the covenanted Davidic blessings," whereas the same phrase in Isa 49:7 explains that Yahweh is the attraction that makes kings stand and princes bow before the Servant. 

"The Servant is," therefore, "this David who is to come; through whose dying and living again the blessings of David's rule, the 'sure mercies', will be available."

---

88 Ibid., 455. The Servant says in 49:1, "Listen to me, O islands, and pay attention, you peoples from afar," using the term מִיםלְאֻ, the key word that begins and ends 55:4, and thus emphasizing David's world-wide witness.

89 Motyer, 455, commented: "In the tailpiece to the third Song (50:10-11) the true remnant of the people were identified by their listening to the Servant's voice. Now the matching tailpiece to the final Song makes that same voice address the world, not only as the one who suffered for the world's salvation but as the divinely nominated king whose right it is to reign." For the humiliation aspect of the Davidic king in Ps 89, see ibid.


91 Motyer, 455. Motyer added: "In both passages the Lord is the attraction. There he is seen in his appointed Servant and here in this appointed King" (ibid.).

92 Ibid.; cf. Porúbčan, 479, 481; Paul R. House, Old Testament Theology (Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity, 1998), 292, 295; Childs, 436-37. House pointed out that in Isa 55 at last the King and the Servant is coupled, that is, that the Suffering Servant is the Davidic Messiah. Childs, 436, first mentioned that "one of the striking differences between First Isaiah (1-39) and Second Isaiah (40-55) is that the hope of a future messianic figure plays such a central role in the former (chapters 7, 9, 11), whereas it appears to be either unknown or repudiated by the latter." Then, Childs, 437, argued that "the role of the Davidic covenant in chapter 55 is a strong indication that already within Second Isaiah a link between the imagery of the servant and the messianic Davidic rule has been formed." Furthermore, mentioning the intertextual relations of Isa 55 and Ps 89, Childs, 437, dropped a question, "Is it also possible that the numerous references in the psalm to David, not only as the chosen one, but as God's servant . . . also serve as another intertextual link to the dominant servant imagery of Second Isaiah?" Thus, he concluded: "In spite of the strikingly different imagery of First and Second Isaiah—the difference is between royal and nonroyal language—there is evidence that a coercion was exerted in the shaping of the whole Isaianic corpus by a common vision of the ultimate rule of God in justice and compassionate love" (ibid.).
The second section (vss. 6-13), which opens with a tripartite call on the theme of repentance (6, 7a, 7b), closes with a tripartite substantiation of the call (8-9, 10-11, 12-13). The literary structure of Isa 55 has the urgent call to repent (vss. 6-7) as its chiastic center. The deadly abyss between God and humans (vss. 8-9) can be bridged only by the individual response of repentance to Yahweh's offer of forgiveness born of love (vs. 7b), shown to the world through the Suffering Servant (Isa 53). Just like rain and snow as the effective life agent of heaven (vs. 10), the word of Yahweh's mouth as the unfailing agent of the will of God (vs. 11) wills and effectuates the repentance of sinners. The word of God will bring them into joy and peace (cf. 53:5; 54:10), that is, a new life in a new relationship with God, which is symbolized by a new Exodus (vs. 12a).

The new Exodus is not restricted to personal and interpersonal transformations, but reveals that the imagery of the feast is to be understood as hearing the word, and B1-A1 depicts the outrunning word as the agent in re-creation. It is a safe thing to trust this word (C) and also essential because left to ourselves we are astray from the Lord's thoughts and ways (C1). Therefore, the heart of the matter (D) must be a personal seeking of the Lord.

The striking element in this imagery is its parallel to the prologue of the book (chapter 40) which sets out in the beginning the drama of God's intervention for Israel's redemption in terms of the writing of the word of God which stands for ever (40:8). Thus, it is completely fitting as a conclusion of the corpus of Second Isaiah that the prophet returns to the subject that undergirds his entire message.

The history of redemption and of the return of the exiles from Babylonian
that is, the transformation of the human heart and that of the human society (vs. 12a), but it includes environmental transformation, that is, transformation of nature (vss. 12b-13a). Thus, it is ultimately "Paradise Regained," which is as "the fruition of the Servant's work," a memorial (זוה) to Yahweh, "an everlasting sign (אות) which will not be cut off" (vs. 13b).

The terms כְּפֶץ and צָלַח significantly correlate the word of Yahweh and the Suffering Servant (53:10; 55:11). Just as the Suffering Servant was the successful agent of the will of Yahweh (יהוה כְּפֶץ), so the word of Yahweh here is the unfailing agent of the will of God. The word of Yahweh (40:8; 55:11) links Isa 40 and 55, and thus constitutes an inclusio in Isa 40-55. The "arm of Yahweh" (40:10-11; 51:5 [2x], 9; 52:10; 53:1) as the Suffering Servant relates Isa 40 with Isa 51-53, and in an ultimate sense with Isa 54-55. It seems, therefore, that Isa 54-55 brings to a conclusion the whole panorama that opens at Isa 40:1.

captivity can finally best be described as the creation of the divine word working itself in accordance to the purpose of the sovereign Creator of heaven and earth, the Holy One of Israel (cf. Childs, 438).


To be noted is the remark of Smart, 228: "Conquerors in the ancient world were accustomed to set up memorials that would preserve their names and tell of their conquests to future generations. The transformed earth would be the memorial of God's victory, and because it would last forever it would remain forever a sign to all of the power of the living God. What more convincing sign of the reality of God could there be than a transformed earth, a transformed community, and a transformed humanity?"


Cf. Simon, 239; Motyer, 444; Childs, 430-31, 433, 437-38.
In this panorama, as Motyer rightly pointed out, "it is not the Lord's power that is thus revealed, but the Lord's 'name' [vs. 13b], his own inner nature, the sort of God he is."\(^\text{103}\) "The transformed people in a transformed world will be an everlasting sign, will 'signify' who and what the Lord is."\(^\text{104}\) The arm of Yahweh is, therefore, not just a symbol of the power of God, but of his inherent nature.

As for the relationship of the Suffering Servant Poem with Isa 54:1-55:13,\(^\text{105}\) it is to be noted that, on the basis of the atoning work of the Suffering Servant in Isa 52:13-53:12, Zion is called into the covenant of peace (54:10) and the whole world into an everlasting covenant (55:3).\(^\text{106}\) As the Suffering Servant accomplished his saving work (52:13-53:12), the call to enter into its benefits extends to both Zion (chap. 54) and the whole world (chap. 55).\(^\text{107}\) "Thus," as Motyer spoke to the point, "the double task

\(^{103}\)Cf. Motyer, 444.

\(^{104}\)Ibid., italics his.

\(^{105}\)Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 632, frankly admitted the difficulty to find that relationship: "The problem of the relation of this chapter [i.e., 54:1-17] to the poem on the suffering servant is difficult. In every other poem we have encountered transitional devices and echoes of preceding poems, but chap 54 contains relatively few." It seems, however, that his difficulty lies in his argument: "These three strophes [i.e., 52:7-8, 9-10, 11-12] contain the center and climax of the entire collection of poems. The prophet plumbs still greater depths, but the eschatological event which it is his prophetic function to proclaim (40:1-11) is here more powerfully and clearly portrayed than anywhere else. . . . He deals with the great superlatives of eschatology" (ibid., 610). His argument seems to be clearly right (cf. Motyer, 419-20), but seemingly he does not think first about the "how" of Isa 51:1-52:12 and Isa 54-55, that is, the deep valley of the shadow of humiliation, sorrow, and death (52:13-53:12) between the two highest mountains of joy, life, and glory (51:1-52:12; 54-55). See also Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 638, 641, 646.

\(^{106}\)Moyter, 422-23. Moyter, 492, also argued that the covenant references in 42:6, 49:8, 54:10, and 55:5 are directly related to the Servant and his work. Moyter, 492, explicated: "According to 49:8 and 54:10, it is through the Servant that the people of Jacob/Zion enter into the blessings of restoration and peace; according to 42:6 and 55:3, blessings are covenanted world-wide through the Servant."

\(^{107}\)Ibid., 14. Moyter, 456, also contended: "The rewritten brief of the Servant (49:1-6) arose out of the recognition (48:22) that there is no peace for the wicked. Consequently, there can be no unconditional call into blessing. Wickedness, objectively considered, has been dealt with the Servant's death; wickedness, subjectively considered, calls for repentance. If we may say that chapter 54 details the objective, God-given
committed to the Servant (49:6) has been accomplished.\textsuperscript{108} The way is, therefore, open for human responses, pure and simple: to sing over what the Suffering Servant has accomplished (54:1)\textsuperscript{109} and to enjoy a feast for which the Suffering Servant has paid (55:1).\textsuperscript{110}

In Isa 51:1-52:12, while the message of comfort (51:1-16) is its background, the center of the stage is occupied by the theme of "the coming of the king in his glory to usher in the time of salvation" (51:17-52:12).\textsuperscript{111} In Isa 54:1-55:13 the theme of "the inauguration of the new covenant" occupies the center of the stage.\textsuperscript{112} Just as Isa 51:1-52:12 ends with a new Exodus\textsuperscript{113} (52:11-12), so Isa 54:1-55:13 closes with it (55:12-13).\textsuperscript{114} In this light Isa 52:13-53:12 may be supposed to be the "how" of Isa 51:1-52:12 and Isa 54:1-55:13, which is directly connected with the new Exodus. As a concluding remark to the immediate context of the Suffering Servant Poem, Motyer's contention is to be noted:

The three calls to hear promises of a Zion-centered, universal and righteous salvation (51:1-8) and the three matching calls to enjoy the reality of the promised blessings (51:17-52:12) were separated by an appeal to the arm of the Lord for action (51:9). Throughout 51:17-52:12 Isaiah allowed the suspense to

\begin{footnotesize}
\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{108}Ibid., 423.
\item \textsuperscript{109}Ibid., 392, 445.
\item \textsuperscript{110}Ibid., 444, 453.
\item \textsuperscript{111}Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 602, 632.
\item \textsuperscript{112}Ibid., 632, 642.
\item \textsuperscript{113}In contrast to the Exodus from Egypt, the element of peace is described here with the expressions, "not in haste" and "not in flight" (vs. 12).
\item \textsuperscript{114}In contrast to the Exodus from Egypt, the eschatological motifs of "joy" and "peace" and all the glowing imagery of nature (vs. 12) with its transformation (vs. 13) are mentioned here, and thus a totally new exodus is portrayed.
\end{itemize}
\end{footnotesize}
mount: something must have happened, but what? Now we meet the arm of the Lord (53:1), who accomplishes peace with God (53:5; 54:10), establishes people in righteousness (53:11; 54:17) and summons the whole world to pardon (55:6-7) and pilgrimage (55:12). Indeed, the 'You will go out' of 55:12 uses the same verb as 52:11-12, and the Eden promises of 51:1-3 are fulfilled in 55:12-13. Thus, the single 'See'/"Behold' of 52:13 is the climax of the whole series of commands which began at 51:1 and brings the promises (51:1-8) and blessings (51:17-52:12) to rest on the person and work of the Servant, by whom all is accomplished.115

As previously shown, the Suffering Servant Poem "provides a continuation of a lengthy prophetic narrative extending from chapters 40-55 and climaxing in the sequence that follows in chapters 49ff."116 The interpretation of the Poem thus should be dependent upon a correct assessment of the literary and theological function of the text within its own literary context (chaps 40-45), which provides the basic arena from which the Poem must be analyzed and ultimately interpreted.117 In the light of the unfolding drama of God's plan to redeem Israel and the world in Isa 40-55, "the vicarious role of the Suffering Servant lies at the very heart of the prophetic message" as "the exegetical key that unlocks the awesome mystery of these chapters."118

**Literary Genre**

Many attempts have been made to solve the problem of the literary genre or Gattung of the Suffering Servant Poem, but there is still no consensus among scholars.119 On this situation North commented: "This is hardly surprising for a passage in which such a range of human emotions is evoked."120 "It is hard," as Jan L. Koole admitted,

115Motyer, 423.
116Childs, 410.
117Cf. ibid., 410-11.
118Cf. ibid., 418.
119North, *The Second Isaiah*, 234, mentioned, "There is no agreement among form-critics as to the category (Gattung) to which the 'we' verses most nearly approximate; e.g. whether to a penitential psalm or to a psalm of thanksgiving."
120Ibid.

282
"to classify the pericope from a form-critical point of view." Thus, North hesitated to categorize it: "For the moment it is sufficient to say that the Song consists of the words of a human speaker or speakers, set in a framework of pronouncements by Yahweh." It seems, therefore, that Whybray correctly observed: "On the whole, commentators, in so far as they have been interested in form-critical questions, have been unwilling to classify it, regarding it as unique in both form and content." Though it is not possible here to cover all the attempts made to do so, some of the attempts may be briefly referred to.

Some scholars regarded the Suffering Servant Poem as a "penitential psalm" (Bußpsalm) or as a "funeral dirge" (Leichenlied). Although the existence of penitence or lament material in the confession section of the Poem cannot be denied, it is not possible to consider the whole of the Poem as such. Besides, as Koole rightly pointed out, "a lament of the dead mourns the loss of a loved one, and here, the other way round, the death of the despised Servant is cause for gratitude."

---

121 Koole, Isaiah, 2:260.
122 North, The Second Isaiah, 234.
123 Whybray, Thanksgiving, 112.
125 E.g., Hedwig Jahnow, Das hebräische Leichenlied im Rahmen der Völkerdichtung, BZAW 36 (Giessen: Alfred Töpelmann, 1923), 256-65, followed by Mowinckel, 200-206. Mowinckel saw the Poem as a funeral dirge echoing the penitential psalms, as Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 614, rightly mentioned. Mowinckel, 206, concluded: "Taken as a whole the Song is in form an 'inverted' funeral dirge, with elements from the penitential psalms, set within a framework of promise. In content it is a 'kerygma', a 'message', a grateful confession of faith in the Servant, and a proclamation about him and his work by those who have been healed by his sufferings and death; and it is set forth as a testimony to the other Jews, but in reality, as the other poems show (42:4; 49:6), to the whole world."
126 Koole, Isaiah, 2:260; for a more detailed criticism, see Herimsson, "The Fourth Servant Song," 32-33.
As an attempt to establish a connection of Gattung between the four Servant Poems, Klaus Baltzer interpreted them as stages in an "ideal biography" of a prophet. However, Baltzer's hypothesis that the Servant Poems originally comprised the biography of a prophet is nothing but conjectural. His more precise classification of the Suffering Servant Poem into a "trial narrative" (Prozeßbericht) before the heavenly court, followed by Horst D. Preuß, was also unsupported by convincing evidence and rejected due to faulty arguments.

---


128 For more detailed criticisms, see Mettinger, A Farewell, 16-17; Whybray, Thanksgiving, 164, n. 22. Baltzer suggested that all of the four Servant Poems originally formed a single unit with the character of "ideal biography," a genre familiar from Egyptian burial inscriptions ("Zur formgeschichtlichen Bestimmung, 27-43; idem, Die Biographie, 171-77; idem, Deutero-Isaiah, 393-94). Three main objections to Baltzer's thesis can be mentioned. First, he failed to present OT parallels or any evidence for the existence of such a custom in ancient Israel (cf. Whybray, Thanksgiving, 164, n. 22). Second, being forced to seek for comparative extrabiblical materials, Baltzer settled on the Egyptian genre of the 'ideal biography,' but "what we are told about the 'Servant' is strikingly thin, and devoid of external biographical features," as mentioned by Mettinger, A Farewell, 16. Third, Baltzer failed to explain adequately why the originally unified biography should have been dismembered and then incorporated into the passages in which the Servant Poems are now placed (cf. Whybray, Thanksgiving, 164, n. 22; Mettinger, A Farewell, 16).

129 Baltzer, "Zur formgeschichtlichen Bestimmung," 41; idem, Die Biographie, 176; for the full version of his thesis, see idem, Deutero-Isaiah, 394-428.


131 Cf. Whybray, Thanksgiving, 164, n. 22.

132 According to Baltzer, the fourth text of God's Servant is part of a "liturgical drama," "built up into a scene in a court of law, in which the Servant is rehabilitated," "the portrait of which is molded by the Moses tradition" (Deutero-Isaiah, 394, 428). The "trial narrative" follows on from his "view of 42:1ff. as a scene before the 'heavenly court', which is continued and concluded in chap 53," as is indicated by Koole, Isaiah, 2:261. This thesis seems to have at least several problems. First, it fails to do justice to the large middle section 53:2-10 especially in that we cannot clearly distinguish
Both Whybray and Roy F. Melugin independently took Joachim Begrich's form-critical analysis as their starting point. Begrich saw Isa 52:13-53:12 as a unit composed of two speeches of Yahweh (52:13-15; 53:11b-12) with an imitation of the individual psalm of thanksgiving (53:1-11a) in between.\footnote{Joachim Begrich, \textit{Studien zu Deuterojesaja}, BWANT 77 (Stuttgart: W. Kohlhammer, 1938), 56-60; reprint, ed. W. Zimmerli, TB 20 (München: Chr. Kaiser, 1963), 62-66. Begrich here mentioned a noticeable exception in the Suffering Servant Poem to the lament psalm or the thanksgiving psalm, that is, that the sufferer or the saved one himself is not the speaker but the one spoken about. According to Begrich, the purpose of the divine oracles was to give authority to the individual psalm of thanksgiving, the content of which is the prophecy of the prophet's own death and resurrection and the explanation of their necessity and meaning, and to convince those who heard it that it was a true prophecy. For a more detailed criticism, see Whybray, \textit{Thanksgiving}, 110-11, 163, n. 6; Koole, \textit{Isaiah}, 2:260-61.} Westermann like Begrich saw traces of the individual psalm of thanksgiving (or "declarative psalm of praise") in 53:2-11a,\footnote{Westermann, \textit{Isaiah 40-66}, 256-57.} but concluded that its unusual features show that this category of psalm "does no more than form the background" of the composition of the Suffering Servant Poem.\footnote{\textit{Ibid.}, 257. Westermann here mentioned two unusual features: "First, the narrator is not the man himself who experienced deliverance—this man's story is given in the third person; and secondly, those who tell of the Servant's anguish and deliverance have themselves been given salvation by what happened to and through the Servant" (ibid.). Besides, Westermann failed to explain the oracles of salvation as framework, as was pointed out by Koole, \textit{Isaiah}, 2:261.}

Whybray considered the Suffering Servant Poem as much more than an imitation of a thanksgiving psalm.\footnote{Cf. D. F. Payne, "Recent Trends," 4.} He asserted that it corresponds to the type which Hermann between the pros (vss. 4-6, 10) and cons (vss. 2-3, 7-9) in regard to the arguments of the witnesses about the Servant's fate (see Baltzer, \textit{Deutero-Isaiah}, 404-23, esp. 404; cf. Koole, \textit{Isaiah}, 2:261). Second, the two texts Job 1 and Zech 3, which Baltzer regarded as parallels to the fourth Servant text, cannot be exact parallels, particularly in that in Isa 53:1 there is no appearance of "the Accuser" (see Baltzer, \textit{Deutero-Isaiah}, 401-402). Third, Baltzer found much difficulty in interpreting especially 52:14-15 (see ibid., 398-400). Fourth, the events in the life of God's servant Moses cannot fully explicate the Suffering Servant text, especially the vicarious expiatory suffering and death (see ibid., 394, 419-23; \textit{pace} von Rad, \textit{Old Testament Theology}, 261 and n. 43).
Gunkel designated as "the individual psalm of thanksgiving" (*das Danklied des Einzelnen*), but that it was distinctly set in the third person. He made a significant observation that in spite of psalmic parallels there is a major difference from the common liturgical pattern in that thanksgiving is not offered by the suffering petitioner himself but in the third person by another group. So he even formulated a hypothesis in regard to its "setting in life" (*Sitz im Leben*) that Isa 53 was composed for and sung at a Jewish religious assembly of the Babylonian exiles in which the thanksgiving of the individual for deliverance from distress was made in public: *Dankfestliturgie*.

Categorizing Isa 53 into a thanksgiving psalm, Whybray had to make a case for the appropriateness of Yahweh's speech (53:11b-12) as part of the structure. Thus, even though he admitted, "*The divine oracle is not normally an element of the individual* \(^\text{137}\) Whybray, *Thanksgiving*, 110.

\(^{138}\)Ibid., 128-34. Whybray called Isa 53 a "corporate third person thanksgiving song for the deliverance of an individual" (ibid., 128-29). Whybray gave Begrich full credit for the discovery that Isa 53 has the form of the third person thanksgiving psalm for an individual (ibid., 132-34). In Begrich's view, this third person style is merely a literary device through which the prophet spoke about the future, and not an actual cultic psalm of thanksgiving for a past event. To Whybray, however, the third person style is not just an imitation of the individual thanksgiving psalm normally uttered in first person but is rather an appropriation of a cultic genre which employed third person style, that is, a liturgical act in which "the friends of the person offering his individual thanksgiving to God add their voices of praise for his deliverance" (ibid., 112).

\(^{139}\)Ibid., 127.

\(^{140}\)Ibid., 134-36. *Dankfestliturgie*, as Gunkel's coinage (*Einleitung*, 274), was defined as "a composition which combines different Gattungen into a single whole, with different sections spoken or sung by different voices, following the action of a cultic liturgy" (Whybray, *Thanksgiving*, 129). However, Whybray finally regarded it as a liturgy moment, but not as a liturgical composition (ibid., 136).

\(^{141}\)In his enterprise to find a literary genre in the OT corresponding to the Suffering Servant Song, Whybray, *Thanksgiving*, 110, 163, n. 1, isolated Isa 52:13-15 from it and treated Isa 53 as a unit complete in itself. However, Childs, 411, rightly countered: "Whybray's form-critical argument for contesting the consensus does not carry the weight that he attributes to it." See also Payne, "Recent Trends," 4; Koole, *Isaiah*, 2:261.
he presented Ps 91:14-16 as a particularly close parallel to it. However, the earlier part of Ps 91 bears affinities with wisdom psalms and is totally addressed to the sufferer. Besides, it seems that his alleged Gattung and Sitz im Leben of Isa 53 can only be explained by his own hypothesis. Hermisson is right in pointing out that Whybray had to "invent the category of the thanksgiving hymn sung by others for the one who is rescued," but that "this is a mere ad hoc construction and not a proper Gattung." One is left, therefore, with the impression that, on the basis of hypotheses piled upon hypotheses, Whybray seems to have forced the Suffering Servant Poem into a Procrustean bed.

To Melugin the Suffering Servant Poem was much less than an imitation of a thanksgiving psalm. He argued that its language and narrative style form "scarcely more than the background." Thus he concluded that, though different from most speeches of that type, it basically functions as a speech of salvation. Even though his

142 Whybray, Thanksgiving, 123, italics his.
143 Ibid., 124-26.
145 Hermisson, "The Fourth Servant Song," 33, n. 52.
146 Melugin, in his book review on Whybray's Thanksgiving in JBL 98 (1979): 596, argued against Whybray: "The author's contention that Psalm 107 and 118:22-24 serve as evidence that such a genre existed remains doubtful. The evidence is not strong enough to lend to this admittedly intriguing hypothesis the status of probability."
148 Melugin, The Formation of Isaiah 40-55, 74, following Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 207. However, Melugin here mentioned that "his [i.e., Begrich's] emphasis on the poem as an imitation of the psalm of thanksgiving is misleading" (The Formation of Isaiah 40-55, 74).

287
handling of the Suffering Servant Poem "is too brief and cursory to be thoroughly convincing," his assertion that its structure "is basically the prophet's own creation" seems to do more justice to its unique quality than does Whybray's approach to it.

A few scholars called the Suffering Servant Poem a "prophetic liturgy," which is defined as "a literary imitation by the prophet of a type of complex liturgical composition originally used in the Israelite cult." According to Whybray, however, it must be generally said that if in the OT prophetic books a passage is described as a prophetic liturgy it is often equal to an acknowledgment of the failure to achieve a more precise understanding of its structure and meaning. Although it is now recognized that there are some psalms properly to be described as liturgies, and also that cultic forms

---

152 So Payne, "Recent Trends," 5.

154 Cf. Whybray, Thanksgiving, 112; cf. 163, n. 11. Whybray added that it "is characterized by the combination of different types of speech (Gattungen), each sung or spoken by a different person or group of persons" (ibid., 112).
155 Ibid., 112.
were used by some of the prophets, the term "prophetic liturgy" should be carefully used.\textsuperscript{156} The Suffering Servant Poem as a whole "does not resemble any of the liturgies in the Psalter, nor does it correspond to any series of cultic actions known to have been practiced in Israel."\textsuperscript{157}

Johannes Lindblom regarded Isa 53:2-12 as "a prophetic revelation in the form of a vision"\textsuperscript{158} and as "a symbolic narrative, an allegorical picture."\textsuperscript{159} These verses, together with Isa 52:13-53:1, which he saw as "a narrative of historical facts,"\textsuperscript{160} form a compositional unity.\textsuperscript{161} Thus, the first part of the Poem describes "a sequence of actual events,"\textsuperscript{162} as a declaration by Yahweh concerning His Suffering Servant who will be highly exalted, whereas the second is its parallel in symbolic and allegorical language.\textsuperscript{163} Lindblom alleged that in the Suffering Servant Song "reality comes first, the symbol

\textsuperscript{156}Ibid., 112., italics his. Koole, \textit{Isaiah}, 2:261, also asserted that the term should be used with great caution, and that "the expression should be reserved for compositions which were actually performed on certain occasions by various speakers or singers, and such a regular performance is unlikely in the case of Isa 53."

\textsuperscript{157}Whybray, \textit{Thanksgiving}, 112. Von Rad, \textit{Old Testament Theology}, 2:255-56, also admitted: "It must be remembered that not only several of its component forms . . . but also the specific contents of the 'dirge' in particular, go far beyond anything which could have been found in the context of worship."

\textsuperscript{158}Lindblom, 46. He mentioned that "I regard the fourth Servant Song, comprising 53:2-12, as a prophetic revelation in the form of a vision," and that "in one and the same vision the great drama is played out in different scenes, linked together with great artistic skill" (ibid.). He called it "a prophetic revelation" (ibid., 44), "a prophetic revelation, reproduced by the prophet in the form of a vision," "a visionary narrative" (ibid., 43), a "prophetic vision" (ibid., 47), or "a vision in which the prophet sees with his inward eye what is described here" (ibid., 44).

\textsuperscript{159}Ibid., 47. Lindblom also called it "a symbolical and allegorical picture" (ibid., 48; cf. 50).

\textsuperscript{160}Ibid., 48.

\textsuperscript{161}Ibid., 37.

\textsuperscript{162}Ibid., 48

\textsuperscript{163}Ibid., 42, 48.
afterwards,"164 that is, that "the description of reality comes first; and then follows the symbolic narrative."165 According to him, its object "is to make the obscure reality clear and obvious to understanding and emotion."166 Against his contention, however, a question is to be raised: Which is more obscure, "reality" or "symbol"? Which is clearer and more obvious, "a narrative of historical facts" or "a symbolical and allegorical picture"? Besides, though he argued that the task of the exegete here is "to explain the symbolical narrative as such, and then to analyze the historical reality which the symbolical narrative points to," it seems in reality that he worked the other way around.167 Moreover, although Lindblom mentioned that the Suffering Servant Poem has the literary form of a vision in it, "[in] genre-criticism 'vision' means a description which is introduced by the announcement that the prophet has personally seen something."168 Furthermore, although Lindblom contended that Isa 53:2-12 has many parallels in other allegorical passages in the OT, he did not say which of these he is referring to.169 Whybray is correct in observing that the differences between Isa 53:2-12 and other OT parabolic or allegorical passages are "so great that the passage would in fact have to be regarded as an example so exceptional as to make the comparison valueless."170

164Ibid., 47.
165Ibid., 50.
167See ibid., 48-49.
168Koole, Isaiah, 2:261.
169So Whybray, Thanksgiving, 113, pointed out. Lindblom, 103, simply said: "There are many analogies to the allegorical pictures in Deutero-Isaiah in other parts of the literature of the Old Testament. A careful examination of the allegories and parables found, particularly, in the prophetic literature substantially supports the explanation of the Servant Songs here set forth."
170Whybray, Thanksgiving, 113.
As clearly shown thus far, the literary pattern or type of the Suffering Servant Poem is unique and thus it does not correspond to any literary genre or *Gattung* to be found elsewhere in the OT or in the extrabiblical literature.\footnote{Payne, "Recent Trends," 5, concluded: "It is precisely the uniqueness of Isaiah 53 which has defied, and evidently continues to defy, a generally agreed form-critical analysis." Childs, 411, observed a consensus recently growing that the passage is unique, and argued: "Although traditional psalmic conventions lie in the background of the text, the structure is basically a new literary creation, differing in both form and content from the common oral patterns."} Therefore, I only concur with Muilenburg,\footnote{Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 614.} without categorizing the Poem, that it is composed of two divine oracles (52:13-15; 53:11b-12) with a confessional lament (53:1-11a) between them. This reserve also contributes to the insistence that the Suffering Servant Poem should be interpreted within its wider and immediate contexts.\footnote{Cf. Childs, 411.}

**Literary Structure**

The Suffering Servant Poem is generally divided into five strophes of three verses each. According to Motyer, the structure of the Suffering Servant Poem can be chiastically presented:\footnote{Motyer, 423.}

\begin{itemize}
  \item **A** Enigma: exaltation and humiliation (52:13-15)
    \begin{itemize}
    \item YHWH's testimony to His Servant (13) merging into a description of the Servant's suffering and of reactions to it (14-15)
    \end{itemize}
  \item **B** Revelation: human testimony, based on divine revelation, witnessing to the fact and meaning of the Servant's suffering and death (53:1-9)
    \begin{itemize}
    \item b\textsuperscript{1} Suffering observed & misunderstood (1-3)
    \item b\textsuperscript{2} Suffering explained (4-6)
    \item b\textsuperscript{3} Suffering, voluntary & undeserved (7-9)
    \end{itemize}
  \item **A\textsuperscript{1}** Solution: exaltation through sin-bearing (10-12)
    \begin{itemize}
    \item The explanation of the Servant's suffering (10-11b) merging into YHWH's testimony to His Servant (11c-12)
    \end{itemize}
\end{itemize}

Jacques B. Doukhan recently proposed a chiastic structure of the Suffering Servant Poem...
Servant Poem, which consists of five strophes of three verses each:\textsuperscript{175}

\begin{itemize}
  \item A Exaltation of the Servant (52:13-15)
  \item B Humiliation of the Servant (53:1-3)
  \item C Atonement by the Servant (53:4-6)
  \item B\textsuperscript{1} Humiliation of the Servant (53:7-9)
  \item A\textsuperscript{1} Exaltation of the Servant (53:10-12)
\end{itemize}

The above chiastic structures, though well outlined, seem to be derived primarily from the perspective of themes or contents of the Poem. Thus, more recently Ronald Bergey, focusing on its thematic, structural, and vocal alternation as well as verbal repetition, suggested a chiastic structure of six stanzas:\textsuperscript{176}

\begin{itemize}
  \item A "My Servant's" Success and Exaltation (52:13-15)
  \item B\textsuperscript{1} "We" considered him insignificant (53:1-3)
  \item B\textsuperscript{2} "Our" recognition of his sufferings for "us" (53:4-6)
  \item B\textsuperscript{1'} "He" suffered and died, though innocent (53:7-9)
\end{itemize}

---

\textsuperscript{175}Doukhan, \textit{The Messianic Riddle}, 24. Similar kinds of structures have been given by many other scholars. North already noticed five strophic divisions of the Poem: (1) 52:13-15, the future exaltation of the Servant, (2) 53:1-3, the Man of Sorrows, (3) vss. 4-6, his vicarious sufferings, (4) vss. 7-9, his ignominious death, (5) vss. 10-12, his resurrection and reward (\textit{Isaiah 40-55}, 130; idem, \textit{The Second Isaiah}, 234-46). F. Derek Kidner outlined the beautiful structure of the fourth Servant Poem by mentioning: "The poem, unusually symmetrical, is in five paragraphs of three verses each. It begins and ends with the Servant's exaltation (first and fifth stanzas); set within this is the story of his rejection in sections two and four, which in turn frame the centerpiece (vss. 4-6) where the atoning significance of the suffering is expounded. God and man, reconciled, share the telling (see the 'my' and 'I' of the outer sections, and the 'we' and 'our' of 53:1-6)" ("Isaiah," \textit{The New Bible Commentary}, Complete rev. 3rd ed., ed. D. Guthrie and J. A. Motyer [London: Intervarsity, 1970], 618; reprint, \textit{The Eerdmans Bible Commentary} [Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1987], 618; idem, "Isaiah," \textit{New Century Bible: 21st Century Edition}, 4th ed., ed. D. A. Carson et al. [Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity, 1994], 662-63). Youngblood pointed out that the fourth Servant Poem contains five stanzas of three verses apiece, and that each successive stanza is longer than the one preceding it (\textit{The Book of Isaiah}, 157). See also Muilenburg, "Isaiah 40-66," 614; Lindsey, "The Career of the Servant in Isaiah 52:13-53:12," 313-14; Raab, 77-78.

"His" sufferings according to Yahweh's will (53:10-11b)

"My servant's" accomplishments and reward (53:11c-12)

However, Bergey's structure, although rhetorically well divided, does not seem to catch the cultic intention of the author of the Poem. According to my literary analysis, the Suffering Servant Poem seems to have a chiastic structure with a clear cultic intention:

A 52:13-15  [עַבְדִי (vs. 13)]

[רַבִּים (vs. 14); מִשְׁחַת רַבִּים (vs. 15)]

רַבִּים (vs. 14)

מִשְׁחַת (vs. 15)

B 53:1-3  [plant imagery, "sprinkle/זֶה (vs. 2)]

[three passive verbal forms of the Servant's suffering {כָּבֹד/זֶה/בֵּזָה}]

---

177 The terms, which have no cultic connotations, are placed in the brackets, i.e., [ ].

178 The term עַבְדִי recurs chiastically in A1, and thus seems to make the Poem a unified whole.

179 Especially the term רַבִּים is chiastically positioned in A1, and it shows the universal scope of the Servant's vicarious expiation.

180 The term מִשְׁחַת here seems to play a role of double entendre, that is, the role to signify not only the Servant's suffering but also the misunderstood unsuitability to serve as a priest as well as a cultic sacrificial victim.

181 The term זֶה ("sprinkle": Hiphil impf. 3 m. s. of זָה) here denotes the Servant's priestly purifying activity. Thus this cultic term seems to be placed with a clear cultic intention since it constitutes a chiasm with the two terms of cultic priestly performance in A1, that is, with יָצְדִיק ("make/declare righteous": Hiphil impf. 3 m.s. of צָדַק) in 53:11 and יָפִג ("intercede": Hiphil impf. 3 m.s. of פָּגַע) in 53:12. All three verbs not only denote priestly activities of the Servant but also have exactly the same verbal form and aspect, that is, Hiphil impf. 3 m.s.

182 The plant term יָסָר in itself is employed in Isa 11:10 as a Messianic term, and thus it might have some possibility of reminding the hearer/reader of the promised Davidic Messiah of botanical symbols in Isa 4:2; 11:1 (cf. Zech 3:8). It seems that non-cultic imagery is used here, for they, that is, the "we" are not enlightened yet. This botanical imagery chiastically corresponds to the zoological imagery in B1.
C 53:4-6 two significant verbs of expiation (נָשָׂא / סָבַל [vs. 4]), each with a punishment term

[five passive verbal forms of the Servant's suffering {נָשָׂא/סָבַל (vs. 4); נִגַּשׂ/נַעֲנֶה/יוּבָל (vs. 5)}] 185

two sin terms (עָוֹן [vs. 5]; נֶּהמְעֻ [2x; vss. 5-6]) 186

[two benefits of expiation {נִרְפָּא (vs. 5)}] 187

B1 53:7-9 [five passive verbal forms of the Servant's suffering {נִגַּשׂ/נַעֲנֶה/יוּבָל (vs. 7); קָּחלֻ/נִגְזַר (vs. 8)}] 188

animal imagery, נְשַׁי/נְרַחֲל (vs. 7) 189

The term נִבְזֶה (2x; Niphal ptcp. m. s. of בָּזָה) literally means "despised," and the term יְדוּעַ (Qal pass. ptcp. m. s. cstr. of יָדַע) has the literal meaning of "acquainted with." The terms, chiastically distributed, express the passivity of the Servant in his humiliation and sufferings. From the human perspective of the "we," the sufferings are seen to be inflicted on the Servant by God.

In light not only of the two sin terms in vss. 5-6 but also two significant clauses of vicarious expiation with a sin term each in A1, the two significant verbs of expiation here seem to clarify חֳלָיֵנוּ "(our griefs/sickness") and בֵינוּwebkit:=MathematicalFormula\{\text{ชะמך}" (our sorrows/pains") as terms of punishment inflicted on sin. The chiastic center C highlights the Servant's vicarious expiatory sacrifice through these two verbs of expiation and two nouns of punishment, which is finally emphasized in the concluding section A1 through the two significant clauses of vicarious expiation as well as the expiatory sacrificial offering אָשָׁם.

The two verbs of expiation appear chiastically in A1.

The term נָגוּעַ (Qal pass. ptcp. m. s. of נָגַע) literally means "stricken," נֶּהמְעֻ (Hophal ptcp. m. s. cstr. of נָקָה) "smitten," נָפוּל (Pual ptcp. m. s. of יוּל) "afflicted," מְחלָל (Poal ptcp. m. s. of חָלַל) "pierced" or "wounded," and כָּאמְדֻ (Pual ptcp. m. s. of דָּכָא) "crushed." All of these five passive participle verbal forms with strong nuances of suffering, concentrated on the chiastic center of the Poem, significantly emphasize the passivity and severity of the Servant's suffering.

The sin terms עָוֹן (vs. 5; cf. עָוָה in vs. 12), נֶּהמְעֻ (3x; vss. 5, 6, 11), and חֵטְא (vs. 12) are three major termini technici of sin.

לָשָׁם and נִרְפָּא (Niphal ptcp. m. s. of נְרַחֲל) are benefits of the vicarious expiation made by the Suffering Servant.

The term נִגַּשּׁ (Niphal pf. 3 m. s.) means "he was oppressed," נִגְזַר (Niphal ptcp. m. s.) "afflicted," נֶּהמְעֻ (Hophal impf. 3 m. s.) "he was led," נָפוּל (Qal pass. pf. 3 m. s. paus.) "he was taken away," and נִגְזַר (Niphal pf. 3 m. s.) "he was cut off." Thus, all of the five passive verbal forms highly emphasize the passivity of the Servant's suffering.

The animal term נְשַׁי here in the Poem seems to play a role of double entendre,
A\(^1\) 53:10-12  [one verbal form with a passive nuance of the Servant's suffering {דַּכְּאוֹ (vs. 10)}]^{190}

reparation offering (אָשָׁם [vs. 10])

[עַבְדִּי (vs. 11)]

[רַבִּים (vs. 11); רַבִּים (vs. 12)]

[טַכָּל (vs. 12); נֶשַׁא (vs. 12)]

[one passive verbal form of the Servant's suffering {נִמְנָה (vs. 12)}]^{191}

[כָּפֶש (vs. 12)]

Two imageries, that is, plant imagery (יוֹנֵק and רֶשָׁש) and animal imagery (שֶׂה and רָחֵל), make a chiasm, and thus the cultic animal term שֶׂה contributes to the chiastic structure of the Suffering Servant Poem:

B 53:1-3  (vs. 2)

B\(^1\) 53:7-9  (vs. 7)

Besides, the terms אָשָׁם (as a term for an offering) and מִשְׁחַת (as a noun related to a term of unacceptability for a sacrificial victim) are chiastically placed in the outer wings and contribute to the chiastic structure:

A 52:13-15  (vs. 14)

A\(^1\) 53:10-12  (אָשָׁם (vs. 10))

that is, the role of the Servant as a sacrificial victim as well as his self-submission.

^190^The term דַּכְּאוֹ (Piel inf. cstr. of דָּכָא with 3 m. s. suffix) means "to crush him," that is, "to make him crushed." The term הֶהֱלִי (Hiphil pf. 3 m. s. of חָלָה) in vs. 10 is related to the Servant's suffering, but with an active nuance in that it literally means "He [Yahweh] caused him [the Servant] to be sick," and thus that the Servant has a more agent role of "being sick." See Waltke and O'Connor, 352-59.

^191^The term as a Niphal perfect 3 m. s. means "he was numbered," and thus it denotes the passivity of the Servant's suffering.
Further, the term מִשְׁחַת (now as a noun related to a term of unacceptability for a priest as well as a sacrificial victim) and the clauses עָוֹן סָבַל/חֵטְא נָשָׂא (as expressions for a function of a priest as well as a sacrificial victim) make a chiasm and thus contribute to the total chiastic structure:

A 52:13-15 מִשְׁחַת (vs. 14)
A₁ 53:10-12 סָבַל/חֵטְא נָשָׂא (vs. 11)

The verbs יַזֶּה, יַצְדִּיק and יַפְגִּיעַ (as terms for priestly activity), and the clauses סָבַל/עָוֹן נָשָׂא/חֵטְא (now as a term of function as a priest) are chiastically placed in the Poem and thus contribute to its chiastic structure:

A 52:13-15 יַזֶּה (vs. 15)
A₁ 53:10-12 יַצְדִּיקו (vs. 11); יַפְגִּיעַ (vs. 12)

Significantly the three verbs not only denote priestly activities of the Servant but also have the same verbal form and aspect (Hiphil impf. 3 m.s.).

Therefore, the Suffering Servant Poem, although non-cultic terms (רַבִּים and in the outer wings and יְוֵי, רוּחַ, נִי, רֶשֶׁת, and eight passive verbal forms of suffering in the inner wings) are chiastically positioned in it, has a cultic-oriented chiastic structure, especially because cultic allusive terms/clauses are chiasically positioned in it. Besides, the nearer we approach the chiastic center, although suffering terms permeate all panels of the Poem, the more prominent the Servant appears as a sacrificial victim: suffering, dying, and finally dead. On the other hand, the farther we move from the center, the more prominent the Servant shows up as a priest performing his priestly roles. Thus, although the sanctuary is not explicitly mentioned in the Poem, we have here a cultic sacrificial animal, a cultic expiatory offering, a cultic priest, and cultic priestly activities. Moreover, the nearer we draw to the chiastic center, the beneficiary of the expiation narrows down to Israel exclusively, whereas the farther we step back from it, the
beneficiary broadens to the many people of the world inclusively. Furthermore, it is also very interesting to know that the stage for the Hebrew cultic orientation of the Poem has been prepared at least from Isa 52:1 onward (vss. 1, 11; cf. vs. 12), which was already indicated in the preceding chapter of this research.

As we read the Suffering Servant Poem, we cannot help but acknowledge von Rad's observation:

The unusual aspect of this great poem is that it begins with what is really the end of the whole story, the Servant's glorification and the recognition of his significance for the world. This indicates, however, one of the most important factors in the whole song--the events centering on the Servant can in principle only be understood in the light of their end. It is only thus that all the preceding action can be seen in its true colors.\(^{192}\)

The Poem also reminds us of an intriguing literary device, which opens the first chapter of a story with the title, "Beginning of the End," and its last chapter with the title, "End of the Beginning."\(^{193}\) This literary device gives the reader or hearer some dramatic effect. The first part arouses in one's mind some curiosity about and some expectation for what is about to happen. Then the last part leaves in one's heart some reverberation of what has already happened. In light of this device, the Suffering Servant Poem can be also structured as follows:

\[ \begin{array}{l}
A \quad \text{Beginning of the End of the Servant's Life (52:13-15)} \\
B \quad \text{The Servant's Life Story Proper (53:1-9)} \\
A^1 \quad \text{End of the Beginning of the Servant's Life (53:10-12)} \\
\end{array} \]

Therefore, it seems that this structure of the Poem wonderfully corresponds to that

---

\(^{192}\)von Rad, *Old Testament Theology*, 2:256. Childs, 412, noted: "It is highly significant that the divine oracle in 52:13 begins, not with the servant's humiliation, but with his exaltation, a theme that returns to climax the second divine speech concerning the servant in 53:1ff. His exaltation in 52:13, '[he] shall prosper, be exalted,' also forms the initial perspective from which the voice of the 'we' speaks. This group confess finally to have understood his true role in their salvation." See also Sawyer, *Prophecy and the Biblical Prophets*, 92-93; Webb, 210.

\(^{193}\)For such an example, see A. J. Cronin's representative religious novel, *The Keys of the Kingdom* (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1945).
of the Book of Isaiah as a whole from the perspective of Messianic portraits:

A  Beginning of the End (chaps. 1-39; the King: His Glorious Kingdom of Justice and Righteousness)

B  The Story Proper (chaps. 40-55; the Servant: His Advent as a Vicarious Expiatory Sufferer)

A1 End of the Beginning (chaps. 56-66; the Warrior: His Advent as a Judging Conqueror)

The Speakers and Their Audience

The interpretation of the Suffering Servant Song largely depends on the identification of the speakers and their audience in it.\(^{194}\) Thus the identification of them is indispensable to the process of its interpretation. The one who is speaking is naturally the prophet Isaiah, but we have to find out for whom he is speaking and also to whom he is speaking.

In 52:13-15 the speaker is clearly Yahweh himself, as is evident from the phrase "my Servant" (vs. 13). The audience must be Israel, since "many nations (or Gentiles)" and "kings" are referred to in the third person plural ("they," "their," "them"); see vs. 15).

In 53:1-11a the speaker cannot be identified with the Servant because the Servant is referred to in the third personal singular ("he," "him," "his") and the speaker in the first person plural ("we," "our," "us").\(^{195}\) The lexical link on the root שָׁמַע between 52:15b

---

\(^{194}\)Seitz, 460, remarked: "The greatest challenge of this profound tribute to the suffering servant—decisive for exegesis—includes a correct appraisal of who is speaking." Childs, 411, also mentioned: "Especially difficult, but crucial to its interpretation, is the determining of the antecedents of the references in 52:15 and 53:12, as well as the understanding of the confessing 'we' in the middle section." North, Isaiah 40-55, 130, already remarked: "Here the speaker in 52:13-15 and 53:11-12 must be Yahweh (cf. 'My Servant'). Who the speakers ('we') are in 53:1-10 is not indicated and is the most vigorously debated question[; or rather one of the most vigorously debated questions] arising out of the interpretation of the Song" (cf. idem, The Second Isaiah, 234).

\(^{195}\)Cf. Doukhan, The Messianic Riddle, 25.
and 53:1a suggests that the speaker cannot be the kings and the nations, either.\textsuperscript{196} For
the speaker who already got the "report" (נ práctica)\textsuperscript{197} in 53:1a cannot also be the one who
is supposed to "hear" (_hear_ ) this report in 52:15b.\textsuperscript{198} How can the speaker who exclaims,
"Who has believed our report?" be identified with the kings and the nations in light of the
fact that the latter are portrayed as those who "shut their mouths" and never "heard" this
report.\textsuperscript{199} Therefore, the speaker here should be Israel, but not the Gentiles.\textsuperscript{200} An
investigation of the first person plural ("we," "our," "us") in the book of Isaiah also
reveals that whenever it is used, except at 1:18a, it always refers to Israel.\textsuperscript{201} On the

\textsuperscript{196}Ibid.; Koole, Isaiah, 2:275-76; Seitz, 465.

\textsuperscript{197}Elsewhere in the book of Isaiah the term occurs three times (28:9; 19; 37:7). Elsewhere in the OT it occurs 23 times (1 Sam 2:24; 4:19; 2 Sam 4:4; 13:30; 1 Kgs 2:28; 10:7; 2 Kgs 19:7; 2 Chr 9:6; Ps 112:7; Prov 15:30; 25:25; Jer 10:22; 49:14, 23; 52:46 (3x); Ezek 7:26 (2x); 16:56; 21:7; Dan 11:44; Obad 1:1). The term belongs to one of the
three subgroups of the feminine reduplicated pattern, and the subgroup of concrete
nouns, to which it belongs, denotes the 'result or product of an act' (see Waltke and
O'Connor, 90). Thus the term literally means "what is heard" (see, e.g., Mowinckel, 200;
Westermann, Isaiah 40-66, 260; Hermisson, "The Fourth Servant Song," 35; Doukhan,
The Messianic Riddle, 25). Oswalt correctly argued: "In most of its other occurrences in
the OT, the word describes a 'heard' thing, and thus may be translated by 'rumor' or
'report' (cf. LXX and AV). However, the use of 'report' here suggests something told by
'us,' which does not seem correct" (Isaiah 40-66, 374, n. 57). For a more detailed
discussion on חדש in Isa 53:1, see Delitzsch, 2:286-87; Nyberg, 48-49; Koole, Isaiah,
2:276. As forsted here, Koole asserted that the rendering "what we have heard' is
probably the most correct one" (ibid.).

\textsuperscript{198}See, e.g., Koole, Isaiah, 2:276; Doukhan, The Messianic Riddle, 25.

Mowinckel, 199-200, mentioned: "The speakers have themselves seen the Servant grow
up in their midst; therefore they are Jews. They have already 'heard' what foreign
nations and kings had not yet heard (52:15)."

\textsuperscript{199}Cf. Doukhan, The Messianic Riddle, 25; Koole, Isaiah, 2:276. Koole rightly
argued "it is strange that the nations who, without previously hearing of the Servant, now
pay tribute to him, would talk about 'our' unbelief" (ibid.).

\textsuperscript{200}Cf. Koole, Isaiah, 2:276; Doukhan, The Messianic Riddle, 26-27.

\textsuperscript{201}See Doukhan, The Messianic Riddle, 26. Delitzsch already observed:
"Whenever a 'we' is suddenly introduced in a prophecy, it is always Israel that speaks,
since the prophet takes the nation along with himself (16:6; 24:16; 42:24; 64:5, etc.)"
(2:286; cf. Oswalt, Isaiah 40-66, 381 [see also, however, 384, n. 4]). Childs, 413,
argued further that "from a form-critical perspective, the confessing 'we' of the Old
Testament is always Israel and not the nations (Hos 6:1ff.; Jer 3:21ff.; Dan 9:4ff., etc.)."
basis of the observations in Isa 52:15b-53:1a and in the whole context of Isaiah, it is reasonable to conclude that the speaker is Israel, who first saw the Servant entirely from a human perspective (vss. 1-3) and then from an enlightened viewpoint (vss. 4-6, 7-11a). If the speaker in 53:1-11a is Israel, then the audience must be the Gentiles, since Yahweh, like the Servant, is referred to in the third person singular ("Yahweh": vss. 1, 6, 10 [2x]; "him": vs. 2; "God": vs. 4).

In 53:11b-12 the speaker is again Yahweh himself, as is evident not only from the phrase "my Servant" (vs. 11b) but also from the first person singular "I" (vs. 12a). The audience is again Israel, since "the many" (vs. 11b) are referred to in the third person plural ("their"; vs. 11b).

In the Suffering Servant Poem, therefore, the Servant is clearly distinguished from the people of Israel, whereas he is closely related to them. In terms of the speakers and their audience, the pericope of the Suffering Servant again shows a chiastic structure:

A  Yahweh: speaker; Israel: audience (52:13-15)
B  Israel: speaker; Gentiles: audience (53:1-11a)
A¹  Yahweh: speaker; Israel: audience (53:11b-12)

Summary

This literary analysis has clearly shown that not only Isa 40-55 but also the Suffering Servant Poem in itself is an exquisite masterpiece of Hebrew literature. Among the views on the literary structure of the book of Isaiah, Motyer's view is

---

202 For the history of interpretation of "עַמִּי" in vs. 8bβ, see Koole, Isaiah, 2:310-11; cf. Oswalt, Isaiah 40-66, 396. Koole is right in concluding that "the prophet continues and elaborates on the confession of the 'we' in solidarity with his people (5:13; 10:12; 22:4, etc.); cf. 42:24 and the change of person in Ps 59:12 [H 13] and 78:1ff" (Isaiah, 2:310).

203 See also "the many" in vs. 12aa and its parallel "the numerous" in vs. 12aβ.

204 See also Doukhan, The Messianic Riddle, 27.
generally acknowledged to be quite convincing and vital to the understanding of the book of Isaiah, especially to that of the Suffering Servant Poem. Thus Motyer's view was mainly employed, with minor modifications, for my study.

The book of Isaiah seems to be structured around three Messianic portraits: the King (chaps. 1-39), the Servant (chaps. 40-55), and the Warrior (chaps. 56-66). Thus it can be said that the Servant section is thematically in the chiastic center of the book of Isaiah. Besides, in a significant sense the Suffering Servant Poem, along with the second and third Servant Poems, is shown to be in the chiastic center of the Servant section. Therefore, it is not too much to say that the Suffering Servant Poem is in the chiastic center of the book of Isaiah as a whole.

In that center Cyrus and the Servant are contrasted in parallel with each other. Evidently there are significant implications in the paralleled contrast of Cyrus and the Servant. First, the Servant is to be interpreted as the Messiah who delivers not only Israel, but also the Gentiles, from universal/spiritual captivity to sin, but not in the way that Cyrus who liberated Israel from national/physical bondage in Babylon. Not only their missions, but also the scopes of their missions are completely different. Cyrus accomplished his mission through political and military means, whereas the Servant fulfilled his mission of vicarious expiation through spiritual means. Thus the means of the fulfillment of their missions are totally different also.

My investigation of the place of the Suffering Servant Poem among the Servant Poems (42:1-9; 49:1-13; 50:4-11) shows that they are lexically, thematically, and structurally interrelated. The first and second Servant Poems are linked by the phrases "a covenant for the people" and "a light to the nations," and that chiastically. The second and fourth Servant Poems are interrelated by the universal response, whereas the third and fourth ones are correlated by the motif of "hiding of the face." The second, third, and fourth Servant Poems are related not only by a motif of humiliation but also
terms that describe the motif, which identifies the Servant as the Suffering Servant. Through the motifs of humiliation and "hiding of the face" the suffering of the Servant gradually becomes intensified and portrayed in detail that the Suffering Servant Poem can be said to be the climax of the Servant Poems. The introductory phrase, "Behold, my servant" (42:1; 52:13), seems to play the role not only of the architectonic bridge to connect the first Servant Poem with the fourth but also of the outer bracket to categorize the four Servant Poems. Significantly the motif of "justice," which is the primary Leitwort for the intervention of Yahweh's Servant into world history and thus for his ultimate task in it, ironically keeps running throughout the Servant Poems, from the first Servant Poem to the fourth.

According to Motyer's diagram, the position of the first Servant Poem shows that the Servant is Yahweh's answer to the world's plight. Then, each position of the second, third, and fourth Servant Poems informs that Israel's double need of release from national bondage and forgiveness of sins is met by Yahweh's double reply of liberation and atonement, the agents of which are Cyrus and the Servant. Cyrus's task, the deliverance from Babylonian captivity, is accomplished, whereas the Servant's task, the greater deliverance from spiritual captivity to sin, is about to be enacted, of which another evidence is that from Isa 49 onward neither the name Cyrus nor the name Babylon occurs again. Thus, Cyrus leaves the stage of world history, and instead the Servant suddenly steps back onto the stage.

The literary analysis of Isa 51:1-52:12 reveals that it is linked lexically, thematically, and logically with Isa 52:13-53:12. The "arm of Yahweh" (cf. 51:5 [2x; pl. and then sg.], 9; 52:10; 53:1), which is the most significant key phrase here as an eschatological symbol of God's intervention, makes Isa 51:1-52:12 a unitary whole, and then relates it with the Suffering Servant Poem.

The parallel between the divine promises of salvation in Isa 51:1-8 and the divine
commands in Isa 51:17-52:12 suggests that the promises have been fulfilled and the way is open to the experience of salvation. No light is cast on the question "How is it possible?" until Yahweh finally summons His people, "Behold My Servant" (52:13). It is possible only because of the atoning work of the Suffering Servant in Isa 52:13-53:12.

The literary analysis of Isa 54:1-55:13 shows that it is lexically, thematically, and logically interrelated to Isa 52:13-53:12. It has human responses (54:1-2; 55:1-3, 6) as its keynote clearly related to Yahweh's salvific acts done through the Suffering Servant.

In Isa 54 its most significant key word or phrase is related to the term "servant." Up to Isa 53 the term has been used only in the singular, but just from Isa 54 onward it is used only in the plural, the "servants of Yahweh" (vs. 17; cf. vss. 1, 3). They are clearly the "many" (53:11), who are justified, and without doubt the "seed" (vs. 10) of the Suffering Servant as the result of his work of atonement.

The terms "peace" (54:10, 13) and "righteousness" (54:14, 17) also reflect the effects or benefits of the atonement fulfilled by the Suffering Servant (53:5, 11). The term "covenant" (54:10; 55:3) relates Isa 54 with Isa 55, and then Isa 54:1-55:13 with Isa 51:1-52:12, and ultimately the Suffering Servant Poem with its preceding and following texts. The theme of the coming of the King to Zion in his glory to usher in the time of salvation occupies the center of the stage in Isa 51:1-52:12, whereas the theme of the inauguration of the new covenant occupies the center of the stage in Isa 54:1-55:13. Both themes come under the umbrella of the atonement of the Suffering Servant in Isa 52:13-53:12.

Just as Isa 51:1-52:12 ends with a new Exodus (52:11-12), so Isa 54:1-55:13 closes with it (55:12-13). Thus, Isa 52:13-53:12 can be the "how" of the new Exodus of its preceding and following texts. The Exodus from Egypt proceeds to the inauguration of the old covenant and then to the cultic service through the sanctuary. It seems, however, that in the reverse order the cultic service of the Suffering Servant proceeds to
the inauguration of the new covenant and then to the new Exodus.

The terms חָפֵץ and צָלַח (53:10; 55:11) significantly correlate the Suffering Servant and the word of Yahweh. Just as the Suffering Servant was the successful agent of the will of Yahweh (יהוה חֵפֶץ), so the word of Yahweh as the unfailing agent of the will of God wills and effectuates the repentance of sinners, and regains the Paradise, which is the fruition of the Servant's work. Then, the word of Yahweh (40:8; 55:11) links Isa 40 and 55, and thus constitutes an inclusio in Isa 40-55. The "arm of Yahweh" (40:10-11; 51:5 [2x], 9; 52:10; 53:1) as the Suffering Servant significantly relates Isa 40 with Isa 51-53, and in an ultimate sense with Isa 54-55. It seems, therefore, that Isa 54-55 brings to a conclusion the whole panorama which opens with Isa 40.

The literary analysis of the immediate context of the Suffering Servant Poem, therefore, can be summed up: First, Isa 52:13-53:12 as a self-contained unit is lexically, thematically, and logically related to both the preceding text unit (51:1-52:12) and the following one (54:1-55:13); second, the Suffering Servant Song portrays the significant foundational event as the causa sine qua non of the events described in the preceding and the following texts.

Regarding the genre of the Suffering Servant Poem, its literary pattern or type is so unique that it does not correspond to any literary genre or Gattung to be found elsewhere either in the OT or in the extrabiblical literature. Therefore, I only concur with Muilenburg, without classifying the Poem, that it consists of two divine oracles (52:13-15; 53:11b-12) with a confessional lament (53:1-11a) between them.

The Suffering Servant passage has a chiastic structure with a clear cultic intention. Two imageries, that is, plant imagery (יוֹנֵק and רֶשֶׁ) and animal imagery (שֶׂה and רָחֵל), are chiastically positioned in the Poem, and thus the cultic animal שֶׂה contributes to the chiasm. The terms אָשָׁם (as a term for offering) and מִשְׁחַת (as a noun related to a term of unacceptability for a sacrificial victim) are chiastically placed in the Poem and contribute
to its chiastic structure. Furthermore, the term מִשְׁחַת (now as a term of unacceptability for a sacrificial victim as well as a priest) and the clauses סָבַל /עָוֹן (as expressions for function of a sacrificial victim as well as a priest) form a chiasm and contribute to the chiastic structure. The verbs חֵטְא, נָשָׂא and עָוֹן (as expressions for function as a priest) and the three verbs יַזֶּה, יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ (as verbs of priestly activity), and the clauses חֵטְא, נָשָׂא, עָוֹן, סָבַל (now as expressions for function as a priest) are chiastically positioned in the Poem and thus contribute to its chiastic structure. Significantly the three verbs not only denote priestly activities of the Servant but also have the same verbal form and aspect (Hiphil impf. 3 m.s.).

Therefore, the Suffering Servant Poem, although non-cultic terms are also chiastically positioned in it, has a cultic-oriented chiastic structure, especially because cultic allusive terms/clauses are chiastically placed in it. Although the sanctuary is not explicitly mentioned in the Poem, we have here a cultic sacrificial animal, a cultic expiatory offering, a cultic priest, and cultic priestly activities.

The Suffering Servant Poem also has an unusual, intriguing literary structure, which indicates, above all things, that the event centering on the Suffering Servant can be properly understood only in the light of its end. Besides, from the perspective of Messianic portraits, this structure seems to wonderfully correspond to that of the Book of Isaiah as a whole.

The identification of the speakers and their audience in the suffering Servant Poem was done by investigating not only the usage of the personal pronouns but also the lexical link on שָׁמַע between Isa 52:15b and 53:1a. In 52:13-15 and 53:11b-12 the speaker is Yahweh and the audience is Israel, whereas in 53:1-11a the speaker is Israel and the audience is the Gentiles. The Suffering Servant, though a major dramatis persona, is always referred to the third person singular, and thus he is neither the speaker nor the audience. In terms of the speakers and their audience, therefore, the pericope of the Suffering Servant also shows a chiastic structure.

305
My literary analysis as well as Motyer's literary structure in regard to Isa 40-55 clearly shows that the four Servant Poems are integral parts of the Isaianic corpus and thus are to be interpreted in their own contexts, both wider and immediate. Nevertheless, they can be regarded as a distinct group which reveals a significant aspect of Isaianic theology. Furthermore, it is evident that literarily and thematically the Suffering Servant Poem as the longest of all the Servant Poems reaches its climax. In conclusion, the cultic language in the Poem is most probably used as a vehicle to reveal God's plan of salvation through the Servant's substitutionary or vicarious suffering and death by reminding its readers or hearers of the Hebrew cultic system.
CHAPTER V

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS

This research was initiated for the purpose of discovering the nature or meaning of the suffering of Yahweh's Servant in the Suffering Servant Poem (Isa 52:13-53:12). For that purpose I investigated cultic allusions in the Poem. Thus, focusing mainly on the lexical study of the allusions, I would like to summarize other parts of my research as briefly as possible.

My survey of literature shows that the background of the Suffering Servant Poem is to be found in the Israelite cultus, but not in ancient Near Eastern mythological cults, and that thus the degree and the nature of the Servant's sufferings are to be determined by a penetrating as well as comprehensive study of the text, specifically from the Hebrew cultic perspective. However, there has never been any careful, comprehensive study of Hebrew cultic allusions in the Poem in connection with Yahweh's Suffering Servant.

The Suffering Servant Poem does not have just one point of contact, but many points of contact with the Hebrew cult. The contact is significantly made through the allusions to the Hebrew cultus. My lexical study on the allusions is carried out by lexicographical, text-critical, and contextual investigations, specifically for nine terms and two clauses. The nine terms are מִשְׁחַת, יַזֶּה, שֶׂה, אָשָׁם, יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ, and the three major sin terms חֵטְא, עָוֹן, פֶּשַׁע, and the two clauses are עָוֹן סָבַל and חֵטְאנָשָׂא. They can be divided into two categories, cultic technical terms and terms that, although not technical cultic terms, can be similarly used in cultic contexts. To the former belong מִשְׁחַת, יַזֶּה, שֶׂה, אָשָׁם, and the two clauses סָבַל עָוֹן and חֵטְאנָשָׂא, and to the latter belong יַצְדִּיק, יַפְגִּיעַ, פֶּשַׁע, and the two clauses חֵטְא and עָוֹן.
Not all of the terms and clauses investigated in the lexical study have proven to be equally convincing with respect to the main point at issue here. Their cumulative weight, however, must be impressive, especially when all these terms and clauses appear in a single pericope of the Suffering Servant Poem. In view of the fact that even a single word or phrase is significant in the intertextual allusion of the Hebrew Bible, the remarkably high density of cultic allusions in the Poem cannot escape our attention. Without considering their intertextuality with Pentateuchal ritual texts, the Suffering Servant Poem would simply be unintelligible in many respects. Thus, in the lexical study I have tried to find out the specific, ultimate loci of the allusive words and clauses, that is, their original cultic contexts, to identify their significations and concepts in those contexts, and then to reveal their meanings and functions as authorial intentions in the context of the Suffering Servant Poem.

Although the sanctuary itself is not mentioned in the Poem, the Servant of Yahweh is portrayed as a cultic sacrificial animal, a cultic expiatory offering, and a cultic priest performing significant cultic activities.

The Suffering Servant is depicted in the Poem as a cultic sacrificial animal. For the term שֶׂה in Isa 53:7, which is the representative animal of, as well as the individual term for, "small cattle/livestock," alludes to a cultic animal, that is, a young or kid of either sheep or goats and of either gender. Verses 7-8a, in which vs. 7 seems to make a chiasm with vs. 8a, give us the impression that the Servant of Yahweh "was taken away"(קָחל) "like a lamb" or "like a ewe," that is, that just like an innocent, sacrificial animal he was killed innocent. The expressions "like a lamb that is led to the slaughter" (vs. 7bα) and "like a ewe that is silent/dumb before her shearers" (vs. 7bβ) vividly portray not only the Servant's "passive attitude" to the worst condition of the oppression and affliction (vs. 7aα) but also his "willing and hopeful submission" to the will of God for
his mission (cf. 42:4a; 49:4b; 50:5-10). This fact is even confirmed and emphasized by
the double mention of the fact that "He did not open His mouth" (vs. 7aβ,c). The
Servant's silence was "eloquent silence" that speaks not only his total submission to God's
will but also his full trust in God (cf. Ps 38:12-15 [H 13-16]).

The Servant's willing and waiting submission forms a striking contrast to the
iniquitous disobedience of the Israelites, whether individually or corporately, to the will
of God (53:6a). Thus the Servant must have taken the place of the iniquitous,
disobedient people, since they were not taken to the slaughter (cf. Jer 12:1-3, esp. 3b; Isa
65:11-12). The Servant far transcends sacrificial animals in that he surrendered his own
life as Victim consciously, willingly and hopefully to the will of God.

The Servant of Yahweh is described in the Poem as voluntarily submitting
himself as a cultic sacrificial offering. For the term אָשָׁם in Isa 53:10 is a technical term
for an expiatory offering, that is, reparation offering (so-called "guilt offering"; Lev 5:14-
6:7 [H 5:26]; 7:1-7; Num 5:6-7).

The answer to the question not only about the specific occurrence of אָשָׁם in the
Poem but also its particular cultic significance and function seems to have many
dimensions. The answer is shown to depend not only on the understanding of the
reparation offering itself in Pentateuchal ritual texts but also particularly on the Isaianic
prophetic text in its own context. First, the אָשָׁם offering in the Poem may be thought
to be related to the Israelites' desecration of Yahweh as "the Holy One of Israel" as well
as to their desecration of the Servant, "My Servant" (5x in Isaiah), as his holy property.
Second, the employment of the term here partially lies in its comprehensiveness to make
ourselves right with God as well as our fellowmen. Third, אָשָׁם was probably used here
to provide expiation not only for inadvertent sins but also for intentional sins, although
the חַטָּאת offering also expiates some deliberate sins as well as inadvertent sins. Fourth,
it is possible that the author of the Suffering Servant Poem must have known the
Messianic passage Ps 40:6-8 [H 7-9] very well, and that thus he has referred to the offering אשם, which the passage does not say God has not desired/required. Fifth, it is highly possible that the author of the Poem employed the term from the perspective of Judah's Babylonian captivity due to מעל, the key word occurring in ritual texts only with the reparation offering, which also occurs in relation to the three Judahite kings Uzziah (2 Chr 26:16, 18), Ahaz (2 Chr 28:19, 22; 29:19) and Hezekiah (2 Chr 29:6; 30:7), each significantly mentioned in the narratives of Isaiah (6, 7, and 36-39). Especially מעל was the direct cause not only of the Assyrian exile of the northern kingdom Israel (1 Chr 5:25 [cf. vs. 26]; 2 Chr 30:7 [cf. vs. 6]), but also of the destruction of Jerusalem and the subsequent Babylonian exile of the southern kingdom Judah (1 Chr 9:1; 2 Chr 36:14; cf. vss. 17-20). Such tragic consequences of מעל had already been warned by Yahweh (Lev 26:40; Ezek 14:13; 15:8; 17:20; cf. 39:23), and then later acknowledged by Nehemiah (Neh 1:8) and Daniel (Dan 9:7). Sixth, the use of the term מעש in Isa 53:10 seems to be relevant to Israel's socio-economic injustice as a main issue for Isaiah (e.g., עשק; 3x in מעש ritual texts; 6x in Isaiah), requiring משפץ, a key term in the Servant poems (42:1, 3, 4; 49:4; 50:8; 53:8). Seventh, the employment of the term מעש in Isa 53 seems to be related to the healing aspect of restoration to the covenant community and Yahweh in regard to the state of humans' mortality resulting from sin (cf. מעש for a case of physical ritual impurity in Lev 14 [9x]). Eighth, the priestly doctrine of repentance seems to be related to the use of מעש in the Servant Poem, because the doctrine demands remorse (מעש "feel guilt"; due to the action of conscience) and rectification (מעש "reparation, reparation offering"), which is reinforced by confession in Num 5:7, and that will flower in Israel's prophets.

Sinners have incurred damages to God as well as to their community by their sinning, but Yahweh's Servant, by giving his life as Reparation Offering, makes full compensation for the damages. Thus Yahweh's Servant provided for sinners a legal
aspect of restoration to the right relationship with God as well as their community.

What has been left for Israel and the nations to do now is only their confession and repentance (even though, in Pentateuchal ritual texts, these precede the sacrifice), which is depicted not only in the confession of the "we" in the Poem (Isa 53:4-6) but also in the prophetic appeal for repentance (שׁוב) along with God's promise of forgiveness (סלח) in 55:7.

Therefore, שׁוב in Isa 53:10, which carries all its cultic significance as the cultic technical term for reparation offering, succinctly and significantly reveals the Servant's vicarious expiatory death. However, שׁוב in Isa 53:10 is different from the שׁוב as prescribed for the Hebrew cult not only in that it is a "human sacrifice," but also in that the שׁוב sacrifice here is heightened to a corporate offering (cf. Num 28-29). Besides, although the expiatory system provided for the physically, ritually impure the healing aspect of restoration to the covenant community and Yahweh, neither חַטָּאת offerings nor שׁוב offerings, nor the Hebrew cultic system itself could provide healing even for the wounds or sicknesses/diseases which speak of humans' mortality resulting from sin. On the contrary, the vicarious suffering and death of Yahweh's Servant as an שׁוב provides not only the wounds but also the sicknesses/diseases (cf. Isa 53:3αβ, 4-5, 8β, 10αα) with healing (vs. 5b; cf. 30:26b; 33:24α) and spiritual restoration (e.g., Ps 103:3-4α; Isa 33:24b; cf. 53:11). Therefore, Yahweh's Servant far transcends the Levitical expiatory offerings and even the Hebrew cult itself.

The Servant of Yahweh is portrayed in the Poem as a cultic priest performing significant cultic activities. First, the Servant is depicted as doing purificatory/expiatory sprinkling of blood, especially in the light of the observations already made. The verb יַזֶּה in Isa 52:15a is shown to be regarded as a cultic technical term in accordance with all the other passages [19x] where it is used in the OT, and that it should be interpreted in its proper cultic sense, that is, "sprinkle." The term יַזֶּה in Isa 52:15 succinctly portrays the
Servant's priestly activity of purification and expiation, which is supported by the chiastic structure of Isa 52:13-15 with the parenthetical, first כֵּן clause as its center (A: vs. 13/B: vs. 14a/C: vs. 14b/C1: vs. 15aa/B1: vs. 15aβ/A1: vs. 15b). Besides, the significant position and function of Isa 52:13-15, which is a kind of prologue to and a summary of the main themes (along with the motif of a great reversal) of the Poem, also supports the Servant's priestly activity of כֵּן. Furthermore, the correspondences between Yahweh's speech sections (52:13-15 and 53:11b-12) seem to lend support to the rendering "sprinkle" here. Contextually the antecedent cultic overtones in Isa 52 (vss. 1, 11) already prepare us for the cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant pericope, and particularly the term כֵּן, in turn, for further cultic language later in the pericope. Therefore, the interpretation of Isa 52:14-15a is to be: "Just as previously, due to the terrible disfigurement of the Servant, many were appalled at him, so now, because of his purificatory and expiatory work for many nations, kings will shut their mouths."

Second, the Servant of Yahweh is delineated as doing a priestly mediatorial sin-bearing and reflects divine sin-bearing. In the Suffering Servant Poem there are two significant cultic clauses involving the Servant's sin-bearing: כֵּן הבַּעַל (Isa 53:11) and חֵטֶא נָשָׂא (vs. 12). Among four kinds of sin-bearings representative, priestly mediatorial sin-bearing (Exod 28:38; Lev 10:17) and divine exonerative/forgiving sin-bearing (Exod 34:7; Num 14:18) are shown to be closely related to the Suffering Servant.

The sin-bearing of Yahweh's Servant is shown to be significantly unique in many respects. First, the Servant did bear sins, but he did not bear his own sins and died for them. Although he was righteous, he bore sins of the "we" as well as "the many," suffered and died for them (Isa 53:11-12; cf. vss. 4-6, 8). In this respect especially the goat for Yahweh on the Day of Atonement (along with all the other daily expiatory sacrifices), which was slain to be offered, corresponds to the Suffering Servant who bore all the sins of wrongdoers, suffered and ultimately died on their behalf. Second, the
Servant was allowed by Yahweh to bear others' sins and die for them (cf. vss. 6b, 10a), which is unique in that Yahweh declined not only Moses' offer of vicarious sin-bearing (Exod 32:32-33; cf. Deut 24:16) but also refuted against Israel's public consciousness of substitutionary sin-bearing (Ezek 18:19-20; cf. vss. 2-4). Third, the Servant's sin-bearing is totally different from Ezekiel's prophetic symbolic sin-bearing (Ezek 4:4-6) in that the Servant went far beyond symbolism to make his sin-bearing a reality of vicarious expiatory suffering and death. Fourth, the Servant's sin-bearing is completely different from the interpersonal reconciliatory sin-bearing (Gen 50:17; Exod 10:17; 1 Sam 15:25; 25:28), since there is no indication that the forgiver in the latter would consequently bear a weight of responsibility. Fifth, the Servant's sin-bearing may share some aspects of the priestly mediatorial suffering (Exod 28:38; Lev 10:17), but unlike the priest or the high priest, the Suffering Servant went further and beyond to free others by bearing and then dying for their culpability (עָוֹן; 53:5 [pl.], 6 [sg.], 11 [pl.]), thereby obtaining for them acceptance or justification (vs. 11). As for evidence of the vicarious nature of the Suffering Servant's expiation, there is no need to look further than the fact that as Priest he bore others' sins upon himself and as Victim he died for those sins. Sixth, just as Yahweh bears sins of the people and grants forgiveness to them, so the Servant bears the sins of the "many" as well as the "we" and makes and declares them righteous. Thus, far above and beyond the priest and the high priest, the Suffering Servant uniquely and vividly represents Yahweh himself. Seventh, it is significant that, although expiation through the Hebrew cult essentially focuses on Israel as the covenant people of Yahweh, forgiveness has been also provided for the "many" through the Servant. Last but not least, the Suffering Servant reminds us of Yahweh who bears all evils of the people. Significantly, although the clause פֶּשַׁע נָשָׂא is not employed in the Poem, forgiveness has been provided for פֶּשַׁע (Isa 53:5 [pl.], 8 [sg.]) and thus for פֶּשַׁע (vs. 12). This is really innovative, since forgiveness has never been granted to פֶּשַׁע with פֶּשַׁע.
("inexiable defiant sin") through the Hebrew cult. Forgiveness for such a sin and sinner is totally outside the cultic system, and it has been directly granted by God if the sinner repented (e.g., 2 Chr 33:12-13), as shown in the divine exonerative/forgiving sin-bearing (Exod 34:7; Num 14:18).

Therefore, the Servant of Yahweh went far beyond the scope of the Hebrew cultic system especially not only by forgiving פֶּשַׁע, as in Exod 34:7, but also by providing forgiveness for the "many" beyond Israel. Forgiveness by Yahweh carries with it a cost that he must bear, that is, "divine suffering" in the ultimate sense, which is dramatically shown by the suffering and death of his Servant, the Servant of Yahweh. In this Servant who bears their sins and carries their pains/diseases, and thus who makes forgiveness and healing available to them, can we recognize the God by whom the Israelites are borne and carried, that is, the merciful, living God contrasted with the useless, burdensome idols of the Babylonians in Isa 46? And in this Servant as "the plenipotentiary of God," can we recognize the God who bears/carries sins in Exod 34:7, that is, the God who is just but merciful, who is merciful but just, and who is just and merciful? More precisely, then, what is the identity of the Servant? Is he God in human flesh, God the incarnated (cf. his whole "righteous" life [Isa 53:7, 9b, 11]; his life after death [vs. 10]; his exaltation ["high, lifted up, greatly exalted" [52:13b] just like God])?

Third, Yahweh's Servant is described in the Poem as making a priestly cultic declaration of justification. The term יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 is shown to be a significant term with legal-cultic connotations, not only in that it denotes the Servant's function of judicial character as Priest but also in that it has a firm basis in his vicarious expiatory sacrifice as Victim.

The Servant's act in regard to יַצְדִּיק cannot be an acknowledgment that the "many" are righteous by themselves, because the Poem makes it clear that they have been
From a purely legal perspective, the "many" should be acknowledged and declared guilty or unrighteous. However, in the case of Isa 53:11α the Servant declares them righteous because it also involves making them righteous. The Servant declares the many righteous because, although they have been unrighteous, now they are righteous through the Servant. Here another perspective, that is, a cultic perspective, should also be taken into consideration. Such a fact seems to be hinted even in the literary features of vs. 11b (an internal parallelism and a chiasm) and much more confirmed by the external chiasms that it makes with vs. 12c, where the Hebrew cult clearly stands in the background. Thus vs. 11bα should be interpreted in the sense that the Servant "shall make and declare the many righteous" by his taking upon himself the sins of the many.

Isa 53:11bα reveals not only the objects of the acquittal and justification but also its agent, whereas vs. 11bβ reveals the ground for it. Yahweh's Servant, the Righteous One, acquits and justifies the many by bearing their sins. Although a very significant text of promise, Isa 45:25, leaves us to question the "how" of "all the seed of Israel" being justified, we now come to see the Suffering Servant Poem answer it. The many, who are acquitted and justified, seem to be portrayed in vs. 12a as a portion or booty of the Servant as Victor. The answer of Isa 53:11b seems to be confirmed in the chapter following the Suffering Servant Poem, specifically by the righteous standing of "the servants of Yahweh" in 54:14 and 17.

Such a legal-cultic interpretation of יַצְדִּיק in Isa 53:11 seems to be supported by another significant OT passage, Dan 8:14, which shows a unique usage of the legal term צדק (נִצְדַּק), and that not only in a cultic context but also with the sanctuary as its subject. For the term צדק in Dan 8:14 seems to reflect Daniel's understanding of its legal-cultic connotations. Although righteousness and expiation are not closely related in the OT, the term צדק seems to be employed in the Servant Poem to emphasize the forensic
aspect of his justifying work as Priest, which is accomplished by his vicarious expiatory sacrifice as Victim.

The Servant of Yahweh far transcends the priest of the Hebrew cult. In the Hebrew cult the priest after his cultic investigation could pronounce his cultic declarations only in certain cases of physical ritual cleanliness or uncleanness. As for the cases of moral cleanliness, however, there is not a single case for the priestly declaration of cleanliness or forgiveness in the OT. In a judicial case the priestly declaration of someone's being righteous is only a legal acknowledgement of someone's innocence, but not making someone righteous. On the contrary, the Servant of Yahweh is portrayed in the Suffering Servant Poem as pronouncing his declaration in regard to the moral cleanliness of the "many" as a result of his moral cleansing (i.e., justification) of them.

Fourth, the Servant of Yahweh is depicted as doing a priestly intercession. The term יַפְגִּיעַ (폭יע Hiphil) with לְ in Isa 53:12 is shown to be used in the sense of priestly intercession. Strictly speaking, originally the verb פָּגַע in the Qal or in the Hiphil may not be a cultic technical term per se. However, especially the usage of פָּגַע Qal plus לְ in Jer 7:16 points to the direction of a priestly intercession by its paralleling major intercession verb פָּלַל Hithpael with בַּעַד. Besides, one of two basic distinct meanings of פָּגַע Hiphil is "entreat passionately" or "intercede." Thus, the verb פָּגַע is similar in its usage to another major intercession verb עָתַר (Qal as well as Hiphil). So פָּגַע Hiphil with לְ plus someone (Isa 53:12) points to the Servant's intercession, more specifically his priestly intercession. It is also suggested by the immediately preceding and paralleling cultic clause (חֵטְא נָשָׂא) in the same verse. It seems quite natural, therefore, that the verb פָּגַע Hiphil, although it may not be a cultic technical term, is elevated to a cultic status through Isaiah's unique and innovative employment of it in Isa 53:12, and thus that it is clearly used here with a cultic connotation.

However, the Servant's intercession far surpasses a priestly intercession, because
he did not intercede for the rebels simply with prayers of intercession but with his life, suffering, and death. His intercession was done by bearing the sin of the many, which is clearly emphasized by the semantic connection (between vss. 6 and 12) made by the same verb פָּגַע Hiphil. In vs. 6 God's will through the Servant is expressed by פָּגַע Hiphil plus צ: "But Yahweh has caused the iniquity of us all to fall on him." Now in vs. 12 the Servant's will is expressed by פָּגַע Hiphil plus ג: "and he interceded for the rebels." The semantic connection evidently shows that there was a mutual agreement between God's will and the Servant's, that is, the agreement regarding the vicarious event. The Servant was to be the vicarious 'intercessor' (מַפְגִּיעַ, Hiphil ptep. of פָּגַע; cf. Isa 59:16).

Ironically the unacceptability of the Servant not only for a sacrificial animal but also for a priest is first mentioned in the Poem. The term מִשְׁחַת in Isa 52:14 is text-critically shown to be a noun derived from the verb שָׁחַת, but not from מָשַׁח, and as a hapax legomenon thus means "disfigurement." The term מִשְׁחַת has cultic overtones through its association with another nominative מָשְׁחָת (Lev 22:25; cf. Mal 1:14) and the verb שָׁחַת Piel (Exod 32:7//Deut 9:12; cf. 32:15).

In Moses' narrative of the golden calf incident, Yahweh denounced the Israelites for having corrupted (שָׁחַת Piel) themselves through apostasy (Exod 32:7//Deut 9:12; cf. 32:15). Through their apostasy to idolatry the Israelites in their entirety became to have a moral defect separating them from God. Because of spiritual corruption they became like defective animals (מָשְׁחָת in Lev 22:25; cf. Mal 1:14) or disqualified priests (מוּם [5x] in Lev 21:17-23) that are unable to come into God's presence in the sanctuary, and thus Yahweh was about to destroy (שָׁחַת Hiphil; cf. Deut 9:26; 10:10) them. Similarly, Isaiah, in the introduction of his prophetic book, denounced the sinful, iniquitous and rebellious people as children who act corruptly (שָׁחַת Hiphil, Isa 1:4). Thus, the Israelites of Isaiah's day was doomed to God's destruction like the Israelite people who had apostatized to the golden calf at Mt. Sinai (cf. 4:4-6).
However, through the metaphor of transfer (נשׂא/creativecommons) not only Israel's corruption (i.e., sins) but also God's punishment upon it (i.e., its consequences) was transferred to Yahweh's Servant. Thus, as a result of his vicarious suffering under God's punishment, the Servant had his appearance/form "disfigured" (52:14). The disfigurement caused amazement (שׁמם) to the "many" (52:14a) and misunderstanding to the "we" (53:3). From the human perspective, the Servant of Yahweh was (morally and physically) suitable for neither a sacrificial victim nor a priest (52:14; 53:3). However, the Poem makes it clear that it is not Yahweh's Servant himself (morally; cf. vss. 7, 9b) but his "appearance/form" itself (physically) that was "corrupt/disfigured," and that the disfigurement is due to his substitutionary suffering.

My lexical study on the cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant Poem clearly shows: (1) the Hebrew sacrificial cult is the background of the Suffering Servant Poem; (2) the death of the Servant is clearly mentioned, and that as a violent death; and (3) his suffering and death is vicarious and expiatory.

Cultic allusions occur only in the fourth Servant Poem, but not in the other Servant Poems. Although the motif of suffering also appears in the second and third Servant Poems, the possibility is there that the suffering can be considered as the consequences of the mission of the Servant not only as "the covenant of the people" but also as "the light to the nations." Now the Suffering Servant Poem clarifies that the suffering is the very means of the mission of the Servant in world history, which is vividly and intensely portrayed by the cultic allusions, and which is subtly but profoundly described by the term מִשְׁפָּט ("justice," not "poetic justice") that ironically keeps running throughout the Servant Poems.

Many of these cultic allusions and their associated terms, which were dealt with in my lexical study, occur together primarily in Pentateuchal ritual texts, especially in the Levitical text of the reparation offering (Lev 5:14-6:7 [H 5:26]; 7:1-7) and in the text of
the Day of Atonement (Lev 16). Most of these allusive words or clauses were given in their original contexts enough significations, and thus it must be that as allusions to the cult they sound clear voice in their new context. Besides, the Suffering Servant Poem itself has a cultic-oriented chiastic structure, which is shown in my literary analysis to be mentioned a little bit later. Furthermore, if these data are put together with Isaianic theological horizon of vicarious expiation, then the convergence of the various lines of evidence shows that the linguistic and conceptual backgrounds to the Suffering Servant Poem are to be found in the Hebrew sacrificial cult. The Isaianic theological horizon seems to be partially shown by the fact that major allusive terminology of expiation and forgiveness occurs *seriatim* in the book of Isaiah (כפר [6:7; 27:9], then חטא נשׂא/עון סבל [53:11-12], and finally סלח [55:7]). This confluence of evidence (i.e., verbal, thematic, and structural parallels) lends these allusions a high level of certainty, and thus this fact much more clearly indicates that the author of the Suffering Servant Poem has cultic intentions in mind, that he derived the meanings and significance of the Servant's suffering and death from the Hebrew sacrificial cult, and that he intended his readers or hearers to employ the vicarious expiatory system of the Hebrew cult as the primary frame of reference. Thus, if there is any doubt concerning the source or significance of a given allusion, then the first port of call ought to be those Pentateuchal ritual texts that concerns vicarious expiations. For all of these allusions are decisive pointers to the Hebrew sacrificial cult, and they are significant for the meaning of the Suffering Servant Poem, and thus they significantly contribute to the cultic interpretation of the Poem.

Therefore, I can conclude that, although the Suffering Servant Poem is to be prophetically understood, it should be interpreted from the perspective of the Hebrew cult, specifically through the concepts and functions of the allusive terms and clauses in the Hebrew ritual texts. The reason is that only by identifying and understanding each of the antecedents of those allusions I can say for sure what it meant to the author of the
Poem, and then what he intended to his readers/hearers. However, I have to recognize that those cultic allusions only provide the means to facilitate an innovative new idea that far transcends all that are cultically alluded in the great Poem of Yahweh’s Suffering Servant. In the Suffering Servant all the Hebrew cultic images reached their complete transformation and fulfillment as an innovative and creative idea of vicarious expiatory suffering and death.

My literary analysis of Isa 40-55 as well as the Suffering Servant Poem itself is shown to clearly support my Hebrew cultic interpretation of the Poem. Among the views on the literary structure of the book of Isaiah Motyer’s view is mainly employed only with minor modifications for my study. The book of Isaiah seems to be structured around three Messianic portraits: the King (chs 1-39), the Servant (chs 40-55), and the Warrior (chs 56-66). Thus it can be said that the Servant section is in the chiastic center of the book of Isaiah. Besides, in a significant sense the Suffering Servant Poem, along with the second and third Servant Poems, is shown to be in the chiastic center of the Servant section. Therefore, it is not too much to say that the Suffering Servant Poem is in the chiastic center of the book of Isaiah as a whole. In that center Cyrus and the Servant are contrasted in parallel with each other, of which the latter is Yahweh’s answer to the world’s plight. Evidently there are significant implications in the paralleled contrast of Cyrus and the Servant. First, the Servant is to be interpreted as the Messiah who delivers not only Israel but also the Gentiles from universal/spiritual captivity to sin, but not as Cyrus who liberates Israel from national/physical bondage in Babylon. Not only their missions but also the scopes of their missions are completely different. Next, Cyrus accomplishes his mission through political and military means, whereas the Servant fulfills his mission of expiation through spiritual means. Thus the means of the fulfillment of their missions are totally different also. There is plenty of room, therefore, to be secured for a cultic interpretation of the Suffering Servant Poem.
My investigation of the place of the Suffering Servant Poem among the Servant Poems (42:1-9; 49:1-13; 50:4-11) shows that they are lexically, thematically, and structurally interrelated. The first and second Servant Poems are linked by the phrases "a covenant for the people" and "a light to the nations," and that chiastically. The second and fourth Servant Poems are interrelated by the universal response, whereas the third and fourth Servant Poems are correlated by the motif of "hiding of the face." The second, third, and fourth Servant Poems are related not only by a motif of humiliation but also terms that describe the motif, which identifies the Servant as the Suffering Servant. Through the motifs of humiliation and "hiding of the face" the suffering of the Servant gradually becomes intensified and portrayed in detail that the Suffering Servant Poem can be said to be the climax of the Servant Poems. Significantly the motif of "justice," which is the primary Leitwort for the intervention of Yahweh's Servant into world history and thus for his ultimate task in it, ironically keeps running throughout the Servant Poems, from the first Servant Poem to the fourth. Finally, the introductory phrase, "Behold, my servant" (42:1; 52:13), seems to play the role not only of the architectonic bridge to connect the first Servant Poem with the fourth but also of the outer bracket to categorize the four Servant Poems.

My literary analysis as well as Motyer's literary structure in regard to Isa 40-55 clearly shows that the four Servant Poems are integral parts of the Isaianic corpus and thus are to be interpreted in their own contexts, both wider and immediate. Nevertheless, they can be regarded as a distinct group which reveals a significant aspect of Isaianic theology. Furthermore, it is evident that the Suffering Servant Poem as the longest of all the Servant Poems reaches their climax literarily and thematically.

The literary analysis of the immediate context of the Suffering Servant Poem can be recapitulated: First, Isa 52:13-53:12 as a self-contained unit is lexically, thematically and logically related to the preceding text (51:1-52:12) and the following (54:1-55:13);
second, the Suffering Servant Poem portrays the significant foundational event as the *causa sine qua non* of the events described in the preceding and the following texts.

The literary analysis of the Suffering Servant Poem itself shows that very significantly the Poem has a cultic-oriented chiastic structure with a clear cultic intention. Although two imageries, i.e., plant imagery (יוֹנֵק and רֶשׁ) and animal imagery (שֶׂה and רָחֵל), make a chiasm, the cultic animal term שֶׂה contributes to it. Besides, the terms אָשָׁם (as a term for offering) and מִשְׁחַת (as a noun related to a term of unacceptability for a sacrificial victim) are chiastically placed in the Poem and contribute its chiastic structure. Further, the term מִשְׁחַת (now as a term of unacceptability for a sacrificial victim as well as a priest) and the clauses עָוֹן סָבַל/חֵטְא נָשָׂא (as expressions for function of a sacrificial victim as well as a priest) make a chiasm and contribute the chiastic structure. The verbs ווּסֹא and ווּסֹא (as verbs of priestly activity), and the clauses ווּסֹא (now as expressions for function as a priest) are chiastically positioned in the Poem and thus contribute its chiastic structure. Significantly the three verbs not only denote priestly activities of the Servant but also have the same verbal form and aspect (*Hiphil* impf. 3 m.s.). Thus, the Suffering Servant Poem has a cultic-oriented chiastic structure, especially because cultic allusive terms/clauses are chiastically placed in it.

In conclusion, the Suffering Servant Poem should be interpreted not only in its wider context of Isa 40-55, including its relations to other Servant Poems, but also its immediate context of Isa 51-52:12 and 54-55. Besides, it is to be remembered that not only the cultic allusions in the Suffering Servant Poem but also their chiastic placement in it is most probably used as a vehicle to reveal God's plan of salvation through the Servant's vicarious and substitutionary suffering and death by reminding its readers or hearers of the Hebrew cultic system. Furthermore, since the Suffering Servant Poem itself is an exquisite masterpiece of Hebrew literature, it should be handled with a
delicate eye for Hebrew literature and a nice distinction of meaning in regard to the words and expressions in it. Thus, only when one makes much account of the continuity with its surrounding passages, its cultic intention, and its exquisite artistry, the Suffering Servant Poem can be properly interpreted.
BIBLIOGRAPHY


The Assyrian Dictionary of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago. Edited by Ignace J. Gelb et al. Chicago, IL: The Oriental Institute, 1956-.


327


330


Doukhan, Jacques B. *The Messianic Riddle*. Forthcoming.


342


346


359


The King and the Tree of Life in Ancient Near Eastern Religion: King and Saviour IV. Uppsala: Almqvist & Wiksells, 1951.


